



CHIEF KOKOMOKO.

HISTORY  
OF  
HOWARD COUNTY  
INDIANA

BY  
JACKSON MORROW, B. A.

ILLUSTRATED

VOL. I

*Form 20*

B. F. BOWEN & COMPANY  
INDIANAPOLIS, INDIANA

K

INDIANA UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY



99924

F532  
H8M8  
v.1

Y1283V101 A66006  
Y1283V101

## AUTHOR'S PREFACE

---

Soon after beginning the editing of the History of Howard County, at the request of B. F. Bowen & Company, two facts became very prominent. The first was that the undertaking was greater than at first appeared and the other was that there are now very, very few of the pioneers remaining to rehearse the beginnings of Howard County history. It is largely now the verifying and arranging such historical matter as has heretofore been published, supplemented by matters already known by the writer, and others, gathered from old newspapers and the few survivors of a far away time.

In preparing this work it has seemed very unfair and short sighted to assume that all this magnificent country should have remained idle and unused by man for thousands of years until seventy years ago, for the coming of the white man, and so I have devoted a chapter to the Mound Builders and another to their successors—the Indians. Since the coming of the white man I have tried to describe conditions as they were in the beginning and the many changes he has wrought along the various lines of life.

This work has been largely along general lines. The limits of this work have precluded the going into the purely local and individual. There have been certain individual schools of more than passing importance, as the Old Normal and some out township schools, of which it would have been a real pleasure to have written. Beautiful Crown Point Cemetery is another instance and the Old Ceme-

tery, where lie the unmarked graves of many of the early pioneers of Kokomo and vicinity whose memory should especially be cherished as the real founders of our goodly heritage; and too, our delightful City Park.

I have consulted and drawn freely from the Kingman County Atlas of 1876 and the History of Howard and Tipton County of 1883. Mr. Otis C. Pollard has rendered much valuable assistance; the chapters prepared by him are accredited to him. Mr. Milton Garrigus has prepared a very valuable history of early financial conditions, a compact statement of facts difficult to find, especially interesting in our pioneer history as the Blue Dog and White Dog and the Wild Cat currencies. Posterity is under a real debt to Mr. Garrigus for this chapter.

JACKSON MORROW.

## INDEX

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Able Jurist .....                         | 380 |
| Armstrong-Landon Company, Stock of.....   | 224 |
| Automobiles .....                         | 248 |
| Abolitionists .....                       | 355 |
| Account of St. Clair's Defeat .....       | 40  |
| Agricultural Implements .....             | 74  |
| Apples in Kokomo, First.....              | 324 |
| Bank, Citizen's National .....            | 278 |
| Banks .....                               | 266 |
| Bank of Russiaville, First National ..... | 281 |
| Bank, First National of Kokomo.....       | 277 |
| Bank, Kokomo National .....               | 279 |
| Bank, Indian Reserve .....                | 327 |
| Buggies, Manufactured .....               | 226 |
| Bennett, Dan .....                        | 408 |
| Brouse, Judge Henry A .....               | 397 |
| Biddle, Judge Horace P.....               | 377 |
| Bell, Lewis Cass, Reminiscences.....      | 425 |
| Blanche, Willis .....                     | 164 |
| Brewer, James, Assassination of.....      | 285 |
| Bee Hunter .....                          | 218 |
| Bench and Bar .....                       | 362 |
| Bee Hive .....                            | 227 |
| Business House, First .....               | 206 |
| Bounties .....                            | 176 |
| Bounties in 1865 .....                    | 178 |
| Block & Thalman.....                      | 227 |
| Banks .....                               | 276 |
| Bit Works .....                           | 242 |
| Brick, Making .....                       | 229 |

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Buildings, Public .....                   | 111 |
| Calamities, Some Early .....              | 330 |
| Commissioners, Board of.....              | 60  |
| Clothing .....                            | 22  |
| Convention of Delegates .....             | 262 |
| Commercial Development .....              | 331 |
| Combination Mill .....                    | 212 |
| Courtship .....                           | 51  |
| Contempt of Court.....                    | 372 |
| Crimes and Casualties .....               | 282 |
| Cabin Furnishings .....                   | 72  |
| Clearing the Land .....                   | 73  |
| Corn .....                                | 75  |
| Conditions, Present Day .....             | 98  |
| Court, Probate and Common Pleas .....     | 421 |
| Chills and Fever .....                    | 84  |
| County Boards .....                       | 97  |
| Court House and Surroundings .....        | 115 |
| Counterfeiters, Arrest of.....            | 333 |
| Civil War, Close of.....                  | 183 |
| Conditions are Changing .....             | 201 |
| Civil War, Howard in the.....             | 130 |
| Cooper and Robinson .....                 | 406 |
| Churches .....                            | 429 |
| City and Township Life .....              | 320 |
| Circuit Judge, First .....                | 373 |
| Carnegie's Gift .....                     | 467 |
| Drafts .....                              | 182 |
| Domestic Life .....                       | 52  |
| Doxey's Factory .....                     | 257 |
| Doxey Factory, Committee's Report on..... | 259 |
| Davis, Judge John.....                    | 399 |
| Drains, Public .....                      | 78  |
| Debating Society, First .....             | 325 |
| Democrat, Radical .....                   | 309 |
| Donations .....                           | 152 |
| Enlistment, Final .....                   | 174 |

|                                      |     |
|--------------------------------------|-----|
| Extensive Improvements .....         | 114 |
| Eighty-ninth Regiment .....          | 167 |
| Exciting Times .....                 | 346 |
| Ervin, Judge .....                   | 368 |
| Elections, First .....               | 58  |
| Eleventh Cavalry, Company E.....     | 170 |
| Early Roads .....                    | 80  |
| Education .....                      | 81  |
| Fairfield Steam Flouring Mill .....  | 211 |
| Factories, Canning .....             | 246 |
| Free Soil Supporters .....           | 352 |
| Floriculture .....                   | 252 |
| Foster, David .....                  | 319 |
| First to Fall .....                  | 150 |
| Fort Sumpter, News of .....          | 147 |
| Friday, D. ....                      | 227 |
| Farms, Development of.....           | 198 |
| Financial History .....              | 260 |
| Ford & Donnelly.....                 | 251 |
| Fifty-seventh Regiment .....         | 164 |
| Free Public School System.....       | 87  |
| Garrigus, Milton .....               | 395 |
| Greentown Gem .....                  | 316 |
| Glass Company, Pittsburg Plate ..... | 249 |
| Green, Judge .....                   | 423 |
| Gazette, Kokomo .....                | 312 |
| Garver, Judge William .....          | 424 |
| Government Disappointed .....        | 41  |
| Glass Factory, Opalescent .....      | 248 |
| Government Among the Indians.....    | 49  |
| Gravel Roads, First .....            | 103 |
| Hardships and Privations.....        | 165 |
| Hanged by a Mob.....                 | 288 |
| Hopkins, John B.....                 | 367 |
| Hawkins, Reuben .....                | 211 |
| Hanged from a Bridge.....            | 296 |
| Hardware Business, Head of the.....  | 222 |



|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Heading and Stave Business.....         | 226 |
| Interurban Lines .....                  | 421 |
| Independent, Kokomo .....               | 307 |
| Institutions, Strong Financial .....    | 281 |
| Indian Villages .....                   | 426 |
| Indiana Near Bankruptcy.....            | 273 |
| Infirmity, County .....                 | 118 |
| Indiana Tumbler and Goblet Company..... | 243 |
| Industrial History .....                | 196 |
| Invaders .....                          | 26  |
| Indians Give Up Land.....               | 45  |
| Indians .....                           | 28  |
| Jails .....                             | 116 |
| Jealousy Leads to Crime.....            | 292 |
| Journal, Kokomo .....                   | 309 |
| Kern, John W.....                       | 401 |
| Kokomo Bale Tie Company.....            | 252 |
| Kokomo, Early Days in.....              | 318 |
| Kokomo Steel and Wire Works.....        | 250 |
| Knerr Board and Paper Company .....     | 251 |
| Kokomo Rubber Company.....              | 244 |
| Kokomo Wood Enameling Company.....      | 244 |
| Kokomoko, Chief .....                   | 48  |
| Kokomo Canning Company.....             | 246 |
| Kokomo Library .....                    | 463 |
| Leach, J. M. & Company.....             | 231 |
| Lincoln to the Kentuckians.....         | 142 |
| Little Turtle's Idea.....               | 27  |
| Licensed to Teach .....                 | 93  |
| Local History .....                     | 30  |
| Log Court House.....                    | 370 |
| Long, Judge .....                       | 368 |
| Lewis, Joe .....                        | 394 |
| Linsday, Judge N. R. ....               | 324 |
| Little Turtle .....                     | 36  |
| Lumbering .....                         | 197 |



|  |     |
|--|-----|
| Milroy, Judge R. H. ....                             | 383 |
| Miller, John .....                                   | 127 |
| Maple Sugar Industry.....                            | 220 |
| Money Was Scarce .....                               | 220 |
| Molihan Gang .....                                   | 299 |
| Malaria .....  | 321 |
| Morgan's Raid .....                                  | 175 |
| Memory of Soldiers Revered.....                      | 187 |
| Modern Methods .....                                 | 199 |
| Mercantile Life .....                                | 202 |
| Mound Builders .....                                 | 17  |
| Mound Remains .....                                  | 18  |
| Military History, Addenda .....                      | 468 |
| Medical Society, First .....                         | 360 |
| Modes of Worship .....                               | 19  |
| Mounds, Various Kinds of.....                        | 20  |
| Miamis .....   | 34  |
| Miamis in Howard .....                               | 48  |
| Military History .....                               | 125 |
| Militia Companies .....                              | 159 |
| Mail in Pioneer Days.....                            | 84  |
| Morning Times, Kokomo.....                           | 315 |
| National Road .....                                  | 269 |
| Nation, David .....                                  | 396 |
| Name Changed to Howard.....                          | 63  |
| Ninetieth Regiment .....                             | 193 |
| Number of Men Sent from Howard in the Civil War..... | 196 |
| Newspapers .....                                     | 304 |
| New London .....                                     | 335 |
| Newman Paper Company.....                            | 241 |
| National Mint .....                                  | 263 |
| Nursery, the First .....                             | 216 |
| News, Kokomo .....                                   | 317 |
| National Bank, Howard .....                          | 277 |
| Natural Gas, Search for.....                         | 234 |
| One House in Kokomo .....                            | 57  |
| Oil, Exploring for .....                             | 329 |

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| O'Brien, Judge James .....   | 400 |
| Overman, Judge N. R. ....  | 412 |
| Other Banks .....  | 280 |
| One Hundred and Thirtieth Regiment.....                                    | 171 |
| One Hundred Day Men.....   | 173 |
| One Hundred Thirty-fifth and One Hundred Thirty-Seventh<br>Regiments ..... | 173 |
| Organization and Early History .....                                       | 55  |
| Orphans' Home .....  | 120 |
| Oath .....   | 155 |
| Old System .....   | 86  |
| One Hundred and Forty-second Regiment, Company I.....                      | 174 |
| One Cent Reward .....  | 348 |
| Pre-emption Law .....  | 68  |
| Pioneer Life in Howard County.....   | 70  |
| Paths of Early Days.....   | 71  |
| Public Road Sentiment .....  | 107 |
| Preacher and the Corner Stone.....   | 113 |
| President Lincoln's Message .....  | 135 |
| Peace Party Fails .....  | 146 |
| Public Sentiment in Howard.....  | 141 |
| Picture Writing .....  | 54  |
| Pottawatomies .....  | 32  |
| Pay of Petit Jurors.....   | 364 |
| Pollard, Judge Clark N.....  | 411 |
| Pettit, Judge John U.....  | 386 |
| Purdum, Nelson .....   | 394 |
| Pioneer Lawyers, Leading .....   | 370 |
| Pumping Stations .....   | 239 |
| Planing Mill Business.....   | 225 |
| Paper Mills .....  | 240 |
| Pipe Lines .....   | 237 |
| Pottery Company, Great Western .....                                       | 245 |
| Report, County Treasurer's .....   | 64  |
| Rich, Experience of Thomas.....  | 345 |
| Representatives, House of.....   | 137 |

|  |          |
|--|----------|
| Richardville, Chief .....              | 55       |
| Richardville, County of.....           | 56       |
| Real Estate, Boom in.....              | 235      |
| Railroad Bonds, Trouble Over .....     | 255      |
| Richmond, Col. N. P.....               | 407      |
| Richmond, Corydon, M. D.....           | 321, 364 |
| Robinson, James W.....                 | 390      |
| Religion .....                         | 53       |
| Railroads .....                        | 416      |
| Roller, Mills, Greentown .....         | 213      |
| Rule or Ruin Policy .....              | 138      |
| Race, Industrious .....                | 23       |
| Roads in Howard County.....            | 101      |
| Shiloh, Relief Sent to .....           | 166      |
| Spanish-American War .....             | 414      |
| St. Clair's Army .....                 | 38       |
| Stone, Judge E. S.....                 | 422      |
| Steward, John .....                    | 290      |
| Sutton-Yager Mystery .....             | 301      |
| Seventy-fifth Regiment .....           | 166      |
| Specie, Great Demand for.....          | 271      |
| Soldiers Who Died in the Service.....  | 188      |
| Streets, First Macadam .....           | 230      |
| Schools, Howard County .....           | 85       |
| State Road, Howard's First.....        | 102      |
| School System, Changes in.....         | 91       |
| Social Gatherings .....                | 322      |
| Saw Mills Becoming Scarce .....        | 209      |
| Star Machine Works .....               | 251      |
| Slave-holders, Views of .....          | 145      |
| Secession and Disunion .....           | 139      |
| Stove Works, Globe .....               | 245      |
| State Road, First .....                | 95       |
| Sympathizers, Southern .....           | 132      |
| State Supt. of Public Instruction..... | 94       |
| Stores, Various Kinds of.....          | 227      |
| Surveys .....                          | 66       |

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Town, Incorporating the .....           | 326 |
| Traveling on Horseback .....            | 81  |
| Trading Points .....                    | 204 |
| Thirteenth Regiment .....               | 157 |
| Tribune, Howard .....                   | 304 |
| Thirty-fourth Regiment .....            | 160 |
| Total Mileage .....                     | 108 |
| Treaty of Greenville.....               | 44  |
| Trust Company, Kokomo .....             | 280 |
| Thirty-ninth Regiment .....             | 162 |
| Trading Centers .....                   | 342 |
| Tanneries .....                         | 215 |
| Traveling Shoemakers .....              | 216 |
| Trapping and Hunting .....              | 217 |
| Tomato Growing .....                    | 246 |
| Traction Company .....                  | 253 |
| Turpin, William H. ....                 | 313 |
| Union Tigers .....                      | 160 |
| Volunteers, First Call for.....         | 149 |
| Vaile, J. Fred .....                    | 401 |
| Vaile, Rawson .....                     | 394 |
| Volunteers, Families of the.....        | 163 |
| Volapuck .....                          | 317 |
| Water Mill Flour Popular.....           | 213 |
| Women Helped .....                      | 77  |
| West Middleton Steam Flouring Mill..... | 210 |
| Wild Game .....                         | 83  |
| War with Mexico .....                   | 129 |
| Walked in His Sleep.....                | 378 |
| Wouldn't Pay Office Rent.....           | 112 |
| Want Law Repealed .....                 | 111 |
| When the Europeans Came.....            | 24  |
| Warriors .....                          | 29  |
| Western Indians .....                   | 37  |
| Wayne's Victory .....                   | 43  |

|                              |     |
|------------------------------|-----|
| Welcome Home .....           | 185 |
| Water Cure Era .....         | 316 |
| Wallace, Judge John M.....   | 384 |
| Wright, Judge John W.....    | 373 |
| Workmen, Skilled .....       | 21  |
| Woven Wire, Making . . . . . | 250 |
| Warehouse, First .....       | 208 |
| Wickersham, Moses R.....     | 349 |





## THE MOUND BUILDERS.

In writing the history of Howard county we must not omit the people who dwelt in the country of which it is now a part before the coming of the Europeans.

An ancient race, entirely distinct from the Indians, inhabited all that vast, fertile valley system extending from western New York on the east to Nebraska on the west, and from the great lakes on the north to the Gulf of Mexico on the south.

These people possessed a modified degree of civilization. They tilled the soil and grew corn, potatoes, tobacco and other products of this western hemisphere of that early time. They carried on commerce, both domestic and foreign, not so extensively perhaps as do the present modern inhabitants. They had made considerable progress in the arts; their pottery wares especially displayed skill and finish. Their sculptors reached a high degree of perfection. They were an industrious race. Many of their public works were massive and required the labor of many men for months or perhaps years to construct. They were evidently a people of fixed habitation and settled and organized government, and were given rather to the pursuits of peace than war.

Who these people were we have no means of knowing; by what name or names they were known to themselves or their contemporaries we know not. So far as we know they left no written records. Tradition is absolutely silent concerning them. Many centuries of past time have entirely extinguished the memory of



them. They are to us a lost race. We know them as Mound Builders, but this term has no real significance. So far as we know they never built a mound. Time has been the real Mound Builder, converting the buildings and structures of this ancient people into the various mounds as we know them today. All that we know of them is gathered from the monuments that remain of them, consisting of mounds, inclosures, implements, works of art, etc. These remains have been carefully examined, and after long and patient investigation the archaeologist has arrived at certain definite conclusions, and so apparently accurate are they that we may safely say that we are well acquainted with this lost race.

#### MOUND REMAINS.

These remains are very numerous and widely distributed. In Ohio more than twelve hundred inclosures and ten thousand mounds have been counted. Indiana has probably as many, and the various implements that have been found are almost countless. The mound remains of Ohio have been much more thoroughly and carefully examined than those of any other state, hence they are better known and more frequent reference made to them. These works are chiefly found in the river valleys, and are only occasionally met with in the hilly or broken country, and are there small in size. They are irregularly distributed, being dense in places and sparse in others, indicating thickly settled localities and scattered settlements. The fact that their remains are found chiefly in the river valleys and along the watercourses would suggest that they used the streams of water as their highways, transporting themselves and their commerce in canoes or rude boats, fashioned from the giant trees growing then as at the coming of the white man in the forests of these fertile valleys.

These ancient works were constructed sometimes of earth alone, at other times of earth and stone together, and were of two classes—enclosures and mounds proper. The enclosures were massive walls and sometimes of great dimensions, ranging from three feet to thirty feet in height and enclosing areas of from one acre to four hundred acres in extent. Many of them evidently were constructed for fortifications or defensive purposes and some were admirably chosen as natural strongholds. Others were sacred enclosures, protecting their altars and holy places of worship from unhallowed intrusion, and perhaps affording homes for the priesthood, for it is known that these people had their places of worship and a regular priesthood. Altars have been found within these enclosures, presenting positive evidence of sacrifice.

#### MODES OF WORSHIP.

In some respects the ceremonials of their worship seem to have been very like the Jewish as set out in the book of Exodus. The location of bodies of numerous mounds indicates that the Mound Builders were influenced by the same motives in selecting sites for their cities and towns which influenced their European successors. Practically the same natural conditions existed when this numerous population of bygone times lived and made homes as those that fascinated the European when he came—an attractive country, broad, alluvial terraces overlooking flowing rivers and the same capabilities for development.

It has been said that nearly every town of importance in the valleys of the Ohio and Mississippi and their tributaries is founded upon the ruins of this ancient people. The city of St. Louis was a city of mounds, and is known as the "Mound City," while on the opposite side of the river more than two hundred were counted.

among which was the great Cahokia, the mammoth mound of the Mississippi valley. Before the desecrating hand of the white man had despoiled this magnificent temple it rose in height ninety feet. In shape it was at the base a parallelogram, the sides at the base measuring seven hundred by five hundred feet. On the southwest there was a terrace one hundred and sixty feet by three hundred feet, the top being level and constituting a platform two hundred feet wide by four hundred feet long, upon which could congregate many thousands of people at an elevation of nearly one hundred feet above the surrounding country.

#### VARIOUS KINDS OF MOUNDS.

Other important mound centers now occupied by towns and cities are Grave Creek, Marietta, Miami and Vincennes. Of the one at Vincennes Professor Collett says: "Perhaps the seat of a royal priesthood, their efforts essayed to build a series of temples which constituted at once capital and 'holy city,' the Heliopolis of the West. Three sacred mounds thrown upon or against the sides of the second terrace or bluff east and southeast of Vincennes are the result and in size, symmetry and grandeur of aspect rival, if not excel any prehistoric remains in the United States."

Another class of mounds were the sepulchral mounds where they buried their illustrious dead. Skeletons have been unearthed in these mounds and with them have been found personal ornaments, such as bracelets, perforated plates of copper and beads of bone, ivory, shell or metal. Few weapons such as spear or arrow points are found. Stone implements are common. Plates of mica are frequently met with, and of such size as to almost completely cover the skeleton. Vases of pottery are occasionally found. These mounds are the principal depositories of ancient art. The implements and

ornaments found in these mounds are made of minerals, clay, bones, fossils and shells. The first implements used by them were made of stone. Among the Mound Builders we find many and various implements of stone, having a great variety of form and used for different purposes. Their arrow and spearheads were made of flint, ninety-five per cent. of them being made of the different varieties of chert. Many points made of obsidian have been found. Chalcedony occurs, but not in abundance. Knives and other cutting instruments made of obsidian and flint have been taken from the mounds. Axes fashioned with great skill out of rare and beautiful materials, mostly of the granitic series of minerals, are found in great abundance in the valleys, but rarely in the mounds, many of them with grooves for the adjustment of handles, and varying in weight from one pound to sixteen pounds. Their hatchets, designed for use in war as well as domestic use, weighed from one to two pounds, and had no grooves. Some had holes for the insertion of handles. These instruments for the most part were polished. Some were ground and polished with great care. Many stone mauls and chisels have been found. Quartz pestles and mortars or boulders with platter-shaped depressions for grinding the grain are found in great numbers. An interesting feature of their works of art is the pottery ware, comprising kettles, water jugs, cups, vases, urns, etc. In this they attained to a considerable degree of perfection, exhibiting a variety of forms and elegance of finish. They made these wares of fine clay. In the finer specimens they worked the clay pure. In some of the coarser specimens they intermixed the clay with quartz, in others with salmon-colored mica in small flakes, giving it a rather brilliant appearance.

#### SKILLED WORKMEN.

The surface was ornamented, some with curved lines, others

have the images of birds, quadrupeds and the human form molded upon them. They were all moulded by hand and there is no evidence that they had any knowledge of the potter's wheel. None of their vessels were glazed. The stone pipes found in the mounds display the most elaborate skill.

The workmen portrayed the object sought to be represented with great faithfulness, the more elaborate ones delineating the squirrel, opossum, beaver, otter, wildcat, bear, elk, wolf, panther, grouse, duck, raven and also the human head and form. Their highest grade of art is found in their sculptures. They accurately exhibited the general form and features of the object intended to be represented. In all of their work there is a remarkable avoidance of obscenity. Their largest instruments made out of quartz or chert are the spade and hoe.

The Mound Builders were acquainted with several of the metals. They had implements and ornaments of copper. Silver is found occasionally in the form of ornaments. There is nothing to indicate that it was ever used as money. Galena is found in considerable quantities, but there is no trace of iron. They made knives, axes, chisels, awls, spearheads and arrowheads out of copper. These were hammered out cold for the most part, though some show evidence of having been molded. Hence the conclusion is warranted that the art of smelting was known to them in their later times. They made for themselves awls or needles of the bones of the deer and elk, which they used in the sewing of the hides of animals.

#### CLOTHING.

The Mound Builders used for clothing sometimes the skins of wild animals, but for the most part their clothing was made from a cloth regularly spun with a uniform thread and woven with warp

and woof. In making a railroad grade through a mound near Middletown, Ohio, among other things found was cloth connected with tassels and ornaments. The cloth was in thick folds and very much charred. It appeared to be of some material allied to hemp, and the separation of wood and fiber was as thorough as at this day by rotting and hackeling. The thread is coarse, uniform in size and regularly spun. Their process of spinning and weaving is unknown. The fact that large numbers of copper implements and ornaments have been found in the mounds, the fact also that the Mound Builders used galena, obsidian, mica and some silver, suggest that they either engaged in mining or traded with people who did. Considerable quantities of galena have been found in the mounds of Ohio. It is of frequent occurrence on the sacrificial altars. Plumb bobs and net sinkers are found made out of this material, and yet no original deposits are known in the state of Ohio. Obsidian, a peculiar glass-like stone of volcanic origin, is obtained from some of the mounds in the form of arrowheads, spearheads and cutting instruments, yet this material is not found in its natural state north of Mexico nor east of the Rocky mountains in the United States. Mica is found in large quantities in and about the mounds. It was used for mirrors, ornaments and often for the covering of their dead. There were no mica mines nearer than New Hampshire or North Carolina. The mines of North Carolina give conclusive evidence of having been worked in long past times. It is a fair inference that these people of the Ohio and Mississippi valleys journeyed either as miners or traders to the mines of Carolina and thus obtained the mica now found. In the copper mines of the Lake Superior region excavations have been found which appear to be very ancient.

#### AN INDUSTROUS RACE.

In these ancient excavations numerous stone hammers are found. Here again the inference seems fair that the Mound Build-



ers of the Ohio valley journeyed to these far-away copper mines as miners, going in the springtime, taking a store of provisions with them, and returning in the autumn to their homes. The cold of the Lake Superior region was such as to forbid their growing their food there. The wide distribution of copper implements shows that an extensive business was carried on in this metal. From the valley of the Ohio it was a journey of a thousand miles. There is no evidence of settled life at that time in the copper regions. The people who did this were energetic and enterprising. The same must be said of a people who journeyed to far-away Mexico for a supply of obsidian.

It appears to be indisputable that the Mound Builders were an industrious people, well settled, extensively engaged in mining operations and various mechanical pursuits, well skilled and far from a state of barbarism. They were somewhat advanced in the arts and sciences and occupied no mean position in life. For their times and surroundings they had made great strides towards a permanent civilization and must be ranked as one of the great people of ancient times.

Who were the Mound Builders? Where did they come from? When were they here? When did they leave here? What was the manner of their going? Who occupied this country at their going? are questions naturally suggested.

To the first two questions we must frankly admit that we are in absolute ignorance.

#### WHEN THE EUROPEANS CAME.

When the Europeans first came here they found the Indians without a trace of a tradition of the people who dwelt here before them. The people themselves left no written records whose authen-



ticity may be said to be unquestioned. The darkness of the past has completely enveloped them. What we do know is that there now remain here the ruins of the works of a prehistoric people whose only history we can interpret from these ruins.

The next two questions admit of a somewhat more satisfactory reply. We know that many centuries have passed since the Mound Builders went out from their homes here. When the earliest European explorers visited these mounds time had completed their wrecking. Mounds only remained of great buildings and massive walls. Forests of giant trees, centuries old, had grown upon the ruins and had fallen to decay, probably many times repeated.

The ruins of the new world may be as ancient as those of the old. May we not safely say that the Mound Builders of America were contemporaneous with the great peoples of antiquity in the old world? While the Pharaohs of Egypt were erecting their pyramids and building magnificent temples to their gods and were engaging in great national enterprises; while Abraham of Ur of the Chaldees, at the command of the living God, and imbued with the spirit of enterprise of his age, was going out to found a new home and nation of his own; while Nineveh and Babylon were growing up to be mighty cities through the enterprise of their citizens, may not this people have been engaged in the building of their temples to the Great Spirit and in the construction of other great works whose ruins yet remain?

There is no evidence that the nations of the old and new worlds had any knowledge of each other. They appear, however, to have grown in power and advanced in civilization very much alike. They had the same kinds of mills for grinding their grain. May not the spirit of enterprise and civilization that prevailed in the old world in those centuries before Christ have been world-wide and found its expression in the Mound Builders of the new?

What was the manner of their going? The probabilities are that they were driven out by a barbarous, warlike people. For ages they and their ancestors had lived in these rich and fertile valleys; they had builded towns and cities and made homes as dear to them as life itself.

#### INVADERS.

Antiquarians who have studied the mounds, which were once the fortifications of this people, assert that they were placed and arranged to protect the inhabitants from northern invaders. Signal stations have been traced to the northward, indicating that they kept sentinels posted in times of danger to warn them of the approach of foes by signaling from station to station.

It is further declared that the Mound Builders had their habitations from the Ohio river southward to later times than on the north. The remains of many of the mounds indicate that their going had been precipitate; that they had not been given time to gather up their belongings and move out orderly. It seems very probable that a savage or barbarous people to the north of them waged war with them probably at intervals for a long time and finally had overcome them and had driven them across the Ohio river, which, for a time at least, was the boundary between them.

In thus disposing of the Mound Builders we must admit that the evidence is purely circumstantial; that no eyewitness has been found whose record bears positive testimony to the facts regarding this people. It is true that there have been found what was purported to be the writings of prehistoric man. Some of these have been determined as impositions, others have not been deciphered. We do not know whether they are false or genuine, and if genuine what their testimony is. We can say positively, however, that there

was an ancient people who lived here in Howard county, who made considerable progress in the arts and sciences in civilization, who had settled homes, who cleared away the forests and engaged in agriculture in perhaps a crude manner compared with our twentieth century methods, and who carried on a limited commerce, using Wildcat and its tributaries as their highway, carrying it in canoes or rude boats made with their very primitive tools, and that after a long occupancy they were driven out by a savage people, who, so far as we know, remained in possession of the country until the coming of the Europeans in recent times.

#### LITTLE TURTLE'S IDEA.

It would certainly be a matter of very great satisfaction to be able to give the origin of the Mound Builders or their successors, the red men, but we are in complete ignorance, and mere conjecture is idle. The various conjectures found in our school histories attempting to account for the origin of these people are certainly unworthy the place they occupy in teaching the young. That they are or were the descendants of the ten lost tribes of Israel is absurd. That they are or were the descendants of the Tartars who crossed by the way of Behring strait and spread out over America was well answered by Little Turtle, who, when it was suggested to him that the Tartars and Indians resembled each other, that Asia and America at Behring strait were only a few miles apart and that the Indians were probably descendants of the Tartars, replied: "Why should not these Tartars who resemble us have come from America? Are there any reasons for the contrary? Or why should we not both have been born in our own country?" The other suggestion that Europeans sailing by way of Iceland and Greenland reached the mainland of America and settled it, becoming Indians, is no

better. The better explanation seems to be that the Indian is a distinct type of mankind; that the Mound Builders were the highest examples of this Indian type, and that the Indians peopled this continent in very ancient times.

---

### THE INDIANS.

The inference seems fair that the ancestors of the Indians who dwelt here at the discovery of America by Columbus were the barbarous and warlike people who drove out the Mound Builders, for when European explorers first became acquainted with the Indians dwelling in that region, which had formerly been the country of the Mound Builders, they found two powerful Indian families—the Algonquin and the Huron-Iroquois.

At the beginning of the seventeenth century the Algonquins numbered a quarter of a million people. The tribes of this great family were nomadic in their habits, roaming from one hunting ground and river to another, according to the exigencies of the chase and fishing. Agriculture was little esteemed. They were divided into many subordinate tribes, each having a local name, dialect and tradition. When the European settlements were planted the Algonquin race was already declining in numbers and influence. Wasting diseases destroyed whole tribes. Of all the Indians the Algonquins suffered most from contact with the white man. Before his aggressive spirit, his fiery rum and his destructive weapons the warriors were unable to stand. The race has withered to a shadow and only a few thousands remain to rehearse the story of their ancestors.

Within the territory occupied by the Algonquins lived the powerful nation of the Huron-Iroquois. Their domain extended over

the country reaching from the Georgian Bay and Lake Huron to Lakes Erie and Ontario, south of these lakes to the valley of the upper Ohio, and eastward to the Sorel river. Within this extensive district was a confederacy of vigorous tribes having a common ancestry and generally, though not always, acting together in war. This confederacy was nearly always at war with the Algonquins. At the time of their greatest power and influence the Huron-Iroquois embraced no less than nine allied nations. These were the Hurons proper, living north of Lake Erie; the Eries and Andastes, south of the same water; the Tuscaroras, of Carolina, who ultimately joined their kinsmen in the north; the Senecas, Cayugas, Onondagas, Oneidas and Mohawks, constituting the five nations of New York—the Iroquois people.

#### THE WARRIORS.

The warriors of this great confederacy presented the Indian character in its most favorable aspect. They were brave, patriotic and eloquent, not wholly averse to useful industry, living in respectable villages, tilling the soil with considerable success, faithful as friends and terrible as enemies. It has been said of them that, knowing well the advantages of their position on the great waterways which led to the interior of the continent, they made themselves feared by all their race. From Canada to the Carolinas and from Maine to the Mississippi, Indian women shuddered at the name of the Ho-de-no-san-nee, while even the bravest warriors of other tribes went far out of their way in the wintry forests to avoid an encounter with them. Within sixty years from their first acquaintance with white men the Iroquois had become the bitterest foes of their nearest kinsmen—the Hurons—and had exterminated them; also the Eries and Neutrals about Lake Erie and the Andastes of the

upper Susquehanna, while they had forced a humiliating peace upon the Delawares, the most powerful of the Algonquins, and had driven the Ottawas from their home upon the river which bears their name.

Their government and laws, similar to those of the United States, guaranteed to the people of the tribes the right to manage their local affairs in their own way, subject only to the general and foreign polity of the confederacy. Their union was based upon pure principles of friendship and voluntary adhesion. One of their chiefs, Canassatego, in 1774 delivered a speech to the commissioners of Pennsylvania, Virginia and Maryland, announcing the basis of their union. He said: "Our wise forefathers established amity and union between the five nations. This has made us formidable. This has given us great weight and authority with our neighboring nations. We are a powerful confederacy, and by observing the sane methods our wise forefathers have taken, you will acquire fresh strength and power. Therefore I counsel you, whatever befalls you, never to fall out with one another."

#### LOCAL HISTORY.

The local Indian history of Howard county is confined chiefly to the three Algonquin tribes—the Delawares, Pottawottamies and Miamis. The Miamis held the territory south of the Wabash river from Ohio to Illinois, also a part of the territory north of the Wabash from the site of Peru eastward; the Pottawottamies the north-western part of the state to the Wabash river, and the Delawares the territory along the White river; but on terms of friendship each used the territory of Howard county as hunting and fishing ground. The Delawares were once the most powerful of the Algonquins and dwelt along the Delaware river. They claimed that in the past they held an eminent position for antiquity, wisdom and valor. This



claim seems to have been well founded, as the neighboring Indian tribes were disposed to concede it. In their wars with the Iroquois they were defeated and reduced to a state of vassalage. In 1744, during the progress of the treaty negotiations at Lancaster, Pennsylvania, the Iroquois denied the Delawares the right to participate in the privileges incident to the treaty and refused to recognize them as an independent nation, entitled to the right to sell and transfer lands. The Iroquois chief upbraided them for attempting to exercise any other rights than such as belonged to a conquered nation or people. Arrogantly he bade them to make no reply, but to leave the council in silence. He ordered them in a peremptory manner to leave the lands where they then resided and go to the Susquehanna. In silence they went out and not long afterward they left forever their homes and happy hunting grounds on the banks of the Delaware and sought a new home on the Pennsylvania frontier, humiliated and very unhappy in the memory of their former high estate and greatness. The encroaching white man and the hostile Iroquois left them no peace in their new home and again in 1751 they started for the far West and founded a settlement on the White river in Indiana. Here a missionary effort was made to introduce Christianity among them. This was frustrated by the Prophet, a brother of Tecumseh, who was then very popular among the Indians. In the War of 1812 the Delawares refused to join Tecumseh in his hostilities against the United States, but remained faithful to the states. In 1818 eighteen hundred of them, leaving a small band in Ohio, moved westward again and settled on the White river in Missouri. Soon they moved again, some going to the Red river, but the larger number were settled by treaty upon the Kansas and Missouri rivers. They numbered about one thousand and were brave, enterprising hunters on the plains, cultivated the soil and were friendly to the whites. The Baptists and Methodists had



mission schools among them and built a church. They suffered much from lawless whites and hostile Sioux. The Kansas Delawares during the Civil war were strong Unionists and sent one hundred and seventy out of two hundred and ten able-bodied men into the Union service and proved efficient soldiers and guides to the Union army.

#### THE POTTAWATTOMIES.

From their home in the northwestern part of the state the Pottawattomies kept pushing out upon the ancient possessions of the Miamis and were familiar objects to the early settlers of Howard county. Of these Indians we quote: "At the beginning of the seventeenth century they occupied the lower peninsula of Michigan apparently in scattered bands, independent of each other, there being at no period in their history any trace of a general authority or government. They were hunters and fishers, cultivating a little maize, but warlike and frequently in collision with neighboring tribes. They were finally driven west by the tribes of the Iroquois family and settled on the islands and shores of Green Bay, and the French established a mission among them. Perrot acquired great influence with the tribe, who soon took part with the French against the Iroquois. Owangnice, their chief, was one of the parties to the Montreal treaty of 1701 and they actively aided the French in the subsequent wars. They gradually spread over what is now southern Michigan and upper Illinois and Indiana, a mission on the St. Joseph river being a sort of central point. The Pottawattomies joined Pontiac and surprised Fort St. Joseph, capturing Schlosser, the commandant, May 25, 1763. They were hostile to the Americans in the Revolution and subsequently, but after Wayne's victory joined the treaty of Greenville, December 22, 1795. The tribes comprising the families or clans of the Golden Carp Frog. Crab

and Tortoise were then composed of the St. Joseph, Wabash and Huron river bands, with a large scattering population, generally called the Pottawatomies of the Prairie, who were a mixture of many Algonquin tribes. From 1803 to 1809 the various bands sold to the government portions of lands claimed by them, receiving money and annuities. Yet in the War of 1812 they again joined the English, influenced by Tecumseh. A new treaty of peace was made in 1815, followed rapidly by others, by which their lands were almost entirely conveyed away. A large tract was assigned to them on the Missouri, and in 1838 the St. Joseph band was carried off by troops, losing one hundred and fifty out of eight hundred men on the way by death and desertion. The whole tribe then numbered about four thousands. The St. Joseph, Wabash and Huron bands had made progress in civilization and were Catholics, while the Pottawatomies of the Prairie were still roving and pagan. A part of the tribe was removed with some Chippewas and Ottawas, but they eventually joined the others or disappeared. In Kansas the civilized band with the Jesuit mission founded by DeSmet and Hoecken advanced rapidly with good schools for both sexes. A Baptist mission and school was more than once undertaken among the less tractable Prairie band, but was finally abandoned.

The Kansas trouble brought difficulties for the Indians, made the Prairie band more restless and the civilized anxious to settle. A treaty proclaimed April 19, 1862, gave individual Indians a title to their several tracts of land under certain conditions, and though delayed by the Civil war, this policy was carried out in the treaty of February 27, 1867. Out of the population of two thousand one hundred and eighty, fourteen hundred elected to become citizens and take lands in severalty and seven hundred and eighty to hold lands as a tribe. Some of the Prairie band were then absent. The experiment met with varied success. Some did well and improved, others

squandered their lands and their portion of the funds and became paupers. Many of these scattered, one band even going to Mexico.

#### THE MIAMIS.

When the Europeans first became acquainted with the Indians the Miamis were a leading and powerful branch of the Algonquin family. The tribe has been known by a variety of names, the first probably having been "Twa Twas," followed by "Twe Twees," "Twighwess," "Omees," "Omamees," "Aumannees," and finally as the Miamis. Bancroft says of them: "They were the most powerful confederacy in the West, excelling the Six Nations (Iroquois). Their influence reached to the Mississippi and they received frequent visits from tribes beyond the river." Mr. LaSalle says: "When the Miamis were first invited by the French authorities to Chicago in 1670 they were a leading and very powerful Indian nation. A body of them assembled near that place for war against the powerful Iroquois of the Hudson and the still more powerful Sioux of the upper Mississippi. They numbered at least three thousand warriors, and were under the lead of a chief who never sallied forth but with a bodyguard of forty warriors. He could at any time call into the field an army of three thousand to five thousand men."

The Miamis were first known to Europeans about the year 1669 in the vicinity of Green Bay, where they were first visited by the French missionary, Father Allouez, and later by Father Dalton. From this region they passed south and eastward around the southern point of Lake Michigan, occupying the regions of Chicago and later establishing a village on the St. Joseph, another on the Miami and another on the Wabash. The territory claimed by this confederacy at the close of the eighteenth century is clearly set forth by their chief, Little Turtle, in a speech delivered by him at the treaty

at Greenville, July 22, 1795, in which he said: "General Wayne, I hope you will pay attention to what I now say to you. I wish to inform you where your younger brothers, the Miamis, live, and also the Pottawottamies of St. Joseph, together with the Wabash Indians. You have pointed out to us the boundary line between the Indians and the United States, but now I take the liberty to inform you that that line cuts off from the Indians a large portion of country which has been enjoyed by my forefathers from time immemorial without molestation or dispute. The prints of my ancestors' houses are everywhere to be seen in this portion. I was a little astonished at hearing you and my brothers who are now present telling each other what business you had transacted together at Muskingum concerning this country. It is well known by all my brothers present that my forefather kindled the first fire at Detroit; from thence he extended his line to the headwaters of the Scioto, from thence to its mouth, from thence down the Ohio to the mouth of the Wabash river, and from thence to Chicago on Lake Michigan. At this place I first saw my elder brothers, the Shawnees. I have now informed you of the boundary line of the Miami nation, where the Great Spirit placed my forefather a long time ago and charged him not to sell or part with his lands, but to preserve them for his posterity. This charge has been handed down to me. I was much surprised to find that my other brothers differed so much from me on this subject, for their conduct would lead one to suppose that the Great Spirit and their forefathers had not given them the same charge that was given to me, but, on the contrary, had directed them to sell their land to any white man who wore a hat as soon as he should ask it of them. Now, elder brother, your younger brothers, the Miamis, have pointed out to you their country, and also our brothers present. When I hear your remarks and proposals on this subject I will be ready to give you an answer. I came with

an expectation of hearing you say good things, but I have not heard what I expected."

LITTLE TURTLE.

Little Turtle was probably the ablest and most illustrious of the Miami chieftains and has set forth most accurately the claims of the Miamis to territory and their policy of retaining it. The claim he put forth included all of Indiana, a part of eastern Illinois, southern Michigan and western Ohio. It is a noteworthy fact that all the treaties they made in which they sold lands to the United States government were after they had suffered overwhelming defeats.

In the early Indian wars the Miamis were the enemies of the English and the friends of the French. Afterwards in the trouble between the king and the colonies they were generally the allies of the English and the foes of the States. They looked upon the approach of the white man with the deepest distrust, fearing degradation, destruction and ultimate extinction. They loved their native forests, worshiped freedom and hated restraint. They feared the advance of invaders and abhorred the forms of civilization. It is said the Miamis were early and earnestly impressed with a fearful foreboding of ultimate ruin, and therefore seized upon every opportunity to terrify, destroy and drive back the invading enemy. Their chiefs, their officers and warriors were found in the fiercest battles in the most desperate places. They bared their savage forms to civilized bullets and bayonets and died without a murmur or a groan. In their treatment of the whites they were as savage as they were brave. They often murdered the defenseless pioneer without regard to age, sex or condition with the most shocking and brutal savagery. Not only men but helpless women and children were burned to death or cut to pieces in the most painful manner



while the warriors and squaws in fiendish ferocity gloated over the misery and suffering of the victim.

As against Anglo-Saxon armies no tribe did more to stay the tide of civilization or the flow of emigration into their venerated forests and none record so many victories with so few defeats. Their love for the land of their fathers, for their forest homes burned in their barbarous bosoms with an intensity that pleads some extenuation for their savage cruelty. They were a leading power in defeating General Braddock in 1755, and from that time forward the blood of the Miamis moistened nearly every battlefield.

The following sketches are taken from Drake's "Indians of North America:" We now pass to a chief far more prominent in Indian history than many who have received greater notice from historians. This was Mishikinakwa (by no means settled in orthography), which, interpreted, is said to mean Little Turtle.

"Little Turtle was chief of the Miamis, and the scenes of his warlike achievements were in the country of his birth. He had in conjunction with the tribes of that region successfully fought the armies of Harmer and St. Clair, and in the fight with the latter is said to have had the chief command, hence a detailed account of the affair belongs to his life.

#### THE WESTERN INDIANS.

"The western Indians were only emboldened by the battles between them and detachments of General Harmer's army in 1790, and under such a leader as Mishikinakwa they entertained sanguine hopes of bringing the Americans to their own terms. One murder followed another in rapid succession, attended by all the horrors peculiar to their warfare, which caused President Washington to take the earliest opportunity of recommending congress to adopt effi-



cient measures for checking these calamities, and two thousand men were immediately raised and put under the command of General St. Clair, then governor of the Northwest Territory. He received his appointment on the 4th of March, 1791, and proceeded to Fort Washington by way of Kentucky with all dispatch, where he arrived on the 15th of May. There was much time lost in getting the troops collected at this place, General Butler with the residue not arriving until the middle of September. There were various circumstances to account for the delays which it is not necessary to recount here. Colonel Drake proceeded immediately on his arrival, which was about the end of August, and built Fort Hamilton on the Miami, in the country of Little Turtle, and soon after Fort Jefferson was built forty miles farther onward. These two forts being left manned, about the end of October the army advanced, being about two thousand strong, militia included, whose numbers were not inconsiderable, as will appear by the miserable manner in which they not only confused themselves but the regular soldiers also.

#### GENERAL ST. CLAIR'S ARMY.

"General St. Clair had advanced about six miles in front of Fort Jefferson when sixty of his militia, from pretended disaffection, commenced to retreat, and it was discovered that the evil had spread considerably among the rest of the army. Being fearful that they would seize upon the convoy of provisions the general ordered Colonel Hamtranack to pursue them with his regiment and force them to return. The army now consisted of fourteen hundred effective men, and this was the number attacked by Little Turtle and his warriors fifteen miles from the Miami villages. Colonel Butler commanded the right wing and Colonel Drake the left. The militia were posted a quarter of a mile in advance and were encamped in

two lines. The troops had not finished securing their baggage when they were attacked in their camp. It was their intention to march immediately upon the Miami villages and destroy them. The savages being apprised of this acted with great wisdom and firmness. They fell upon the militia before sunrise November 4th. The latter at once fled into the main camp in the most disorderly manner, many of them having thrown away their guns were pursued and slaughtered.

"At the main camp the first was sustained some time by the great exertion of the officers, but with great inequality, the Indians under Little Turtle amounting to fifteen hundred warriors. Colonels Drake, Butler and Major Clarke made several successful charges, which enabled them to save some of their number by checking the enemy until flight was more practicable. Of the Americans five hundred and ninety-three were killed and missing, besides thirty-eight officers, two hundred and forty-two soldiers and twenty-one officers were wounded, many of whom died. Colonel Butler was among the slain. The account of his fall is shocking. He was severely wounded and left on the field. The well known and infamous Simon Girty came up to him and observed him writhing under the severe pains from his wounds. Girty knew and spoke to him. Knowing that he could not live, the colonel begged of him to put an end to his misery. This Girty refused to do, but turned to an Indian and told him that the officer was the commander of the army, upon which the Indian drove his tomahawk into the colonel's head. A number of others came around, and after taking off his scalp they took out his heart and cut it into as many pieces as there were tribes in the action and divided it among them. All manner of brutal acts were committed on the bodies of the slain. It need not be mentioned, for the observers of Indian affairs know that land was the main cause of this as well as all other wars between

the Indians and the whites, and hence it was easy to account for the Indians filling the mouths of the slain with earth after this battle. It was actually the case, as reported by those who visited the scene of action and buried the dead.

#### ACCOUNT OF THE DEFEAT.

"General St. Clair was called to account for this disastrous campaign and was honorably acquitted. He published a narrative in vindication of his conduct, which at this day few will think required. What he says of his retreat we will give in his own words: 'The retreat, you may be sure, was a precipitate one. It was, in fact, a flight. The camp and the artillery were abandoned, but that was unavoidable, for not a horse was left to draw it off had it otherwise been practicable. But the most disgraceful part of the business is that the greatest part of the men threw away their arms and accoutrements even after the pursuit, which continued about four miles, had ceased. I found the road strewn with them for many miles, but was unable to remedy it, for, having had all my horses killed and being mounted upon one that could not be pricked out of a walk, I could not get forward myself, and the orders I sent forward either to halt the front or prevent the men from parting with their arms were unattended to. The remnant of the army arrived at Fort Jefferson the same day just before sunset, the place from whence they fled being twenty-nine miles distant.' General St. Clair did everything that a brave general could do. He exposed himself to every danger, having during the action eight bullets shot through his clothes. In no attack on record did the Indians discover greater bravery or determination. After giving the first fire they rushed forward with towahawk in hand. Their loss was inconsiderable, but the traders afterwards learned among them

that Little Turtle had one hundred and fifty killed and many wounded. They rushed on the artillery, heedless of their fire, and took two pieces in an instant. They were again retaken by the troops, and whenever the army charged them they were seen to give way, and advanced again as soon as they began to retreat. Six or eight pieces of artillery fell into their hands, with about four hundred horses, all the baggage, ammunition and provisions.

## GOVERNMENT DISAPPOINTED.

"This terrible defeat disappointed the expectations of the general government, alarmed the frontier inhabitants, checked the tide of emigration from the eastern and middle states and many fearful, frightful and horrible murders were committed upon white settlers. St. Clair resigned the office of major general and Anthony Wayne, a distinguished officer of the Revolutionary war, was appointed in his place. In the month of June, 1792, he arrived at Pittsburg, the appointed place of rendezvous. On the 28th of November, 1792, the army left Pittsburg and moved down the Ohio about twenty miles to a point called Legionville, where they remained until April 30, 1793, and then moved down the river to Fort Washington (Cincinnati) and encamped near the fort at a place called Hobson's Choice. They were kept here until the 7th of October, and on the 23d of the same month they arrived at Fort Jefferson with an effective force of three thousand six hundred and thirty men, together with a small number of friendly Indians from the South. On the 8th of August, 1794, they arrived at the confluence of the rivers Auglaize and Maumee, where they built Fort Defiance. It was the general's design to have met the enemy unprepared in this move, but a fellow deserted his camp and notified the Indians. He now tried again to bring them to a reconciliation, and so artful were the

replies he received from them it was some time revolved in his mind whether they were for peace or war. At length, being fully satisfied, he marched down the Maumee and arrived at the rapids on the 18th of August, two days before the battle. His army consisted of three thousand men, two thousand of whom were regulars. Fort Deposit was erected at this place for the security of the supplies. They now set out to meet the enemy, who had chosen their position on the banks of the river with much judgment. The troops had a breastwork of fallen trees in front and the high, rocky shore gave them much security, as also did the thick woods of Presque Isle. The force was divided and disposed at supporting distances for about two miles. When the Americans had arrived at a proper distance a body was sent out to begin the attack with orders to rouse the enemy from the covert at the point of the bayonet, and when up to deliver a close fire upon their backs and press them so hard as not to give them time to reload. This order was so well executed, and the battle at the point of attack so short, that only about nine hundred Americans participated in it. But they pursued the Indians with great slaughter through the woods to Fort Maumee, where the carnage ended. The Indians were so unexpectedly driven from their stronghold that their numbers only increased their distress and confusion, and the cavalry made horrible havoc among them with their long sabers. Of the Americans there were killed and wounded about one hundred and thirty. The loss of the Indians could not be ascertained, but must have been very severe. The American loss was chiefly at the commencement of the action as they advanced upon the mouths of the Indian rifles. They maintained their coverts but a short time, being forced in every direction by the bayonets. But until that was effected the Americans fell fast and we only wonder that men could be found to thus advance in the face of certain death. It has been generally said that had the ad-



vice of Little Turtle been regarded the disastrous fight with General Wayne would not have occurred. He was not for fighting General Wayne at Presque Isle, and rather inclined to peace than fighting him at all. In a council held the night before the battle he argued: 'We have beaten the enemy twice under separate commanders. We cannot expect the same good fortune to always attend us. The Americans are now led by a chief who never sleeps; the night and the day are alike to him, and during all the time he has been marching on our villages, notwithstanding the watchfulness of our young men, they have never been able to surprise him. Think well of it. There is something whispers to me it would be well to listen to his offer of peace.' For using such language he was reproached by another chief with cowardice, which put an end to further discourse. Nothing wounds the feelings of a warrior like the reproach of cowardice, but Little Turtle stifled his resentment, did his duty in battle, and its issue proved him a truer prophet than his accuser believed."

#### WAYNE'S VICTORY.

General Wayne's victory broke the power of the Miamis, but they were not conquered, and were yet hostile to the invading whites. The government adopted a policy of conciliation, hoping to win them to friendship and peace. The government built Little Turtle a house upon Eel river, twenty miles from Fort Wayne, to induce the other Miamis to a like mode of life by their own exertions, but because they had to work for their homes and he had been given his they became envious and thus prejudiced the cause sought to be advanced and engendered hatred of Little Turtle by the other Indians. He was not a chief by birth, but had been raised to that position by his superior talents. This was a cause of much jealousy and envy at this time, as also a neglect of his counsel heretofore.



Drake says that Little Turtle was the son of a Miami chief by a Mohegan woman. As the Indian maxim with regard to descents is precisely that of the civil law in relation to slaves, that the condition of the woman adheres to the offspring, he was not a chief by birth. Little Turtle died in the summer of 1812 at his home but a short time after the declaration of war against England by the United States. His portrait by Stewart graces the walls of the war office of our nation. The following notice appeared in public prints at the time of his death at Fort Wayne in July, 1812: "On the 14th inst. the celebrated Miami chief, Little Turtle, died at this place at the age of sixty-five years. Perhaps there is not left on this continent one so distinguished in councils and war. His disorder was the gout. He died in camp because he chose to be in the open air. He met death with great firmness. The agent for Indian affairs had him buried with the honors of war and other marks of distinction suitable to his character. He was generally in his time styled the Messissago Chief, and a gentleman who saw him soon after St. Clair's defeat says he was six feet high, about forty-five years of age, of a very sour and morose countenance and apparently very crafty and subtle. He was alike courageous and humane, possessing great wisdom." The author before quoted says: "There have been few individuals among aborigines who have done so much to abolish the rites of human sacrifice. The grave of this noted warrior is shown to the visitor near Fort Wayne. It is frequently visited by the Indians in that part of the country, by whom his memory is cherished with the greatest respect and veneration."

#### TREATY OF GREENVILLE.

Soon after General Wayne's victory the treaty of Greenville in 1795 followed. In that and subsequent treaties the government obtained large bodies of their lands. The Indian policy of the gov-

ernment was to purchase their lands, excepting what they themselves would cultivate, to lead them to agriculture instead of war and hunting, and to remove them west of the Mississippi as soon as it could be peacefully and justly done.

In the War of 1812 they again fought the United States and were whipped by the forces under Lieutenant Colonel Campbell on the 18th day of December, 1812, in the southern part of what is now Wabash county, being the last battle of any note with the Miamis in this region. The expedition against them was resolved upon by General Harrison in November, 1812. Six hundred mounted men and a small company of scouts and spies were accordingly sent out from Greenville, Ohio, in December under Lieutenant Colonel John B. Campbell, who reached the north bank of the Mississinewa, near the mouth of Josina creek, December 17, 1812, and surprised an Indian village there, destroying it, killing eight warriors and taking forty-two prisoners. The troops then destroyed three other villages farther west on the river and encamped for the night. While holding a council of war on the morning of the 18th they were attacked by the Indians under Little Thunder in considerable force. The fight lasted about an hour, and the Indians were defeated, leaving fifteen dead upon the field and carrying many away in their retreat.

A portion of the tribe were then friendly to the United States, but they could not control the hostile portion. In 1818 a treaty was made with them, and again another on the north side of the Wabash river, just east of the city of Wabash, on the 26th day of October, 1826, by General John Tipton, then Indian agent, assisted by General Cass and James B. Ray. The place was called "Paradise Springs."

#### INDIANS GIVE UP LAND.

The tribe which under Little Turtle had sent fifteen hundred warriors to the field had dwindled down in 1822 to between two

thousand and three thousand people all told. They had acquired a burning desire for liquor, and drunkenness led to innumerable fights among the members of the tribe, and it is estimated that as many as five hundred were killed in eighteen years in these broils. In the treaty of October, 1826, the Indians gave up large quantities of land, but reserved some valuable tracts, among which was a reservation beginning two and a half miles below the mouth of the Mississinewa, extending five miles up and along the Wabash, and north to the Eel river, including the present site of Peru, Indiana. In payment for this they received thirty-one thousand dollars in goods and thirty thousand dollars in cash immediately and twenty-six thousand dollars in goods and thirty-five thousand dollars in cash in 1827, thirty thousand dollars in 1828 and twenty-five thousand dollars annually thereafter. In 1838 the Miamis numbered but eleven hundred, and in this year they sold to the government one hundred and seventy-seven thousand acres of land in Indiana for three hundred and thirty-five thousand six hundred and eighty dollars, among which was a seven-mile tract off of the west side of the "Reserve" in what is now Cass, Howard and Clinton counties, which was transferred by the United States to the state of Indiana and by it the proceeds were used for the completion of the Wabash and Erie canal from the mouth of the Tippecanoe river down. Previous to this a five-mile strip off of the north side of the "Reserve" and on the south side of the Wabash river had been used in the same way to build the same canal down to the mouth of the Tippecanoe river. William Marshall, of Jackson county, Indiana, helped negotiate with the Miamis the treaty of November 28, 1840, at the "forks of the Wabash," in which they finally relinquished the tract known as the "Miami Reserve," being all of their remaining land in Indiana, to the United States for the consideration of five hundred and fifty thousand dollars and several smaller items, such as reser-

vations, houses for their chiefs, etc. Three of these reservations lie in Howard county. Previous to this, in 1834-1845, the Wea and Piankeshaw bands, three hundred and eighty-four in number, had moved to the south side of the Kansas river. By the treaty of 1840 the remainder agreed to remove at the expense of the United States in five years, but their departure was delayed until 1847, in which year they were removed to the Marais des Cygnes, in the Fort Leavenworth agency. They were gathered to Peru for removal, and from there they were taken to Cincinnati and thence to their new home in the West beyond the Mississippi. Not all of the Miamis went. Many of them had renounced their tribal relations and elected to remain with their white brothers and to receive their interest on money held for them by the government through the special Indian agency at Peru. In 1875 there was disbursed at Peru twelve thousand dollars interest money. Some of these Indians own large farms, well improved and with fine residences. Richardville was the successor of Little Turtle as the Miami chief. His other name was Pee-jee-wah. He signed by his mark (X) the treaty of Greenville in August, 1795. From him Howard county was originally named Richardville county.

From the treaty at Greenville in 1795 the Miamis had continued to yield by purchase portions of their territory until 1838 only a part of the Miami reserve remained to them of that princely domain they once claimed as theirs. The Miami Indian reserve was originally thirty-six miles square, commencing near the town of La Gro, on the Wabash, where the Salamonie unites with the Wabash, running thence through Wabash and Grant counties into Madison county; its southeast corner was about four miles southeast of Independence at the center of section 27, thence running south of west parallel with the general course of the Wabash river across Tipton county and through the town of Tipton and crossing the west

line of Tipton county about three miles from its southwest corner to where it intersects a line running north and south from Logansport, which is the western boundary of Howard county, one mile west of range line No. 1 east; thence north to Logansport; thence up the Wabash to the mouth of the Salamonie, then embracing parts of Wabash, Grant, Madison, Tipton, Clinton, Cass and Miami counties, and all of Richardville (now Howard) county, and containing about eight hundred and thirty thousand acres.

#### MIAMIS IN HOWARD.

The Miami Indian population of Howard county in 1840 was about two hundred. The most important point of this population was the Indian village, Kokomo, on the south side of Wildcat, where South Kokomo is located. There were Indian villages south of Cassville and Greentown. There were "traces" or Indian paths from Kokomo down Wildcat and across to Frankfort and Throntown; from Kokomo to Peru by way of the village of Cassville, and from Kokomo to Meshingomesia by way of a village south of Greentown. These paths were much used and well worn. It is said that Chief Pee-jee-wah, or Richardville, had four sons—Kokomoko, shortened to Kokomo (Black Walnut), Shock-o-mo (Poplar), Meshin-go-me-sia (Burr Oak), Shap-pan-do-sia (Sugar Tree).

Kokomoko, from whom the city of Kokomo was named, is said to have been born about 1775, and according to the most authentic reports he died in 1838. He was a strong and silent man, who left to the women and his three brothers the trading so common to the Miamis. He died in loneliness and was buried according to the customs of his people, although directed by white men. His remains now lie buried in the old cemetery at Kokomo.

With the deportation of the Miamis in 1847 Indian life may



be said to have closed in this country, for while many Indians of that tribe remained, they adopted the manners, customs and style of living of the whites. It is proper and fitting to close this chapter with a brief account of their government, customs and laws, as of a people whose work is done and whose history is of the past.

#### THIS GOVERNMENT.

They were emphatically a free people. Their government was democratic. Having no written language, they had no written laws defining their rights and duties, but they had usages and customs consented to and acquiesced in by the members of the tribe. No man's property or consent could be commanded except by his consent. War could not be declared nor peace concluded only through their councils, in which women participated as well as men. They had no organized form of government. They had no officers chosen to enforce their unwritten laws. They had no courts of justice to right the wrongs done to each other or to mete out justice to the offender. There were certain customs and usages consented to and acquiesced in, granting to the party injured or his relatives redress for the wrong, but that redress was not afforded by governmental aid. If one stole from another the party aggrieved might by force or otherwise take twofold from the thief. Bancroft says: "Unconscious of political principles, they remained under the influence of instincts. Their forms of government grew out of their passions and wants and were therefore nearly the same. Without a code of laws, without a distinct recognition of succession in the magistracy by inheritance or election, government was conducted harmoniously by the influence of native genius, virtue and experience. Prohibitory laws were hardly sanctioned by savage opinion. The wild man hates restraint and loves to do what is right in his own eyes."



"The Illinois," writes Marest, "are absolute masters of themselves, subject to no law." The Delawares, it was said, "are, in general, wholly unacquainted with civil laws and proceedings, nor have any kind of notion of civil judicatures, of persons being arraigned and tried, condemned or acquitted." As there was no commerce, no coin, no promissory notes, no employment of others for hire, there were no contracts. Exchanges were but a reciprocity of presents, and mutual gifts were the only traffic. Arrests and prisoners, lawyers and sheriffs were unknown. Each man was his own protector, and, as there was no public justice, each man issued to himself his letters of reprisal and became his own avenger. In case of death by violence the departed shade could not rest till appeased by a retaliation. "His kindred would go a thousand miles for the purpose of revênge, over hills and mountains, through large swamps full of grapevines and briars, over broad lakes, rapid rivers and deep creeks, and all the way in danger of poisonous snakes, exposed to the extremes of heat and cold, to hunger and thirst. And blood being once shed, the reciprocity of attacks involved family in mortal strife against family, tribe against tribe, often continuing from generation to generation. Yet mercy could make itself heard, even among barbarians, and peace was restored by atoning presents, if they were enough to cover up the graves of the dead."

A tribe of Indians is a body of kindred, subdivided into the clan, the gens and the family. The gens constituted an organized band of relatives, the family the household. The name of the mother follows the children and fixes the line of kinship. If her father was a chief her son inherits the honor. In their domestic relations she is the head of the family and through her blood all property, political and personal rights, must descend. If she was a "Turtle" the name of all her children is "Turtle," and they are known as the Turtle gens, clan or family. An Indian man or woman may marry a

cousin on the father's side, but not on the mother's. The father, though a chief and crowned with a hundred victories, though he has lined his wigwam with the scalps of enemies, cannot cast upon his kin his property, his fame or name, and though he be Wolf, Beaver, Bear or Hare, the children are all "Turtle." Big, Black or Little "Turtle," as fancy may direct. It is not the province of the historian to say that the Indian rule as here set out is wrong and that the civilized rule is right. The Indian rule is certainly very close to nature.

## COURTSHIP.

A man seeking a wife usually consults her mother, sometimes by himself, sometimes through his mother. When agreed upon the parties usually comply, making promises of faithfulness to the parents of both. Polygamy was permitted but was practiced very little. Wife No. 1 remained at the head of the family, while wife No. 2 became the servant. Divorces are permitted but do not often occur. The Indian's idea of marriage and divorce is well illustrated by this anecdote: "An aged Indian, who for many years had spent much time in Pennsylvania and New Jersey, one day, about the year 1770, observed that the Indians had a much easier way of getting a wife than the whites, but also a more certain way of getting a good one. 'For,' said he, 'white man court—court maybe one whole year, maybe two years before he marry. Well—maybe then he get a very good wife, but maybe not; maybe very cross. Well, now, suppose cross. Scold so soon as get awake in the morning. Scold all day. Scold until sleep. All one—he must keep him. White people have laws forbidding throw wife away, he be ever so cross—must keep him always. Well, how does Indian do? Indian, when he sees industrious squaw, he go to him, place his two forefingers close aside each other, make two like one—then look

squaw in the face. See him smile; this is all one. He say yes. So take him home—no danger he be cross. No, no; squaw know too well what Indian do if he cross. Throw him away and take another. Squaw love to eat meat; no husband no meat. Squaw do everything to please husband, he do everything to please squaw—live happy.' ”

#### DOMESTIC LIFE.

The council of the tribe assigns to the gens a particular tract of land for cultivation. The woman council carefully divides and distributes that tract of land among the heads of the families, who are responsible for its cultivation. The crops are planted, cultivated and gathered by the squaws. The wigwam and all articles of the household belong to the woman and at her death descend to her eldest daughter or nearest of female kin. In their criminal code adultery is punished in the first offense by cropping the hair, repeated offenses by cutting the left ear. If the mother fails to inflict the penalty it is done by the council of women of the gens. Theft is punished by twofold restitution. It is tried by the council of gens, from which there is no appeal. Maiming is compounded and tried in the same way. Murder is triable by the gens, but an appeal lies to the council of the tribes; technical errors in the prosecution are proofs positive of defendant's innocence; if found guilty the friends of the accused must pay for the dead man, and on failure to do so the friends of the dead man may kill the murderer at pleasure. Witchcraft is punishable by death, by tomahawking, stabbing or burning; an appeal lies from the grand council of the tribe to the holy ordeal by fire. A circular fire is built, and if the accused can run through it from east to west and from north to south without injury he is adjudged innocent. Treason is punished with death and consists in first giving aid or comfort to enemies of the tribe, secondly in revealing the secrets of the medicine men.

Each tribe had a sachem or chief counselor in matters of peace, whose place was filled on his death by the election of another member of his family, usually his brother or his sister's son. Women as well as men voted at these elections. In times of war or other emergencies chiefs were chosen, who continued in office as long as they lived. Being chosen for personal qualities, such as wisdom, eloquence or bravery, these chiefs were often very able men.

The sorcerers, called powwows or medicine men, had still greater power, owing to the superstition of the people. They really had some skill in healing sick persons by vapor baths and decoctions of roots and herbs, but to these rational remedies they added howlings and incantations, which were supposed to frighten away the evil spirits that occasioned disease.

#### RELIGION.

According to the dark notions of barbarians the Indians were a very religious people. They believed in a Great Spirit, the Master of Life, who had made the world, and whose bounty they celebrated by six annual thangsgivings—at the first flowing of maple sap, at planting, at the ripening of berries, when their green corn was ready for eating, at harvest and at New Year. They believed also in an evil spirit, who might bring upon them famine, pestilence or defeat in war, and whom they sought to appease by fastings and sacrifice. They expected another life after death, and desired to have their weapons, and sometimes a favorite dog, buried with them for use in the "happy hunting grounds." No matter how great the famine in the land, they provided the departed spirit with plenty of food to last it until its arrival at that bourne. Their heaven was limitless plains and boundless forests abounding in game of all sorts and flowing rivers stocked with all manner of fish—a place where the

imperfect conditions of this life for happiness would be perfect. They had no priesthood nor ceremonials of worship. As illustrating their religious ideas it is related that "In the year 1791 two Creek chiefs accompanied an American to England, where, as usual, they attracted great attention and many flocked around them, as well to ascertain their ideas of certain things as to behold the savages. Being asked their opinion of religion or of what religion they were, one made answer that they had no priest in their country, nor established religion, for they thought that upon a subject where there was no possibility of people agreeing in opinion, and as it was altogether a matter of opinion, it was best that every one should paddle his canoe in his own way." Dancing and singing were important parts of every religious observance. No sick person could be cured, no war planned and no treaty made without a dance, which often continued several days. Their musical instruments were drums, rattles and a rude kind of flute. The war dance was common to all tribes, but each clan had peculiar dances of its own, sometimes numbering thirty or more.

#### WRITING.

Though they practiced picture writing, had even a sort of shorthand, by which he could write off his song from memory, and made of shells or stones, for the social law of the Iroquois tribe, and boiled corn by other supplies.

As for writing, some Indian tribes answered all their purposes. They used, by which a leader could read and mark with a stick. Beads were used for Communion was the "houses" of the kettle of

The Indians were of an almost uniform dark brown color, with straight shining black hair and high cheek bones. With but few exceptions they were treacherous, cruel and revengeful. Often hospitable and friendly while at peace, they were merciless and brutal in war. Prisoners were tortured with fiendish barbarity. It was thought an ill omen for the conquerors if they failed to make their victims cry out with pain; therefore, though they tore out bits of flesh with teeth or pincers night after night and at last roasted him in a slow fire, he continued to sing his death song with a calm, unwavering voice until his last breath released him from their torments.

---

### ORGANIZATION AND EARLY HISTORY.

Howard county was organized in 1844. For three years it was known as Richardville county in memory of the Miami Indian, Chief Richardville, the successor of Little Turtle.

The county was formed wholly of the Miami Indian Reserve. Ervin, Monroe and Honey Creek townships were a part of the seven mile strip sold off of the reserve and given by the government to the state of Ohio. The proceeds of the sale of these lands for the completion of the Wabash and Erie canal. After the Indians had sold this strip, Monroe townships had been annexed to Carroll county and had been organized in 1828, and Honey Creek had been annexed to Hamilton county, which had been organized about 1830. The remainder of the county was formed from their final sale of the "Reserve" in 1840 and on which the Indians were granted five years to give possession. The white man had possession of the territory surrounding the "Reserve"; he was anxious to move into the new possessions.



coming tide of settlers a real "Promised Land". The Indians had chosen it from all their possessions as being the choice. It was a goodly land. It originally contained the choice lands from the Wabash southwards, along Big and Little Deer creeks, along Big and Little Wild Cats and tributaries and along Kokomo creek. While it was an almost unbroken forest, the trees were tall and stately, denoting a rich and productive soil. It is true that those early comers did not see in the giant poplar, walnut, ash and oak trees the wealth that a later generation would have found. In those vast sugar orchards they saw an obstruction to the use of the land as cultivated fields; but in the rolling lands along the creeks they saw golden opportunities to make pleasant, comfortable homes.

#### THE COUNTY OF RICHARDVILLE.

To prepare this land for settlement as soon as the Indians should go, an act was passed by the legislature and approved January 15, 1844, to organize the county of Richardville. In the forming of Richardville county only Ervin and Monroe townships west of the boundary line were added to the county. Honey Creek township was not made a part until several years later. John Moulder, then of Parke county, Himelias Mendenhall, of Miami county, John Armstrong, of Carroll county, Oliver Raymond, of Wabash county, and Samuel Calip, of Hamilton county, were appointed commissioners to permanently fix the seat of justice; and these commissioners were instructed to meet at the house of John Harrison in this county on the 2d Monday in May, 1844, to proceed with their duty. And it was ordered by that act that on and after the 1st day of May of that year, the county of Richardville should enjoy all the rights and jurisdiction which to a separate county belong. It was made the duty of the sheriff of Carroll county to notify the commissioners

of their appointment and place of meeting. By this act the circuit and other courts of Richardville county were ordered to be held at the house of John Harrison until other accommodations should be provided. The circuit court was ordered to be held on Thursday succeeding the court of Tipton county, and "shall continue three days if the business require it." Also by that act Richardville was attached to Carroll county for representative purposes, and to Carroll and Clinton for senatorial purposes. The house of John Harrison referred to in the act was about seven miles west of Kokomo, on the south side of Wild Cat creek, in the northwest quarter of section 2. It was a double log house, and the largest in this settlement.

The commissioners appointed to fix the county seat met at the time and place fixed in their order. All were present. Mr. Armstrong was a surveyor and had his instruments with him. There was a large gathering of pioneers at Harrison's. Some of them wanted the site of the county town at Harrison's, others at Cromwell's mill, about two miles east, but a large majority favored the site at Kokomo. The commissioners viewed the sites at Harrison's and Cromwell's mill and then came to Kokomo.

#### ONE HOUSE IN KOKOMO.

There was then no improvements at Kokomo except David Foster's log house, log barn and a small clearing around them. On the south side there were two or three Indian huts and a small field. What is now the business district of Kokomo was covered with a dense forest of great trees and a thick undergrowth, the greater part being swampy, presenting a very uninviting appearance.

The commissioners examined both sides of Wild Cat and unanimously decided that the south side should be selected. Foster refused to make the donation on the south side, alleging, it is said,

that the south side was dry and very fertile and well suited for the making of a good farm, while the north side was swampy, hard to clear and not very fit for a farm. The commissioners remained with him two days trying to induce him to yield to their choice. He was obdurate and the commissioners finally agreed to the site on the north side. His donation was forty acres. The donation as made by Foster and accepted by the commissioners began at the northwest corner of the LaFountain Reserve, thence east with the north line of the Reserve to the west side of Union street, thence south along the west side of Union street to a point about seventy-four feet south of High street, thence west to a point about one hundred feet west of Washington street, thence north to the beginning. By agreement the rude fence on the north line of the cleared "patch" about the house and barn was to be the south line of the donation, and the north line of the float section was to be the north line of the donation. Looked at from a present day standpoint this was a magnificent donation. In that early day it was far different. No lands had been surveyed east of the boundary line except the Indian Reserve, of which this was a part. The time of the Indians had not then expired and they were still in the neighborhood. Lands were rated as worth two dollars an acre.

In addition to the donation of land, Foster paid the expenses of the locating commissioners. They made their report to the county commissioners in called session on the 17th day of August following recommending the acceptance of the Foster donation. The county commissioners formally accepted the report, and David Foster delivered the deed to the land December 5th following.

#### FIRST ELECTIONS.

The first election held in any part of what is now Howard county was in the presidential election of 1840. The voting precinct

was at the house of John Harrison and included all the voters in that part then attached to Carroll county. Twenty-four votes were cast and resulted in a tie; twelve Democrat and twelve Whig votes. The first election under the county organization was held May 27, 1844, at which the following county officers were chosen: clerk, Franklin S. Price; auditor, Benjamin Newhouse; recorder, Austin North; treasurer, Harless Ashley; sheriff, John Harrison; county commissioners, John Lamb, Benjamin Fawcett and David Bailey.

The county commissioners held their first meeting June 17th, following their election, meeting at the home of John Harrison. At this session they divided the county into three townships; the west one being Monroe and including all west of the boundary line, the middle one Kokomo, extending from the boundary line east to a line running north and south through or near Vermont and all the remainder formed Greene township. Little else was done at this session.

The regular session, meeting on the 1st Monday in September, was held at David Foster's. At this term Peter Gay was appointed county agent and Austin C. Sheets, county surveyor, who was directed to plat the donation into town lots and thus to make the beginning of Kokomo. The other subordinate officers were appointed so that the local government was ready for the county. The first tax levy was also made, consisting of twenty-five cents on each one hundred dollars valuation and twenty-five cents poll tax.

At the December term, 1844, the board ordered an election to be held in each of the three townships on the 3d Monday in January, 1845, to elect a justice of the peace for each township. At this term they granted the first retail liquor license to Charles J. Allison. His license fee was ten dollars. In the succeeding year the commissioners raised the fee to fifty dollars. Mr. Allison was the first licensed retail liquor seller in Howard county; he was also the first

liquor law violator, having been indicted for violating the license law while holding this first license. At the September term Charles Price had been appointed county assessor; and at this term he was allowed thirty-four dollars and fifty cents for his services in making the assessment for the whole county. At this term the commissioners acted upon the first road report. During the early history of the county much of the time of the board of commissioners was taken up in ordering the location of roads or public highways, and in hearing reports of such roads as were located. As showing the lack of accuracy and permanency of much of the work then done, a few of these reports are here transcribed. The first report was made by Isaac Price, Jonathan Hayworth and J. C. Barnett, viewers: "In pursuance of the order of the board, we have viewed and laid out a road of public utility, to-wit: Beginning at the forks of Honey Creek, and running the nearest and best route in the direction of Peter Duncan's tavern, on the Michigan road, ending at the county line."

#### THE BOARD OF COMMISSIONERS.

J. C. Barnett and J. C. Chitwood made this report on a road they were ordered to view: "We viewed the same, commencing near the southwest corner of section 30, in township 24 north of range 2 east; thence northeast to the south end of Abraham Brubaker's lane; thence through said lane to the north end of the same; thence northeast to the quarter post between Judge Ervin and William Cullup's farms; thence north to Judge Ervin's fence; thence northeast along said fence to the mouth of Judge Ervin's lane; thence through said lane; thence northeast to the northeast corner of section 29 and so on, and report the same of public utility." In a few years this road was lost and could not be found. Another county road was located by Rich Staunton and George Taylor, as

follows: "Commencing at New London; thence with the Delphi and Muncie state road to Mr. Walls'; thence east via Miles Judkin's lane to James Shank's on Little Wild Cat; thence east to Laomi Ashley's; thence east to a school house near McCune's."

It must be remembered that these were the pioneers of a new country; that they were very busy in clearing and making farms out of the wilderness as well as attending to the public business; and that they had enough to do in looking after the pressing needs of the hour without planning for the future.

At the March term, 1845, the board took preliminary steps for the building of a court house. They decided that it should be twenty-four feet square, two stories high, and built out of hewn logs, and covered with boards three feet long and showing one foot to the weather. David Foster and Dennis McCormack were appointed to let the contract, which was taken by Rufus L. Blower at twenty-eight dollars.

Arrangements also were commenced for the building of a jail. This was built of hewn timbers twelve inches square throughout, walls, floor and ceiling; the logs notched down close and boarded on the outside, and double doors of two-inch oak plank. The lock to the door was made by Judge Thomas A. Long; the key was about ten inches long and weighed about four pounds. The building was to be eighteen feet by twelve feet in the clear.

At this session the report of T. A. Long, one of the commissioners appointed by the legislature to view a state road from Burlington, in Carroll county, by the way of Kokomo to Marion, in Grant county, was made to the board, this being the first state road through the county.

Most of the time of the board was taken up in making orders directing various officers and other persons to perform certain services for the public good, and in appointing various petit officers in



the townships where the rapidly increasing settlement of the country seemed to demand it, and the looking after public property as is evidenced by this order: "It appearing to the satisfaction of this court that H. C. Stewart has taken eight pieces of plank from the court house, and that others have done the same, it is ordered that David Foster be requested to call on all such persons as have taken lumber and require them to return it in fifteen days."

It was no unusual thing in those days for persons to use any lumber lying around loose. Lumber was very scarce and in great demand in fitting up houses to live in, and only one slow going saw mill in many miles. It seems the lumber was returned as there is no further mention of it.

At the September term, two state roads were located; one from Kokomo to Michigantown and one from Kokomo to Peru. At the December term, the court house was accepted of the contractor, R. L. Blower, after deducting two dollars from the contract price for some defect in the work.

At the June term, 1846, Harles Ashley, the first county treasurer, made his first report to the county commissioners, showing the receipts and expenditures for the first year of the county: "Received for the year ending June 1st, one thousand twenty-one dollars and forty-four cents; paid out for the same time nine hundred and eighty-four dollars and fifty-one cents; balance in treasury, thirty-six dollars and ninety-three cents." He was paid one hundred and twenty-five dollars and twenty-five cents for his services. The assessed valuation of personal property for the year 1846 was sixty thousand one hundred and forty-three dollars, real estate, fifty-eight thousand six hundred and ninety-five dollars, total, one hundred and eighteen thousand eight hundred and thirty-eight dollars. At the same term the board received the jail of contractor, James H. Johnson, paying him one hundred and seventy-eight dollars and ten

cents for its construction. At the December term, 1846, Howard county was subdivided into nine townships—Center, Ervin, Monroe, Clay, Harrison, Taylor, Howard, Jackson and Greene. At this term the board appropriated one hundred dollars for the building of a bridge across Wild Cat where the New London road crossed it.

NAME CHANGED TO HOWARD.

The name Richardville was not satisfactory; many advocated a change. In the discussions that followed, some advocated the union of Richardville and Tipton with the county seat at Sharpsville. Others advocated the division of the county and the formation of a county out of the western part of Howard and the eastern part of Carroll and the county seat to be at Burlington; others wanted a new name. N. R. Lindsay, a young attorney, was elected to the legislature this year and was a staunch friend to Kokomo remaining the county seat, and at the convening of the legislature in December, 1846, he and John Bohan, C. D. Murry and David Foster were present as also were the friends of the other interests. The Hon. T. A. Howard, a popular Democratic politician, who had recently died, had many friends in the legislature who wished to perpetuate his memory. The friends of the county and the county seat, remaining the same without change, took advantage of this sentiment and late in the evening a bill was prepared changing the name from Richardville to Howard, and the next morning upon the assembling of the house, one of the friends of Howard, while the other parties were still in rooms near the legislature hall preparing bills to spring upon the legislature, arose in his place and offered the following bill:

An act to change the name of Richardville county.

Section 1. Be it enacted by the General Assembly of the state

of Indiana, that the name of the county of Richardville be and the same is hereby changed to that of Howard.

Sec. 2. Nothing in this act contained shall be so construed as to in any manner affect any of the rights or liabilities of said county or any of the citizens thereof, but the said county shall be entitled, under the name of Howard, to all the rights, and be subject to all the liabilities the present county of Richardville is entitled or liable to.

Sec. 3. This act to take effect and be in force from and after its passage and it is hereby made the duty of the secretary of state to forward a certified copy of this act to the clerk of the circuit court of said county.

The bill was immediately put upon its passage, quickly taken to the other house and passed, taken to the governor and approved and the name was Howard before the others knew what was happening. It is related that some of the other parties coming in later and calling up the matter of Richardville county, a member arose and called the gentleman to order saying—"there was no such county as Richardville in Indiana; there was a county of Howard, but Richardville, Richardville—that county must be in some other state." A good natured laugh was had and after some explanation all seemed to be satisfied.

The act was approved by the Governor, December 28, 1846, and the act was filed with the clerk of the circuit court on the 13th of February, 1847, and from that date all business was transacted in Howard county.

#### COUNTY TREASURER'S REPORT.

At the June term, 1847, the county treasurer's report showed, receipts one thousand two hundred and ten dollars and seventy-four

cents, expenditures one thousand one hundred and fifty-three dollars and thirty-three cents. The previous year the receipts were one thousand twenty-one dollars and forty-four cents and expenditures nine hundred and eighty-four dollars and fifty-one cents. For the following year, 1848, receipts were two thousand one hundred and ninety-seven dollars and eighty-six cents, expenditures one thousand six hundred and eighty-five dollars and ninety-seven cents. For the year 1849, receipts were two thousand eight hundred and ninety-two dollars and three cents, and expenditures two thousand four hundred and fifty dollars and fifty-six cents. For the year 1849 the assessed valuation of property was one hundred and forty-eight thousand three hundred and ninety dollars. The assessed valuation in 1846 was one hundred and eighteen thousand eight hundred and thirty-eight dollars.

These figures show a very gradual increase in Howard county values. It must, however, be borne in mind that the people who came to Howard county to make homes were of very limited means when they came here and any increase must come from the ground by their labor; that this land was covered with heavy forests that had to be largely cleared away before growing a crop. While clearing their lands they did well to provide themselves with food and clothing. The privation and hardships endured by them can not be realized by those who have never gone through similar experience. These men of limited means and opportunity for anything but hard work had all the public business to attend to in addition to making their clearings and paying for their lands when the time came for making the entries. They also came from different localities, each having a method of its own for transacting business, many of them without experience. Thus it is not a matter of wonder that much of their public work was crude and imperfect and without any regular form. Experience in their case proved a good teacher, and they

soon acquired habits of correct and regular transaction of the public business. It is said of the officers of these early years of the county, that they were not controlled by rings nor special interests; that they put forth their best efforts to serve the people. In 1853 Greene and Jackson townships were subdivided into three townships—Liberty, Jackson and Union, and in 1858 Samuel Woody and Elijah Johnson presented a petition of several citizens of Clinton county asking to be annexed to Howard county. Early in 1859 the formal proceedings were completed and Honey Creek township was added to the roll of Howard county townships, making, as it has since remained, a county of eleven townships.

#### SURVEYS.

The boundary line and all lands west of that line were surveyed in 1838. Because of the fact, that the seven mile strip was first surveyed and the lands placed on the market, the first settlements were in this part of the county. The remainder of the county was not surveyed until 1846-7. In this survey Benjamin Harden, of Johnson county, Indiana, ran out the range and township lines; that is, he blocked out the lands into districts six miles square. Van Ness, of Logansport, subdivided these squares into sections one mile square, and on each side of each section at the middle point a corner was established subdividing the section into quarter sections. The whole system of range lines, township lines and section lines is in accordance with directions from the general land office at Washington. These general instructions for the survey of public lands in Indiana required that all lands should be located with reference to two principal lines—one running east and west and called the Base Line, and the other running north and south and called the First Principal Meridian. The Base Line is in the

southern part of the state and the First Principal Meridian is slightly west of the middle of the state and is five miles west of Howard county. They intersect each other in the southern part of Orange county.

The township lines run east and west, parallel to the Base Line and are six miles apart. The first six mile strip north of the Base Line is in township 1, north; the next six mile strip is in township 2, north, and so on north. Kokomo is chiefly in township 24 north. Meridians or range lines run north and south, parallel with the First Principal Meridian and are six miles apart. The first six mile strip east of the First Principal Meridian is in range 1, east, and so on east. A congressional township is one of these six miles square tracts bounded on the east and west by range lines and on the north and south by township lines. A congressional township is a square territory containing thirty-six square miles or thirty-six sections. The sections in a township are numbered by beginning at the section in the northeast corner and numbering that 1, and the next one west 2, the next one west 3, and thus to the west line, the last one being 6, and then beginning at the west end of the next row south calling the first one 7, the next east 8 and thus until the east side is reached and then starting at the east end of the next row south and going west and thus back and forth until the south side is reached and the last section is number 36.

From the organization of the county until the survey of the lands in 1846-7, there had been a large incoming tide of settlers, and the county was rapidly settled; but no one was able to tell where his lines were and two or more settlers were liable to make improvements on the same tract of land, and it actually occurred that some failed to get their improvements on the right tract of land. There was more or less confusion in these first settlements.



## THE PRE-EMPTION LAW.

The pre-emption law was passed in congress, August 3, 1846. After its passage settlers rapidly endeavored to secure homes in accordance with its provision. The usual procedure in a claim was first to select a building site, then to cut down the saplings and make some brush heaps and then to build a shanty ten or twelve feet square of poles and cover it with bark or clapboards, and sleep in it at least one night.

It was his claim then and he could go back to move his family and no one else could "jump" his claim. Some people did quite a business in taking and selling claims. They would take as desirable a claim as they could and make some improvement, and then sell out to a new comer and then take another and make other improvements and sell again. A new comer often was willing to pay fifty dollars or one hundred dollars rather than go back into marshy level lands away from the rolling lands along the streams of water.

That the public lands might become the homes of actual settlers certain improvement and evidences of intention to settle upon them were required in addition to the purchase price before the issuance of patents by the government for the lands. The land offices for filing claims to these lands were at Indianapolis for all south of township 24; at Winamac for all north of township 23, and west of range line 5; at Ft. Wayne for all east of range line 5 and north of township 23.

The old state constitution before its revision in 1850, attempted to make the civil township identical with the congressional township. There were then three township trustees for each township instead of one as now.

By law the sixteenth section of land in each congressional township was set apart for school purposes and when sold the money was to go into the permanent school fund.

Reference has already been made to the fact that at the first election held in the county, the result was a tie, twelve Democrat and twelve Whig votes; that was in the presidential election of 1840, and was in the portion of the county west of the boundary line. In the fall of 1847 Dr. Corydon Richmond defeated Dr. J. H. Kern (father of John W. Kern), by seventeen votes. Adam Clark, Democrat, was elected county clerk in 1854 and again in 1858. In the election of 1858 the county was so evenly balanced that the result of the election of county auditor hinged on the admission of the vote of Honey Creek township. If the vote of Honey Creek township was counted in the vote of Howard county, James A. Wildman, Republican, was elected; if the vote of Honey Creek was not counted, Peter Hersleb, Democrat, was elected. Honey Creek was attached to Howard county and that gave Wildman, Republican, a majority. The political campaign of 1860 was the most intense of any in its history. The Democrats were disposed to concede a small majority in the county. Certain wagers were made by local Democrats that Morton, Republican, would have a majority not exceeding three hundred in the county over Hendricks, Democrat. Morton's majority of more than six hundred was a mighty surprise. The county since then has been overwhelmingly and uniformly Republican, except in two instances, a Democrat having been twice elected surveyor.

Since the county has taken fixed and permanent form it has been eleven miles wide and twenty-seven miles long and has an area of two hundred and ninety-five and one half square miles. Cass and Miami counties bound it on the north, Grant on the east, Tipton and Clinton on the south and Clinton and Carroll on the west.

The natural drainage of the county is good; Wild Cat flows through the entire county from east to west; on the south side Kokomo creek and Little Wild Cat creek and Honey creek flow into

Wild Cat and thus drain or afford outlets for drains for the south part of the county; On the north side Lilly creek, Pipe creek and Deer creek drain or afford outlets for drains for that part of the county.

---

### PIONEER LIFE IN HOWARD COUNTY.

Pioneer life as it existed in Howard county in the forties has long since completely ceased to exist. Circumstances and conditions which produced and called it forth have passed away, and it is difficult now to convey an intelligible idea of it.

Conditions have so changed in the past sixty years that we are practically living in another world.

The pioneers of that early time in our county history were mostly persons of limited worldly possessions, who were looking for opportunities to secure homes for themselves and their families. Many of them were young people, or fathers and mothers with families of young people for whom they wished to give a start in life by getting possession of land while it was cheap in price.

Having heard of excellent lands out in the Indian country that were either on the market or soon would be, and that by going and taking a claim, making certain improvements and paying almost a nominal price each would come into the ownership of forty acres, eighty acres, or one hundred and sixty acres of land that he could improve into a good farm home in a few years. Leaving wife to look after things while he was gone to hunt a new home, the home-seeker went out, sometimes alone and on foot, sometimes on horseback and sometimes two or more would go together, providing themselves with wagon and team and a regular camping outfit. After selecting the site of the future home and taking the necessary

steps to secure it, he returned for his family, blazing the trees on his way back, to guide him in his moving.

## PATHS OF EARLY DAYS.

There were no traveled highways then. There were a few Indian traces, or paths, leading to the principal points on the outside of the Reserve. These led to Noblesville on the south, to Frankfort on the southwest, to Burlington and Delphi on the west, to Logansport on the northwest, and Peru on the north; to Marion and Wabash and other points on the northeast. Many of the early settlers on the south side came from Hamilton and Boone counties by way of the Noblesville trace. The settler, with his wagon and team, more frequently an ox team, must of necessity cut out his own wagon road and so made slow progress. He carried a limited housekeeping outfit, a stock of provisions, enough to last until the family could be settled in the new home and he could return for a fresh supply.

This new home was a "cabin" in the clearing. The timber was cut away on the building site so that there would be no danger from trees blowing down or falling on the cabin. The cabin was built of round logs, not dressed, cut from the trees round about the future home. The ends of the logs were notched and saddled so that they would fit upon each other at the house corners; chunks were placed in the spaces or cracks between the logs and then daubed with mud, the mud being pressed into place and smoothed down with the bare hand, the finished job showing the finger prints. The floors were laid on sleepers made out of round logs hewn off on one side with a broad-axe, and were of puncheons, or thick slabs split from ash, oak, hickory or elm logs and dressed off with a broad-axe. They had no ceilings, but lofts instead, supported by

round poles for joists. The roofs were covered with clapboards held in place with weight poles kept up by "knees."

#### CABIN FURNISHINGS.

The chimney had pounded earth jambs and packed mud hearths, and sticks and clay upper part. It is said that one of the last things of their evening vigil before retiring was to go out and inspect the chimney to see that it was not on fire. The fireplaces of those old-time chimneys were capacious affairs and held quite a pile of wood. In the evening, after the chores were done, the family sat about the blazing, crackling fire of logs and smaller pieces of wood in these huge fireplaces and enjoyed to the full the brightness, the warmth and the cheerfulness of the open fire in their one-room house. These open fireplaces were not only the heating plant, but also the cooking range of the home. The patient wife and mother, with her scant store of cooking utensils, cooked the meals of the family on the hearth with live coals shoveled from the fireplace. The blazing fires also furnished much of the light of the house, making a light far superior to the tallow candle. The door or doors were in keeping with the rest of the house—made of thin slabs, hewn smooth and hung with wooden hinges and fastened with a wooden latch. A string was fastened to the latch and was hung on the outside by passing the end through a small hole above the latch, so that the end would be suspended on the outside. At night, when all were in, the string would be pulled in and no one on the outside could lift the latch, and thus the door was locked to outsiders. When the latch string hung out neighbors deemed it a useless formality to ring the door bell, but pulled the string, lifted the latch and walked in. Hence the origin of the hospitable exclamation, "My latch string hangs out."



They drew the water from wells with a windlass, a sweep or a pole with a natural hook to it. A sweep was a pole mounted in the fork of an upright pole set in the ground, with a bucket fastened to one end of the mounted pole by a rope long enough to let the bucket to the water when that end of the mounted pole was drawn down; the outer end of the pole, being heavier, helped to lift the bucket of water.

#### CLEARING THE LAND.

Having erected his cabin and a rude stable the pioneer at once set about clearing the land for a garden and a patch of corn. This was done by cutting the smaller trees and the bushes and piling them about the larger trees and burning them, thus killing the larger trees at once and destroying the shade. Breaking the ground was done with a jumping shovel, a shovel-plow, with a short, thick beam and an upright cutter extending to the point of the shovel. The ground was full of green roots, and it took strength and patience to do what at best was a poor job of breaking. The corn was planted by hand, covered with a hoe and cultivated by hand with a single shovel plow and the hoe—mostly with the latter. Later clearings were made by first deadening the timber, that is, girdling the trees and allowing them to stand two or three years or longer for the timber to die and dry out so that it would burn better in the heaps. When it was ready to clear much of the timber would be cut down and burned, chopped or sawed into suitable lengths for rolling, and at an appointed day there would be a log-rolling, to which all the neighbors would be invited. The men would come, bringing their neat handspikes, well seasoned and strong. A yoke of oxen was nearly always present to assist in getting heavy logs into place. Most logs, however, were rolled or carried by the men with their spikes, and many feats of strength in lifting were shown.



The men always worked with a will and logs were rapidly piled in heaps. After the logs were piled the man and his boys, sometimes the girls, piled the trash and smaller logs on the heaps and burned them. Stooping and picking trash all day long and burning log heaps in smoking clearings deserve to have a place in the class of the hardest and most disagreeable of all work. The early fields had many standing dead trees and these continued to fall, generally in the crop season, for several years, and always were very much in the way. All rows were the proverbial "stumpy row to hoe." The hoe was the indispensable agricultural tool—a heavy, clumsy tool, not suited to make the boy on the farm enthusiastic in his calling.

#### AGRICULTURAL IMPLEMENTS.

The other cultivating tool was a heavy single shovel plow, sometimes known as the "bull-tongue," which required three trips to the row to plow out the weeds between the rows. Planting was done by crossing off the field one way with this single shovel plow into furrows the width of corn rows and then making furrows crossing these with the same plow, followed by a person dropping the corn into the crosses; dropping the corn was often done by a woman, as being light work, and the corn was covered by men and boys with hoes, generally three persons did the covering. Thus the planting force was one man to lay off the ground into rows, one person to drop the corn, and three with hoes to cover. Corn was the first crop grown; soon, however, wheat growing was attempted. This was done by a person carrying a part of a sack of wheat across the shoulders and sowing it broadcast with the hand as he walked. He was followed, if in the corn, with a man with his single shovel plow, pulling down the weeds (the weeds grew luxuriantly in the new ground) and partially plowing under the wheat; if on ground

that had been broken for wheat, with an A harrow. Because of the fertility of the fresh new soil this method of farming produced good crops.

The harvesting of the wheat was done with reap hooks by the men and women, for the women often helped in the wheat harvest. With one hand they seized a handful of grain, and with the other they cut it off with the reap hook. Each bound his or her sheaves. This was a slow, laborious mode of harvesting. The coming of the grain cradle a few years later was hailed as a great advance. When one man cut the grain and threw it into swaths, ready for another man to gather up and bind that was thought up-to-date farming. The threshing was done either with a flail or by spreading on a threshing floor and tramping with horses until the kernels were loosened from the chaff. The flail was a short pole or spike, with a shorter pole or spike fastened to the end of it with a stout wither or thong, and required an expert to use it without danger to the user's head, for in the overhead swing of the flail the suspended end, which was intended to hit the grain with its full length, was liable to make a head-on collision with the user's head.

After the separation of the straw from the wheat and chaff by forking, the wheat and chaff were run through a fanning mill and the chaff blown out. It was all hand work from start to finish—slow, tedious and laborious, and allowed the growing of limited crops only.

#### CORN.

Corn was the staple crop of the early settlers. It was the food crop of their stock and largely for themselves. Corn-bread, mush and milk were their principal articles of diet.

Mills for the grinding of the grain were not plentiful nor convenient. There were a few "corn crackers," home-made affairs,

manufactured from boulders by flattening and roughing the surface and fixed to turn one face on the other. This mill crushed the corn as it passed between the faces of the boulders, the upper one revolving on the lower. Nathan C. Beals, who lived not far northeast of Oakford in very early times, had one.

Mills operated by water power were the main reliance of the early settlers, both for grinding grain and sawing lumber.

The clothing of that time was also largely of home manufacture. The farmer grew flax, which he pulled and rotted and scutched. The good housewife spun the tow on her wheel and often wove it herself. The linen garments were possibly a little rough and coarse, but were soon bleached into snowy whiteness. The farmer also had a flock of sheep and grew the wool that was converted into home-made woolen goods. The wool was scoured and picked at home, the men and boys helping on rainy days. Ofttimes there were wool pickings, to which the neighbor women were invited. These were social occasions and were real red-letter days in the social life of the community. After the wool was picked it was taken to a woolen mill and made into rolls, and then brought back home to be spun into yarn. The yarn was dyed or colored, and some of it was woven into cloth for the clothing of the men and women and the boys and girls of the home, and the other part was twisted into yarn for stockings and socks for all, and then would begin a season of knitting. The women would rise up early in the morning to knit and would sit up late at night for the same purpose. Woolsey-linsey dresses and jeans coats and pants were the fashionable clothing of the time. Not only was the cloth for the clothing home-made, but the various garments were home-made and hand-made also, for there were no homes into which a sewing machine had come. All the sewing was done by hand.

## THE WOMEN HELPED.

The wives and mothers and daughters, too, of the pioneer period, were very industrious, for in addition to the various kinds of work already referred to which they did, they also attended to the household cares, the rearing of the families, the milking of the cows and a great number of other things, as they presented themselves. They were brave, uncomplaining burden bearers, who cheerfully and well did their full share in transforming the wilderness into a country of pleasant homes. We shall do well if we always pay loving tribute to their memory.

Reference has already been made to the effect that the first settlers sought homes on the rolling lands along the watercourses. These lands were soon taken, and the later comers had to go back into the level lands for their homes. These lands being level and covered with fallen timber held the water so that it did not flow away readily, and the country was thus rendered swampy and wet for much of the year.

## SEARCHING FOR A BUILDING SITE.

The settler, after looking about and finding a knoll sufficiently dry for building purposes, would locate. He had a double work to do in clearing his land and in making surface drains or ditches to carry off the water. There were certain natural channels, which, when the logs and other obstructions were removed, and were deepened and straightened, served as fair drains. At first open channels were thrown out in the fields to permit the water to flow away. These were so much in the way that the farmers cut ditch timbers out of the oak trees, then in the way, and placed them in these drains after deepening them, covering the stringers or side

pieces with slabs or cross headers, and then filling in with dirt, thus making good underground drains. The benefit was so marked that the farmers rushed the construction of wooden drains, cutting the channels or ditches themselves and having the boys to saw the ditch timbers with the old plain-toothed saws without drags. There never was a man who remembered the time he spent as a boy in sawing ditch timber except with the utmost aversion.

These swampy, wet lands when drained were by far the richest and most productive lands. The soil was black and deep, and when underdrained dried off quickly and yielded immense crops. After a few years the timber ditches began to decay and it was necessary to replace them with new ones. Meanwhile a good tile clay had been found in many places and tile mills and kilns were turning out red tile in large numbers. Farmers, therefore, turned their attention to putting in permanent drains of red tile. Tile drainage has been continued since by putting in regular drainage systems, using large sized tiles, until now the wet lands of Howard county are no longer wet lands. Because large areas have needed a common drainage and many farms have needed the same drainage system, the county has constructed many excellent public drains and drainage systems.

#### PUBLIC DRAINS.

The first public drains were large open ditches passing in a meandering way through farms and rendering not a little land waste, the ditch channels growing up each year with bushes and weeds, and requiring frequent cleaning out. Many of these have since had one or more rows of large sized tiles laid in them and covered up so that farming operations are now carried on over them. There are no lands in the county so low and wet that they

cannot be drained. The county may be said to be without wet waste land.

The pioneers of the county had vast forests to contend with. Almost every acre had one or more large yellow poplar trees upon it. Much of the land had many large black walnut trees; there were many fine gray ash trees and almost numberless large oak trees of the different varieties, while the common kinds of beech, sugar, elm, sycamore, lynn and other kinds were so plentiful it was a problem how to get them out of the way. In the very early pioneer days there were no saw-mills and no market whatever for even the choicest of the timber. Large poplar, walnut, ash and oak trees were made into rails that a few years later could have been sold for many dollars. Where the early farmer wanted a field he deadened the large walnuts and poplars to destroy their shade, and allowed them to waste away, to blow down and then to be burned or worked into rails. The other timber was cut down and rolled into heaps and burned.

In this, our time of growing scarcity of timber, the acts of the pioneer settlers seem to have been wanton waste. They wanted clear fields rather than timber. A few years later, with the coming of the railroads and the building of steam saw-mills, quite a traffic in lumber sprang up. An immense amount of walnut, poplar and ash lumber was shipped to Cincinnati and other points. Saw-mill men and others bought of the owners of woodland where the timber had not yet been disturbed either for a lump sum all their poplar and walnut timber good enough for the saw, or else bought the trees singly, paying as high as five dollars for a good, straight, sound, yellow poplar thirty inches in diameter and tall enough for four twelve-foot sticks or logs. Some choice walnuts sold for eight dollars. Farmers derived quite a revenue from this source, and it was a time just previous to the Civil war when money was very scarce



and hard to get. Later timber sold for higher prices. It is doubtful if at any time the sale of timber in Howard county ever met a more needed want than in the few years preceding and the early years of the Civil war period.

#### EARLY ROADS.

The early roads of the county were made by felling the trees along the line of the proposed highway, cutting off so much of the tree as remained in the roadway, rolling or dragging it to the roadside; so that the new road was full of stumps and it required a careful and skillful driver to miss the stumps; ruts and roots could not be avoided. Swamps had to be bridged. This was done by cutting logs of various sizes, long enough for a single track, and placing them crosswise of the roadway and side by side the width of the swamp and throwing some dirt upon them to fill up the uneven surface. This dirt soon wore away and there remained the corduroy road. How rough and jolty it was to ride over this kind of a road in a farm wagon with no spring seat is not in the power of language to tell.

The pioneers did not, however, have as much use for roads as the modern inhabitants. They did much of their traveling on foot, a great deal on horseback, and not so much with wagons. It was no unusual thing for men to make long journeys on foot. Men who had moved to the vicinity of Kokomo from near Noblesville frequently visited the people of their former home, walking both ways; going one day and returning another. The usual mode of going about in the settlement, either to the village, to the country church or to the neighbor, near or far, was to walk, mostly in paths through the woods.

## TRAVELING ON HORSEBACK.

The farmer usually went to mill on horseback with his grist in a sack swung across the horse's back. The preacher went from one preaching appointment to another on horseback; the attorneys and the judges went to the various places of holding court on horseback and the physicians answered the call of the sick in the same manner, with his saddle bags swung across the horse's back, before or behind him. The wagon was used to carry heavy loads and was frequently drawn by a yoke of oxen. All the methods of getting about were slow and tedious. An ordinary trip in those days required two days—one going and one coming. If done in one day it was far into the night when finished.

## EDUCATION.

The pioneers did not neglect the education of their children. They provided as best they could log school-houses with rude slab seats and scant school supplies. The early schools were subscription schools and had a three-months' term in the year. The text-books were the elementary spelling books, readers and Talbot's arithmetic. The master taught his system of writing. The only classes were the spelling and reading classes. Each worked alone in arithmetic and writing. When out of copy the master set a new one. When one stalled in arithmetic, he or she went to the master for help. The old-time schoolhouse had no blackboard and the lesson could not be illustrated by blackboard exercises. In fact, there were no arithmetic lessons assigned; each worked on as fast as he could toward the back of the book.

Those pioneer schools produced many excellent spellers. The school terms were short and the range of studies limited to orthog-

raphy, reading, writing and arithmetic, yet they produced wide-awake, intelligent men and women.

A spelling school was held in the evening about once a week, at which nearly everybody in the district would be present and engage in the spelling contests. Sometimes a neighboring school would be present and there would be quite a rivalry as to which could excel in correct spelling. The contests took various forms, but the real test was as to who could spell the most words without misspelling one. In most cases those present were divided by two persons selected to "choose up," who alternated with each other in selecting from those present the ones they wanted on their side, until all were chosen; then each captain would take his company to the opposite side of the house, and standing in line, endeavor to spell the other side down first. The teacher or other person would pronounce the first word to one side, starting with the captain, and the second word to the captain of the other side, alternating sides and going down the line to the end, or foot, and beginning again at the captain or head. Whoever missed a word took his seat and did not spell again until the contest was finished. Whichever side kept a speller on the floor longest won.

At first the pioneers had not church houses, but religious services were held in the homes of the settlers. Preaching service was conducted by a traveling evangelist who happened along that way and stopped a while to hold meetings. There were also ministers among these early settlers, who combined the work of founding a home in the new country with that of preaching, working during the week and preaching on Sunday. Several religious denominations sent workers into these new settlements, so that they were soon supplied with religious services.

## WILD GAME.

The woods all about the homes of the early settlers abounded in wild game, deer, wild turkeys, raccoons and squirrels, and it is said that it was no unusual thing for the church-going people to carry a rifle along for "emergencies."

The life of the pioneer was one of privation and endurance. Bravely and uncomplainingly, even cheerfully, they bore it. They helped each other in the time of need without the thought of pay or reward. Open-handed hospitality was on every side. The hardships of their pioneer life seemed to have united them in a common sympathy. They lived a broader, more sympathetic life than their present successors. They visited with each other freely and shared their meals and had all things more in common than now. There was less of envy and jealousy, less disposition to take an undue advantage of their neighbors than in more recent times. For the most part they were strong and hardy and the adverse conditions of their lives only seemed to make them broader and more sympathetic. Ofttimes in their struggles they would have their money all spent and would be compelled to go out into the older settled communities to earn some money with which to buy the few necessities of their lives. Much of the trading with the local merchants was done with produce of various kinds. Money was exceedingly scarce. The trade was of necessity largely barter. The local merchants traded for hides, wild meat, wild honey and anything they could take to other markets and dispose of. Oxen were largely used as the teams for work, because they were cheaper in price, could be fed and kept more cheaply than horses and were supposed to move around in the mud more easily. The pioneers had no fruit except as they hauled it into the new settlements. However, they early planted orchards in the new country, and within a very few years

there was a plentiful supply of apples and an abundance of smaller fruits.

#### MAIL IN PIONEER DAYS.

Those pioneers did not have free rural delivery of the mail at their cabin doors each day. Indeed, we are told that in those days they had no stamps nor envelopes, and that it cost eighteen and three-quarters cents to carry a letter across the state, and it was paid for when received. There were then no daily papers containing all the news of the world up to the hour of going to press, with all the latest market quotations and, delivered to all parts of the settlement on the day of publication. Instead there was a small weekly folio published at New London about 1848 and called "The Pioneer." From it we learn that the pioneers of the early times discussed the public questions of their day quite as vigorously as public questions are now discussed. The pro-slavery men and the Free-Soilers were more vigorous and forcible in enforcing their beliefs than the average modern citizen. The temperance and the anti-temperance forces did not lie down together in peace.

#### CHILLS AND FEVER.

Among the many disagreeable features of the new country, and by no means the least, was the chills and fever. From mid-summer to early winter ague was well-nigh universal, hardly a person escaped being a victim. There were also many cases of bilious, malarial, intermittent and other kinds of fever resulting from the swampy country and stagnant water all about. Quinine was more staple than flour. The doctors were more than busy administering quinine, Dover's powders and calomel. In many families there were hardly enough well ones to nurse the sick ones. It is said that it was as much a custom among the people then to get ready for the

ague and fever as it is for us now to prepare for winter. Happily, with the draining of the country this condition has been eradicated.

With the passing of the conditions which produced the hardships and disagreeable features of the pioneer life, the life itself passed away in its entirety. Would that the virtues could have remained without its disadvantages and unpleasant parts.

### HOWARD COUNTY SCHOOLS.

The early schools of Howard county were very poorly equipped in every way. The houses were the primitive log cabins furnished with slab benches with no backs for seats; for writing desks there was a broad board or boards fastened to the wall sloping sufficiently high for the larger pupils to write upon; the smaller ones did not need it. The room was lighted by a narrow window or windows extending along the entire side. The house was warmed by wood fires in the huge fireplace, the teacher and the larger pupils cutting the wood morning and noons.

Those were the days of subscription schools, that is, the parents or guardians subscribed a given number of pupils at so much each for the school term, usually three months. The teacher ordinarily boarded with different families in the district, spending a week in one family, the next week in another, and so on until he had passed around, the board was a part of his compensation. The teachers as a class were not very learned. Many of them had not secured any training in grammar, and physiology was an unknown science to all except the most learned doctors. Arithmetic and spelling were their specialties. In arithmetic they were especially strong in single and double rules of three, and yet had they been asked to define proportion it would have been a dead language to them. Decimal fractions and square and cube roots were beyond them. As was the custom of the times they were past masters in



the use of the rod or rather the long, green switches cut from the neighboring trees. A big switch was an indispensable part of their equipment for the day's work. They were workers and required the pupils to work.

The contrast between the school system or want of system of that time, and the present is very great. It must not be supposed that this difference is wholly due to the different conditions of a new and older settlement. These did affect it to a greater or lesser extent, but the school system in Indiana prior to the taking effect of the revised constitution in 1851 was quite different from that in force since.

#### THE OLD SYSTEM.

Under the old system there were three trustees instead of one as now, yet the three had less power and latitude in the management of the schools than the one has now.

The civil township was required to conform as nearly as possible to the congressional for the reason that the general government had given to the state the sixteenth section in each congressional township for school purposes and the township trustees were given the control and management of the school lands and the funds arising from the sale of the school lands. The school lands could be offered for sale, when five residents of the congressional township petitioned the trustees or trustee to order an election by the voters of the township on the question of offering them for sale, a township local option proposition. If a majority voted to sell they were accordingly offered for sale. Within ten years these lands had been sold realizing about twenty thousand dollars. This sum constituted the permanent common school fund of the early years; the interest on this fund was available for tuition purposes and any tuition fund in excess of this was raised by a direct tuition tax. Under the old

system when the trustees thought it necessary to build a new school-house, it was necessary to refer the question to the voters of the township, and if the majority voted to build, the house was built; but if the majority voted no, the house was not built. It did not matter how great was the need there was no appeal. It frequently happened under this rule that communities without a school house and with a large number of children of school age refused to vote for the building of the much needed school house. In illustration of this, this incident is vouched for by a reputable citizen. In a township in another county there was no school house. The better and more progressive citizens asked for the building of a school house, and the matter was referred to the voters of the township. A citizen with several children of school age, but none of whom had ever been in school and whose proportionate part of the cost of the house would probably have not exceeded seventy-five cents, worked all day at the polls against the building of the house and he was joined by a sufficiently large number of like spirits to defeat the school house proposition.

#### FREE PUBLIC SCHOOL SYSTEM.

In the matter of erecting school houses, the referendum feature was a failure and in the revised state constitution it was left out. The progressive citizenship favored a free public school system, but were opposed by a large conservative element who contented that the expenses would be burdensome and to make it practical would necessitate putting too much power in the hands of the school officers.

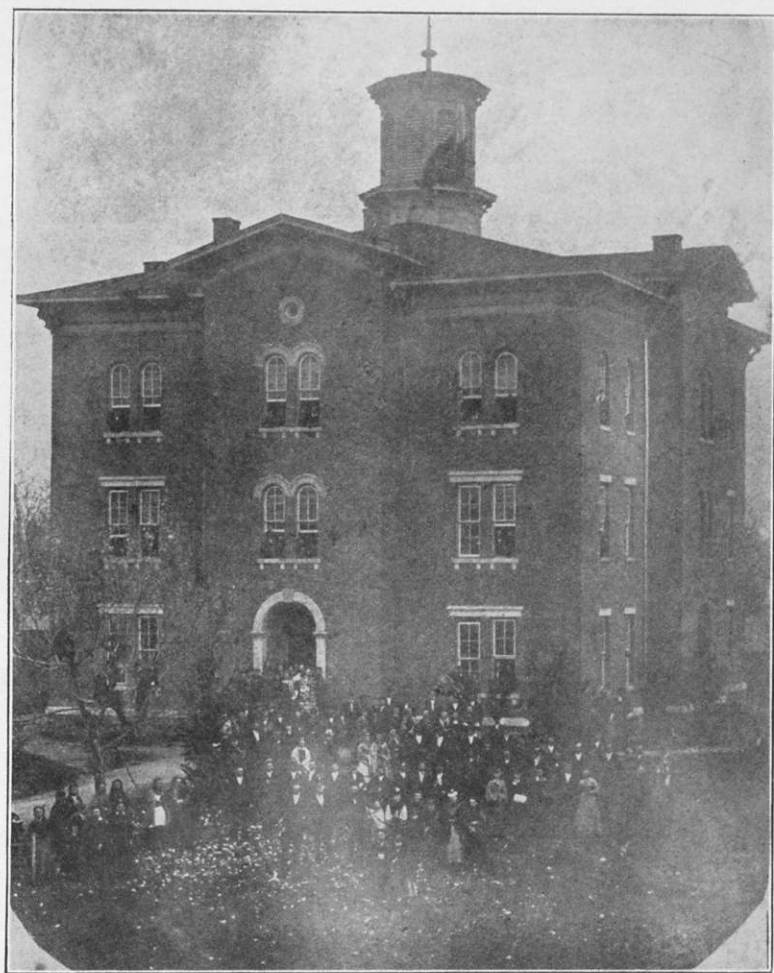
The general government had given the people an example of generosity in caring for the education of the people and that policy was adopted by the state; and the constitutional convention of 1850-1 which adopted our present constitution declared "knowledge

and learning generally diffused throughout a community being essential to the preservation of a free government, it shall be the duty of the general assembly to encourage, by all suitable means, moral, intellectual, scientific and agricultural improvement, and to provide, by law, for a general and uniform system of common schools, wherein tuition shall be without charge, and equally open to all."

That there should be a common school fund, from which there should be an interest income sufficiently large to almost insure free tuition they followed the foregoing declaration with this provision:

"The common school fund shall consist of the congressional township fund and the lands belonging thereto; the surplus revenue fund; the saline fund, and the lands belonging thereto; the bank tax fund, and the fund arising from the one hundred and fourteenth section of the charter of the State Bank of Indiana; the fund to be derived from the sale of county seminaries and the moneys and property heretofore held for such seminaries; from the fines assessed for breeches of the penal laws of the state; and from all forfeitures which may accrue; all lands and other estate which shall escheat to the state for want of heirs or kindred entitled to the inheritance; all lands that have been, or may hereafter be, granted to the state where no special purpose is expressed in the grant, and the proceeds of the sales thereof, including the proceeds of the sales of the swamp lands granted to the state of Indiana by the act of congress of the twenty-eighth of September, one thousand eight hundred and fifty, after deducting the expense of selecting and draining the same; taxes on the property of corporations that may be assessed by the general assembly for common school purposes."

To perpetuate these provisions for free tuition they provided further that, "The principal of the common school fund shall remain a perpetual fund, which may be increased, but never shall be diminished, and the income thereof shall be inviolably appropriated to



OLD NORTH COLLEGE.



the support of common schools, and to no other purpose whatever."

In 1865 the legislature divided the common school fund as provided for above, taking out the congressional township school land and the money derived from the sale of such lands, making these the "congressional township school fund" and providing that "it shall never be diminished in amount, the income of which, together with the taxes mentioned and specified in the first section of this act, the money and income derived from licenses for the sale of intoxicating liquors, and unclaimed fees, as provided by law, shall be denominated the "School revenue for tuition, the whole of which is hereby appropriated, and shall be applied exclusively to furnishing tuition to the common schools of the state, without any deduction for the expense of collection or disbursement."

The first section of the act referred to is "There shall be annually assessed and collected as state and county revenues are assessed and collected, sixteen cents on each one hundred dollars of taxable property, real and personal in the state, and fifty cents on each taxable poll, for the purpose of supporting a general system of common schools."

In 1875 the fees from licenses to retail intoxicating liquors were changed from this fund to the common school fund of the county where paid.

The setting apart of one section of land in each congressional township had its beginning in May, 1785, when congress passed an act for the survey of the Northwest Territory in which it was provided that this territory be divided into tracts six miles square called congressional townships, thus making them the units for future organization; the townships were directed to be subdivided into tracts one mile square to be called sections.



## A SETTLED GOVERNMENT.

In 1787 congress passed the famous ordinance for the organizing of a settled government for the Northwest Territory; the most important act of the last continental congress. It was in fact "the most notable law ever enacted by representatives of the American people," and to insure its perpetual enforcement, it was not left as a mere act of congress, which could be repealed at a subsequent session, but its six main provisions were made articles of solemn compact between the inhabitants of the territory, present and to come, and the people of the thirteen states.

No man was to be restricted of his liberty excepting as a punishment for crime; life, property and religious freedom were protected by just and equal laws. A clause, which several western states have copied in their constitutions, declared that "Religion, morality and knowledge being necessary to good government schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged." To this end one section in every township was set apart for the support of common schools, and two entire townships for the establishment of a university in this territory.

County supervision has come to be what it is today through a long process of development. As early as 1818 the general assembly made it the duty of the Governor to appoint for each county a seminary trustee. The duty of this officer was almost entirely connected with the financial problem. In 1824 the law provided for the election of three trustees in each township and placed the examining of teachers and granting licenses among their duties. The examiners were school men and the meager test covered the subjects of reading, writing and arithmetic.

In 1830 the law provided for a school commissioner for each county who looked after the funds of the local school corporation and was elected for three years.

In 1833 in addition to the school commissioner for the county and the three trustees for the township, provision was made for the election of three sub-trustees in each district to hold office for one year. These district trustees examined applicants and employed teachers. The law of 1836 made it legal for any householder to employ a teacher in case of failure to elect district trustees. In 1837 in addition to all these officers and with only a slight modification of their duties, the circuit court was authorized to appoint annually three examiners whose duty it should be "to certify the branches of learning each applicant was qualified to teach."

During the next ten years no change was made in the county system.

#### CHANGES IN SCHOOL SYSTEM.

In 1847 Caleb Mills, state superintendent of schools, urged as an essential of the schools, efficient supervision, both state and county. The school law of 1849 abolished the office of county school commissioner, retained the three school examiners in each county and the three township trustees, but substituted one sub-trustee in each district for the three formerly. This law also prescribed the minimum length of the school term and made the length of term of all the schools in the township uniform.

The constitution of 1851 left the county school machinery practically as the law of 1849 left it, and so it remained until the sixties. The law of 1861 substituted one county examiner for the three that formerly held office in each county. The examiners under this was appointed by the county commissioners and held office for three years. This law made all examinations public and prohibited the granting of licenses upon private examinations. Prior to this an applicant for license could have an examination whenever he happened to find one of the examiners at home. This law further pro-

vided that the examiner of each county shall be the medium of communication between the state superintendent of public instruction and the subordinate school officers and schools; they shall also visit the schools of their respective counties as often as they may deem it necessary during each term, for the purpose of increasing their usefulness and elevating as far as practicable to the standard of the best; advising and securing as far as practicable uniformity in their organization and management and their conformity to the law and the regulations and instructions of the state board of education and of the state superintendent of public instruction, and shall encourage teachers' institutes and associations. The law of 1861 was a great advance in the educational system of our state.

In 1873 the office of county superintendent was created and that of examiner was abolished. This law provided that the "township trustees of the several townships shall meet at the office of the county auditor of their respective counties on the first Monday of June, 1873, and biennially thereafter and appoint a county superintendent." This act did not create a new office, it merely changed the name of an old one and enlarged its powers.

The term was for two years and carried with it no educational or professional requirement for eligibility.

In 1899 the term was extended to four years and required the holding of a thirty months' teacher's license, or a life or professional license to be eligible.

Since 1873 supervision of the country schools has meant something in Indiana. The teachers are required to pass rigid examinations for which the questions are provided by the state board of education and the examining and grading of the manuscripts may be done by the county superintendent or the state superintendent. The county superintendent makes systematic supervision a large part of his work. The rural schools have been graded; the standard of effi-

ciency has been constantly raised; and through the good work of the county superintendent the children are receiving advantages equal to those of the towns and cities.

The common school teacher is a teacher in the district schools of the county or in grades in the towns and cities.

#### LICENSE TO TEACH.

The standard of granting licenses to teach in the common schools has been advanced from orthography, reading, writing and arithmetic with a private examination to a rigid public examination in orthography, reading, writing, arithmetic, geography, English grammar, physiology, United States history, scientific temperance and the literature and science of education.

A general average of eighty-five per cent. and not falling below seventy-five per cent. in any one of the ten items nor in success entitles the applicant to a twelve months' license. A general average of ninety per cent. and not falling below eighty-five per cent. in any one of the ten items nor in success entitles the applicant to twenty-four months' license. A general average of ninety-five per cent. and not falling below ninety per cent. in any one of the ten items nor in success entitles the applicant to thirty-six months' license.

Until 1852 there was much local confusion in school matters due to the fact that the law contemplated that the civil township should conform to the congressional township which in fact it did not. The civil township really conformed to local conditions and the convenience of the people so that for the most part a congressional township was divided among two or more civil townships and thus the school lands or the money derived from the sale of such lands would rightfully belong to more than one township. With the reorganization under the new constitution this difficulty was

done away with. The three township trustees were continued until 1859 when one trustee was substituted for the three. By law he has charge of the school affairs of the township. His duty is to locate conveniently a sufficient number of schools for the education of the children therein; and builds or otherwise provides suitable houses, furniture, apparatus or other articles and educational appliances necessary for the thorough organization and efficient management of the schools. When a township has twenty-five common school graduates, he may establish and maintain in the center of the township a township graded high school to which all pupils sufficiently advanced must be admitted. If the township does not maintain a graded high school, the common school graduates are entitled to transfers at public expense to a high school in another corporation.

It is the duty of each township trustee and each city school trustee to furnish the necessary school books, so far as they have been adopted or may be adopted by the state, to all such poor and indigent children as may desire to attend the common schools.

As a protection to the township against excessive or ill advised expenditures of public money the legislature passed a law in that in each township there should be an advisory board of three members elected by the voters of the township to hold the office for two years. They are to meet annually on the first Tuesday in September to consider the various estimates of township expenditure as furnished by the trustee for the ensuing year which they may accept or reject in part or in whole. These meetings are public and are open to any tax payer who desires to be heard on any estimate or proposed tax levy.

#### STATE SUPERINTENDENT OF PUBLIC INSTRUCTION.

In 1843 the state treasurer was made superintendent of common schools ex-officio. The treasurer was chosen because his duties



were financial rather than educational; the preservation and management of the school fund being the chief requirement of the office. He was required to make annual reports to the general assembly, showing the condition and amount of funds and property devoted to education; the condition of colleges, academies, county seminaries; common schools, public and private; estimates and accounts of school expenditures and plans for the management and improvement of the common school fund and for the better organization of the common schools, but his chief duty was to look after the finances.

The new state constitution created the office of superintendent of public instruction by popular election. In 1852 the general assembly directed his election and fixed his salary at one thousand three hundred dollars. There were no educational or professional requirements for his eligibility. The people, however, have been careful and fortunate in electing men who were able and active in educational work.

The superintendent has charge of the system of public instruction, and a general superintendence of the business relating to the common schools of the state, and of the school funds and school revenues set apart and apportioned for their support. At the request of the school officials it is his duty to render, in writing, opinions touching all phases of administration or construction of the school law.

#### THE FIRST STATE ROAD.

The state board of education was first organized in 1852 and consisted of superintendent of public instruction, the governor, the secretary, treasurer and auditor of state. In 1855 the attorney general was added. In 1861 the board was changed to consist of the state superintendent of public instruction, the Governor, the president of the state university, the president of the state normal, and



the school superintendents of the three largest cities in the state. In 1875 the president of Purdue University was added. In 1899 three men to be appointed by the governor were added. These men must be prominent citizens, actively engaged in educational work, and one at least must be a county superintendent, and no one to be appointed from a county already represented on the board. E. E. Robey is at present (1908) a member of the board as a county superintendent.

The board is responsible for all examinations of teachers and makes all questions used in their examinations which are for the following grades of license:

One, primary license, one year, two years and three years; two, common school license, one year, two years and three years; three, high school license, one year, two years, three years and five years; four, professional, eight years; five, life state license.

In addition to making the questions, the board conducts the examination and grades the manuscripts of applicants for professional and life state licenses.

The board is also the state board of school book commissioners. As such it adopts text books for the common schools for periods of five years. When a contract has been made with a publisher the books are secured for the public by a requisition of the county superintendent for the number of books needed in his county, upon the state superintendent, who in turn, makes requisition upon the contractor for the number of books needed in the state. The county superintendent thus becomes the agent for the sale of the books and makes his reports to the various contractors.

The state board of education, in order to keep some uniform standard of efficiency in high schools has established certain requirements in the work which entitles high schools to commissions. These commissions carry with them exemption from examination for entrance to the freshman class in the higher institutions of learning.

Upon the recommendation of the state superintendent, members of the board inspect the work of the high schools and determine whether the requirements for commissions have been met.

The work of the board has resulted in a perceptible increase in the efficiency of the high schools; since all schools want the commission and when once obtained every effort is made by the school officers, teachers and patrons to retain it.

#### COUNTY BOARDS.

The county boards of education are composed of the county superintendent, the several township trustees and the heads of the boards of trustees of town and city schools. They are not officially charged with duties; the purpose appears to be that by meeting and discussing the various school interests they may be able to introduce better and more uniform methods in their several schools.

The teachers are required, by law, to attend a township institute in their township once each school month. The purpose being, by the addresses and discussions, to awaken greater interest among the teachers in their work, to impart new and improved methods in teaching.

The minimum length of the school term in any school corporation in a year shall be six months and the trustee is directed to levy sufficient tax to raise the money necessary to do so, provided he does not exceed the legal tax limit.

The law fixes the legal minimum wages that shall be paid teachers and any violation of this law subjects the violator to a heavy penalty.

The amount of money collected and distributed for tuition in Howard county for the year 1908 was:

Common school revenue, thirty thousand eight hundred and

thirteen dollars and fifty-three cents; congressional township revenue, one thousand three hundred and twenty-three dollars and forty cents; tuition from local taxation, forty-one thousand four hundred and eighty dollars and fifteen cents; received from liquor license, two thousand nine hundred dollars; received from dog fund, one thousand eight hundred and seventy-nine dollars and sixty-five cents; total, seventy-eight thousand three hundred and ninety-six dollars and seventy-three cents. The amount collected for the city of Kokomo, thirty-seven thousand five hundred and forty-three dollars and sixty-two cents; the amount for the county outside of the city of Kokomo, forty thousand eight hundred and fifty-three dollars and eleven cents. The amount of special school tax levied and collected in 1908 was forty-nine thousand three hundred and ten dollars and twenty-one cents; the amount collected for the city of Kokomo was twenty-two thousand six hundred and thirty-six dollars and thirty cents; the amount collected for the county outside of Kokomo was twenty-six thousand six hundred and seventy-three dollars and ninety-one cents. The whole amount of school money, tuition and special for Howard county for the year 1908 was one hundred and twenty-seven thousand, seven hundred and six dollars and ninety-four cents.

#### PRESENT DAY CONDITIONS.

In this county there are seventy-two brick school buildings and six frame buildings.

There are one hundred and seventy-two teachers of the various grades employed in Howard county, and the total number of children of school age in the county is eight thousand five hundred and twenty-five.

The past sixty years has witnessed such a wonderful material development and advance in Howard county that its magnitude is

almost beyond belief; and the educational advance is equally great if not greater. From the rude and scanty furnishings and almost chaotic want of system of the early schools, the change has been to large and commodious houses almost all built of brick, well heated and well lighted and equipped with the best of school furnishings. The organization from the state superintendent and state board of education down to the township and even the school district is so perfect that it constitutes a machine, the parts of which fit so well and work so harmoniously that they would delight a mechanical engineer.

An educator of today whenever he refers to our school system at once becomes enthusiastic. He declares that we have the finest school system in the world, that we have a school fund so large and so well managed that tuition in the common schools is practically free; that our schools are so well graded that by easy stages one passes on up through the high schools to the higher institutions of learning. The people, too, are proud of their schools. The people of our neighboring state, Michigan, point with justifiable pride to their great state university at Ann Arbor with its learned professors and its thousands of students attracted from all lands and they give it generous support. The people of Indiana are no less justified in their pride for their excellent school system. They get closer to the masses of the people. The people of Michigan have good common schools, but their specialty is their great university, which only the few can reach, while ours comes to the masses and prepares the many for the ordinary affairs of life. In this symphony of praise there comes a discordant note.

#### TOO WELL ORGANIZED.

It is suggested that the system is too well organized; that it has become a machine, where all are treated to the same process; that

material for this educational process is intelligent beings with very different mental equipments and that the purpose of an education is to lead out, develop and train the natural gifts and powers of the student; to stimulate him to independent thinking and research, and to avoid the mechanical mental processes.

Whether these suggestions are opportune it is not the province of the historian to say. In reviewing the school history of the past sixty years of our county, certain facts stand out prominently. Many students in the early schools with their two months' training became excellent spellers, good readers and penmen and acquired a practical knowledge of arithmetic that was surprising, and later the "old normal" in the late sixties and early seventies sent out from its school rooms men and women who stand out now living or in memory for their learning, and sound original thinking, men like John W. Kern, J. Fred Vaile, J. O. Henderson, Bronson Keeler, O. A. Somers, L. J. Kirkpatrick, A. B. Kirkpatrick, Professor W. A. Greeson, Professor John B. Johnson and scores of others of that date. To one looking over the personnel of those who have had their education in the schools of Howard county the period referred to seems to have been the golden age of school work in this county. The fact also is prominent that at that time there was less of the close organization than at the present time. The teacher of that time had much freedom and many of them had strong personalities which was impressed upon the pupils.

Whatever differences of opinion men may entertain of the merits or demerits of this close organization and the tendency to machine work in our schools all are heartily glad that so abundant means are provided for the education of the youth of our county.

The men of middle age watch the passing along of the school wagon with its load of happy noisy children going to or from school protected from the storm and mud or deep snow, and remember

again that he walked long distances to school often through rain storms and deep mud or else through the blizzard and biting cold and is glad that the children of today are not subjected to the like hardships.

---

### ROADS IN HOWARD COUNTY.

The Indians had no roads. Their highways were paths or "traces" through the forests, over which they traveled on foot or on their ponies. The white man, of necessity, must have roadways over which to travel with his wagon and team. His first roads were but temporary affairs. They built them the nearest ways and where they were the least difficult to construct. Farmers' lanes formed important links in them, but after the lands were surveyed and township, range and section lines were run out and established they began to locate the roads on these lines, and many of the former meandering roadways were abandoned. These for several years were dirt roads, or, more correctly speaking, mud roads, during most of the year. They were built by the supervisor, who "warned out" all the able-bodied men of his road district between the ages of twenty-one and fifty to work the roads each spring from two to four days for no remuneration save the public good. This service was never enthusiastic.

These roads were often impassable in places detours were made around such places by going out and over the adjacent farms. As the farms were ditched and public drains constructed the roadbeds became drier and the roads became good much sooner.

There were no gravel or macadam roads constructed in Howard county before 1867, so that for more than twenty years the people had to be content with dirt roads.



## HOWARD'S FIRST STATE ROAD.

The first state road located in the county was the Burlington and Marion state road from Burlington, in Carroll county, to Marion, in Grant county. The report on this road was made to the commissioners at their June term, 1845, by Thomas A. Long, one of the commissioners appointed by the legislature to do this work. The road as reported by them was one and one-half miles in Carroll county, twenty-nine and one-fourth miles in Richardville county and eleven miles in Grant county. This was a winding road, changing its course fourteen times in Carroll county and sixty-four times in crossing Richardville county. In passing through Kokomo it entered at the west end of Sycamore street and passed out at the east end of this street. There were two state roads reported at the September term of the commissioners' court: The Kokomo and Michigantown state road, by David Foster and George W. Snodgrass, commissioners. This road began at the southwest corner of the public square in Kokomo and ran south in Buckeye street to the bluffs of Wild Cat creek, thence southwesterly to the north bank of Wild Cat creek, crossing at the rapids, thence in a general southwesterly direction, zigzagging back and forth, finally reaching Michigantown. The other road was the Peru and Canton state road from Peru, in Miami county, to Canton (Tipton), in Tipton county. This road came into Kokomo from the northeast in the general direction of the Lanby gravel road until it intersected Union street; thence in Union street to the southeast corner of the Donation, thence south on the line of Union street to Home avenue, thence southeast on the line of Home avenue almost to Kokomo creek, thence easterly and southeasterly, through the Purdum, the Dyas and other farms, to the intersection of the line of the Albright gravel road. The Logansport state road was laid out

a little later. The outline map of this road from the Cass county line to Kokomo shows wet prairies, ponds and sloughs almost the entire way. The general direction of this road was from the northwest to Washington street in Kokomo, and Washington and Walnut streets afforded entrance to the town proper.

#### FIRST GRAVEL ROADS.

The first gravel roads in Howard county were toll roads. The traveler upon these roads must always go prepared to pay fare or toll, and at frequent intervals were toll-gates, or toll-houses, and the inevitable pole swung across the passage in front of the toll-house, ready to be pulled down in front of the luckless rider or driver who attempted to pass without first settling with the keeper. It did not matter how great the hurry, the urgency of the call or how fierce the storm, toll must be paid. It did not matter that it was a public highway, that had been cut out of the forests twenty years before by the supervisor and the men of the road district, and had been worked by them every year since, a gravel road company could occupy it to the exclusion of these very men who had made the road, and by doing additional work, compel every one traveling with horse and vehicle to pay a toll for the privilege of passing over it. The land owner whose lands had been appropriated was not respected in this operation.

The law permitting this seizure said, "The Board of County Commissioners of the several counties of the state are hereby authorized to give their consent to the appropriation and occupation of any such state or county road or other public highway over and upon which any company may locate any such road."

The law permitting the formation of gravel road companies was, "Any number of persons may form themselves into a corpora-

tion for the purpose of constructing or owning plank, macadamized, gravel, clay and dirt roads, by complying with the following requirements": Then followed the usual requirements of stock companies. Whenever they had subscriptions for stock to the amount of five hundred dollars per mile they were permitted to file their articles of incorporation in the recorder's office and to become known publicly as a corporation. It is true that the toll gravel roads were not very paying investments from a pecuniary standpoint, and were built largely by public spirited men whose main purpose was to have good roads for travel the entire year. The grievance of the other party was that the road, whose right of way he had given, and upon which he had spent much labor and which was his only or main outlet from his home, was wholly occupied by the company and he was compelled to pay, willing or unwilling, for the privilege of passing over it.

The Kokomo & New London gravel road was the first gravel road built in the county and was built under this law.

It was commenced in 1867 and was completed in 1870, being three years in the building; is ten miles long and cost twenty-seven thousand dollars. It connected the county seat, Kokomo, with the then metropolis of western Howard county, New London, and passed through Alto and the future West Middleton, and was the main thoroughfare to the southwest. The city of Kokomo paid two thousand dollars toward the building of this road and individuals gave thirteen thousand dollars to assist in its building. The leading citizens in forming the company to build and manage this road were Captain Barny Busby, Dr. E. W. Hinton, Isaac Ramsey, Jonathan Hansell, Josiah Beeson, Shadrach Stringer, Samuel Stratton, C. S. Wilson, Joseph Stratton, Hiram Newlin and Richmond Terrell, a splendid company of men. This was continued as a toll road until the growing sentiment for free roads caused the

legislature to enact a law permitting companies to sell their roads to the county.

#### OTHER GRAVEL ROADS.

The other gravel roads built by companies organized a little later under the same or similar laws were: The Kokomo and Greentown gravel road, reaching from Kokomo to Greentown, eight and two-thirds miles long and mostly on the south side of Wild Cat creek. This road was commenced in 1869 and finished in 1874, and cost twenty-three thousand, two hundred and eighteen dollars. Vaile avenue was the western end and a toll-gate stood where a brick business building now stands at the intersection of Union street. The leaders in the building of this road were Rawson Vaile, Noah Carter, J. W. Smith, William T. Mannering, Vespasian Goyer, Paul Miller, Clarke Boggs and N. J. Owings. This continued a toll road like the others until the growing free gravel road sentiment made it possible to sell out to the county, and it is now a free gravel road.

The Kokomo, Greentown and Jerome gravel road was organized in 1869 and was completed in 1871 at a cost of thirty-eight thousand dollars. It extends from Kokomo, running east on the north side of Wild Cat creek, through old Vermont, to Greentown, and thence to Jerome, a distance of twelve miles, and is a prominent eastern thoroughfare. The active friends of this road were David Smith, Andrew Patterson, C. C. Willetts, Rossiter Gray, Jacob Brunk, Barnhart Learner, D. S. Farley, John S. Trees, Jonathan Covalt, E. P. Gallion, W. M. Sims, J. R. Curlee and Milton Garrigus. This road is now a free gravel road, the toll system going with the others.

The Kokomo and Pete's Run gravel road was organized in 1869 and completed in 1871 at a cost of thirty-three thousand, fifty-

eight dollars. It is eleven miles in length and is popularly known as the Jefferson street pike, beginning at the west end of Jefferson street and running directly west. It is the principal thoroughfare for the west end of the county toward Burlington and Delphi. The active citizens in the building of this road were H. W. Smith, James McCool, Israel Brubaker, Michael Price, S. D. Hawkins, D. B. Hendrickson, Thomas M. Kirkpatrick and others. This, too, is now a free gravel road, after a prosperous series of years as a toll road.

The Wild Cat gravel road was commenced in 1869 and completed in 1871. This is popularly known as the West Sycamore street pike, and begins at the west end of Sycamore street and runs west along Wild Cat ten miles, costing twenty-two thousand dollars. The principal friends and managers of this gravel road were Judge N. R. Linsday, William B. Smith, N. P. Richmond, Isaac Hawk, Silas Grantham, S. E. Overholser and Thomas Dimmitt. This road parallels the Petes Run gravel road and at no point is it far from it. It is built over hills and through bottoms, making it both more expensive to build and to keep in repair, and has besides been unfortunate in having the collection of the assessments enjoined and then being reassessed. The legislature then repealed the law authorizing the collection of gravel road taxes, making a combination of adverse conditions its friends were not able to overcome, hence they abandoned it.

The Deer Creek gravel road was commenced in 1873 and completed in 1875, at a cost of fifteen thousand dollars. The road began at the north end of Smith street and extended north five miles to the Miami county line. The active workers in securing this gravel road were William Kirkpatrick, John Davis, J. M. Leeds, Jesse Swisher, William Mills, Jacob Early and John W. Lovin.

These were the only roads constructed under the company system. One of them reached the southwestern part of the county and did a good business; one reached the north line of the county and did a fair business; two paralleled each other closely both to the east and west and one of each pair did not pay.

PUBLIC ROAD SENTIMENT.

The sentiment that all roads should be public and free had grown rapidly and in 1877 the legislature passed a law for the construction of free gravel roads and providing for the payment for the same by assessing all lands lying within two miles of the road to be improved, according to the benefits to the several tracts to be assessed. The first roads to be built under this law were the Albright, commenced in 1878 and finished in 1879. This road begins at the south end of Home avenue and runs somewhat east of south, and terminates one mile east of Fairfield and cost fourteen thousand, seven hundred fifty-one dollars. Also the Rickett's road, which also begins at the south end of Home avenue and runs south on the range line to the south line of the county. This road was commenced in 1878 and finished in 1879 and cost thirteen thousand, nine hundred forty-six dollars and twenty-two cents. These two roads furnished excellent outlets for the south side of this county and the north side of Tipton county.

In 1882 the Peter Trouby gravel road was built at a cost of twenty-eight thousand, eight hundred sixty dollars and twenty cents. This road begins at the east end of Jefferson street and runs in a northeasterly direction four miles, thence east four miles, ending at the west line of Liberty township. This road has since been extended east by the construction of the Gorsett gravel road, ending at the Darby road, one-half mile west of the Grant county line, and thus provides a splendid outlet for the entire northeastern part of the county.



In the same year, 1882, the J. L. Smith and Harrison Harlan gravel roads were built to the northwest, both starting together at the intersection of North and Smith streets and running together west and north three-fourths of a mile, and then separating, the Harlan following a general northwesterly direction along the line of the Logansport state road nearly four miles, ending at its intersection with the Smith road and was built at a cost of nineteen thousand, nine hundred ninety dollars and twenty-seven cents. The Smith road ran west after its separation two and one-half miles, thence north one and one-half miles, thence westerly to the vicinity of Poplar Grove, and is fourteen miles in length. This road provides the entire northwest part of the county with a good outlet to Kokomo.

In 1887 the P. N. Schrader gravel road, commonly known as "the pumpkin vine" because of its many directions, was built. This road provided the entire southeast part of the county a good outlet over a free gravel road to Kokomo.

These various gravel roads having a common center at Kokomo and radiating to all parts of the county, formed an admirable gravel road system for the entire county, affording citizens of all parts of the county an excellent highway at all seasons of the year direct to the county seat. This system of roads cost more than three hundred thousand dollars to construct and the annual repair cost is a very large sum.

Since 1887 many gravel roads have been constructed, most of them shorter roads, using the roads heretofore described as a trunk system and building branches and cross roads from one line to another.

#### THE TOTAL MILEAGE.

In round numbers the mileage of all kinds of roads in Howard county is six hundred. Prior to the year 1908 there had been fifty-

nine gravel roads built with a total length of two hundred and seventy miles and at an aggregate cost of six hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

Under the 1905 gravel road law as amended in 1907 and known as the three mile limit law there have been fifty-four roads sold for construction with a mileage of one hundred and fifteen. Thirty other roads are petitioned for and awaiting sale. When the roads now sold for construction are completed and paid for the citizens will have invested about nine hundred thousand dollars in gravel road construction, and should the others now petitioned for be built, three-fourths or more of the road mileage of Howard county will be macadam or gravel and more than one million dollars will have been invested in their construction.

The annual cost of repair is now fifteen thousand dollars. When the increased mileage now started is completed, the repair cost, if increased in like ratio, will amount to nearly twenty-five thousand dollars annually.

Were all the gravel roads in Howard county, constructed or ordered to be constructed, placed in a continuous line, end to end, and a railroad track laid on the line it would require a train running thirty miles an hour, fifteen hours to traverse it.

#### HOW THE ROADS WERE BUILT.

These roads have been constructed by varying methods. The first as we have seen was by companies and the stock system and the accompanying toll-gate. These became free roads only after they were purchased and paid for by an assessment on all lands lying within two miles of the road. The second step was under the law of 1877, which provided that the commissioners shall begin proceedings for the improvement upon the filing of a petition signed

by five or more persons whose lands would be assessed for the improvement asked for, and the filing of a bond to secure the costs should the proposed improvement fail. Under this law the costs of the improvement were paid out of an assessment made upon the lands lying within two miles of the improved highway; each tract of land was to be assessed according to its relative benefit.

The next change provided that townships by a popular vote could order certain roads improved and the costs of the improvement were to be paid from the sale of a twenty year series of bonds against the assessed valuation of the township.

Then the system was changed to the assessment of the lands lying within two miles of the road proposed to be improved. This law provided that a majority of the resident land owners along the line and abutting the highway and also owners of a majority of the acres of land abutting should be represented on the petition before starting proceedings.

The next change was to the present law with its amendment that on the presentation of a petition signed by fifty resident land owners and voters of a township for the improvement of a highway less than three miles in length and which has a United States mail route upon it, either in whole or in part, or connects two gravel roads already constructed, it shall be the duty of the county commissioners to take the necessary steps for the improvement and the cost of the improvement shall be paid from the sale of bonds at not less than par, the bonds to be issued in a ten year series, bearing four and one-half per cent. interest; to be a lien upon the property of the township and not to exceed four per cent. of the assessed valuation of the township. Under this law there has been a flood tide of petitions for roads; the residents along any unimproved road insisting that inasmuch as they were compelled to help pay for the roads of others that they were justly entitled to have the others help them to pay for their improvement.

## WANT LAW REPEALED.

There is already a clamor for the repeal of this law because it is alleged that in the eager haste of each section to build its roads, a great debt is created and consequent high taxes for a great number of years. On the other hand, it is justly urged that those communities which are now taxed to pay for road for other communities should have the benefit of a similar taxation to pay for the improvement of their roads.

The constant change in the methods of paying for public improvements is the bane of our times. A fixed and equitable system of paying for public improvements should be adopted and rigidly adhered to. Those who have paid for their gravel roads by special assessments and then by a township tax are compelled to help pay for a distant improvement are wronged. Since so large a per cent. of the highway is now being improved under this law taxing all the people of the township, it seems the more equitable to continue it in force.

---

PUBLIC BUILDINGS.

The first court house was built in 1845 of hewn logs with a clapboard roof. It was twenty-four feet square and two stories high. It was so large and commodious that the lower story was divided by board partitions into offices and business rooms. One of the first-floor rooms was occupied by the clerk, another was used by H. B. Havens as a saddlery and harness shop and another by G. W. Poisal as a tailor shop. Dr. Richmond also used this as a doctor's office.

The upper room was fitted up for a court room, having a rough board rostrum for the judge and a large table for the use of the clerk and the attorneys, and was fitted up with slab seats for the audience. This was the main auditorium of the town, and here were held all public meetings for several years.

By the terms of the donation which Foster made for locating the county seat at Kokomo, Foster was to build this court house, By some change not satisfactorily explained Foster was released from this part of the contract. The commissioners, however, appointed Foster and Dennis McCormack to let the job and by inference to superintend the construction. The contract was let to Rufus L. Blowers for twenty-eight dollars, and because of his failure to complete it within the time specified he was penalized two dollars, receiving twenty-six dollars for the job.

#### WOULDN'T PAY OFFICE RENT.

That the men who had offices in the court house were not very prompt in paying rent appears in this: At the June term, 1851, the following order was issued by the board of commissioners: "Ordered, that the sheriff be required to notify G. W. Poisal, C. and O. Richmond, N. R. Lindsay and C. D. Murray to meet the board at its next meeting to settle with said board for office rent of the court house."

The county was growing and the spirit of enterprise and progress which has ever characterized the people of Kokomo and Howard county determined the commissioners that the first court house was now out of date, and they accordingly appointed C. D. Murray, Corydon Richmond and Austin C. Sheets a committee on plans and specifications, letting contract and superintending the construction of buildings for county offices.

They adopted plans for two brick buildings eighteen feet wide, thirty-six feet long and one story high, one building to be located near the east entrance and on the north side of the path crossing the public square from the east to the west, and the other building near the west entrance and on the north side of the same path. The contract for the construction of these buildings was let to D. C. Hurley, Jesse Arnold and Henry C. Stewart for nine hundred and seventy-five dollars. The east building was occupied by the auditor and treasurer and the clerk and recorder occupied the west building.

#### THE PREACHER AND THE CORNERSTONE.

In the erection of these buildings it was determined that there should be a cornerstone laying with all proper ceremony. Uncle Billy Albright, as he was popularly known, was a stonemason and a popular local Methodist preacher of that day—a tall man, of strong build and powerful voice. Albright had spent two days dressing a cornerstone which had been taken from the Morrow (now Deffenbaugh) stone quarry. His work was almost done to his satisfaction; there was a small place he thought he could improve. In chipping it with his hammer the entire stone fell to pieces. In utter disgust he threw down his hammer, straightened himself up and after a moment's contemplation he realized that he could not do justice to his feelings, and cried out at the top of his voice, "Where is Mike Craver? Run here, everybody. Here is something to be done. Where is Mike Craver?" Mike Craver was a pioneer plasterer and was not hampered by religious scruples.

The work went forward satisfactorily after this mishap so far as the records disclose, and the buildings were completed and for sixteen years they served the county. At the March term, 1868, the county commissioners—Jerome Brown, Henry L. Moreland and



Samuel Stratton, ordered that bids for building a court house be advertised for, to be considered at a special session on the 15th of April following. They reserved the right to reject any or all bids, if they were not satisfactory. All the bids were rejected and the board determined to hire the work done themselves. They accordingly appointed one of their number, Samuel E. Stratton, superintendent, with full power to contract for work and materials as seemed best for the interests of the county. J. W. Coffman had charge of the work as a mechanic and builder. The whole work was under the general supervision of the architect, Mr. Rumbaugh, and the final approval was to be by the board.

#### EXTENSIVE IMPROVEMENTS.

It was commenced in 1868 and finished in 1870, and cost ninety-seven thousand, five hundred and forty-eight dollars and forty cents. The natural surface of the public square was low and level. This was filled and sloped as we now see it, walks were built of large cut stones, a heavy iron fence with stone foundation was built around the entire square, outside of the fence was a paved way, and outside of the paved way was stretched a heavy iron chain supported by iron posts. This served as a public hitchrack for a number of years. The cost of these improvements with the cost of the town clock added increased the total cost of the court house to approximately one hundred and ten thousand dollars.

As originally constructed, the heating plant was in the basement, the several county offices—clerk, auditor, treasurer, recorder and sheriff, were on the first floor, and the entire second floor was given over to the court room, the judge's room and the jury room. The court room served also as the public auditorium for many years.

The acoustic properties of the room were bad, the reverberation was such that accurate hearing was difficult. After trying the experiment of stretching a network of overhead wires without satisfactory results it was determined to remodel the second floor by reducing the size of the court room and partitioning the other part into a larger jury room and offices for the county assessor, county superintendent of schools and the county surveyor.

From a description of this court house, written shortly after its completion we learn: "It is a fine and substantial brick, two stories in height, besides the basement. It is eighty-two by eighty-six feet in size and one hundred and twenty-six feet high to the top of the tower. The court room in the second story is fifty-one by eighty-two feet in size and thirty-eight and one-half feet in height from floor to ceiling. There are four rooms or offices on the first floor, each twenty-two by twenty-four feet and sixteen feet high, used respectively by the clerk, recorder, auditor and treasurer. The sheriff's office, also on the first floor, is twelve by fourteen feet and sixteen feet story, and on the upper floor there are four jury rooms, all the same size as the sheriff's. Outside, the first story is sixteen feet, the second twenty-three feet and the mansard fourteen feet, and under the whole building is a basement in which is a furnace, with which at a cost of five thousand dollars for construction, the whole building is heated with steam. It presents an imposing appearance, is covered with slate, has good vaults and compares very favorably with any other building in the state of the kind and cost."

#### COURT HOUSE AND SURROUNDINGS.

Twenty-five years ago it was written: "The building is substantially built of good, durable material, and has within it fireproof vaults for the different offices in which to store the records and val-

uables belonging to the county. The square upon which it is built was filled up several feet so that it appears to stand on high ground; there is surrounding the grounds an iron fence with stone foundations and a heavy guard chain entirely around outside the sidewalk, which is well paved. All the walks leading to the building are paved with large cut stones. It is a fine appearing house, and when the forest trees that have been planted around it are sufficiently grown it will be a beautiful place. The dream of a quarter of a century ago has more than been realized. The thrifty well grown trees and the sloping greensward make a beautiful place indeed. The unsightly, unsanitary hitching rack of that elder day, which seemed a permanent fixture, has given place to brick pavements, wide cement walks and flowing fountains. That high iron fence, which seemed as durable as time, is gone, and the weary sit upon the stone foundations and sigh for wooden seats. The hitch rack had many friends who were reluctant to see it go. It was a very convenient hitching place and free of cost. One dark night the chain mysteriously disappeared and did not come back. At the time it was thought that the advocates of the city beautiful and clean knew where it was.

#### JAILS.

The first jail, as has already been stated, was built of hewn timbers one foot square throughout walls, floor and ceiling; the logs notched down close and boarded on the outside, with double doors of two-inch oak plank, with a home-made lock and key, the key alone weighing four pounds. It is said that no prisoner broke out of this jail. It was located at the southwest corner of Washington and High streets. For twenty years the log jail did its work faithfully. In 1865 the board let a contract to J. W. Coffman to build a brick and stone jail for \$9,600. The front part

was the residence part for the jailer's family and was of brick. The prison part was back of that and attached to it in such a way that the entrance to the jail was through the hallway of the dwelling. The prison part was built of stone and the cells of iron. There was a dug well on the inside where the prisoners could get water. This well, on one occasion, furnished the means of escape for several prisoners by digging from the well out under the wall of the prison. This jail and its location soon became unsatisfactory. It was urged that the sewerage was not good, though it was not far to a good outlet and that could have been overcome with no great expense. The prison itself seems to have been defective and was not a secure place to detain prisoners. In 1880, fifteen years after the building of this new jail, the commissioners planned to secure a new location for the building of a larger and safer jail where the sanitary conditions would be better for the inmates. A site was secured on the east side of South Main street, on the bluff of Wild Cat creek, large enough to furnish ample room for all necessary buildings and sightly surroundings, with the grounds well kept. The elevation of the grounds made it an easy matter to dump the sewage into Wildcat. In 1882 a contract was let to McCormack & Sweeney for the building of a new jail at a cost of thirty-four thousand, three hundred and fourteen dollars. The building is one hundred and three feet five inches long; the front or residence part is thirty-seven feet nine inches wide and the jail part is forty-three feet seven inches wide; it is two stories and a basement in height. In the basement is placed the steam heating plant and two or three dungeons, the walls of which are made with a single stone. The cells are built out from the walls of the jail, so that communication from without is cut off. Accommodations are provided for different classes of prisoners and a hospital room for the sick. The grounds and the surroundings are well kept and our jail has an inviting appearance.

## COUNTY INFIRMARY.

It was not so very many years after the permanent settling and organization of the county, the county commissioners, impressed with the growing need of a permanent home for the helpless and unfortunate poor who must be cared for at public expense, purchased the Thomas Galewood farm, lying then two and one-half miles south of town. Willis Blanche, Harvey Brown and B. W. Gifford purchased this farm in 1857, containing one hundred and sixty-five acres for forty-five hundred dollars. This was a fine, dry, rolling farm, with Kokomo creek running diagonally through it from the southeast to the northwest. The Indianapolis & Peru Railroad ran through it from south to north, cutting off twenty-six and one-fourth acres on the west side. Because this small tract was across the railroad the commissioners sold it at once to Willis Blanche for seven hundred fifteen dollars and eighty-four cents. There were no buildings of consequence on the farm; a log hut for a home and a log stable for a barn afforded poor accommodations for a colony of frail men and women. The land was largely covered with the native forests and fields and grain and grassy meadows seemed a long way off. After three years of possession it was decided to sell the farm and buy one closer to town. On December 5, 1860, the commissioners, William Woods, John Knight and Robert Coate, sold the farm to Nelson Purdum for three thousand, four hundred seventy-two dollars and seventy-five cents. January 8, 1861, the same commissioners bought eighty acres off the west side of the farm of James H. McCool for two thousand, eight hundred dollars. In April, 1861, they contracted with James Linville to build a house on the farm for three hundred sixty-nine dollars. In 1865 the commissioners contracted with William Chadwick to build another and larger house on the farm; the building was to be two stories high, twenty by

thirty-six feet in size, with a wing running back sixteen by thirty-six feet, and one story high, for one thousand, eight hundred dollars. This house was designed for the use of the superintendent of the farm and as a home for the county's poor. It is said that it would be difficult to construct a house more illy adapted for the purpose than this one, and in a few years, the board becoming satisfied of its bad arrangement and unhealthfulness, determined to build a better one. They resolved to build a house that would not only be a comfortable home for the poor of the county, but one that would reflect credit upon the county as well. They carefully investigated plans and specifications until fully satisfied before approving. May 24, 1881, bids were received for constructing the building. David O. Freeman submitted the lowest bid and was awarded the contract at fourteen thousand, nine hundred sixty-five dollars and eighty-five cents, to furnish all the material and complete the building. Peter A. Sassaman was associated with him in carrying out this contract.

G. W. Bunting, of Indianapolis, was the architect and superintended the erection of the building. They erected a very creditable building; an enduring structure of good material, well built and arranged for comfort, health and convenience. The building is two stories and a basement in height, is one hundred and thirty-six feet in length, and forty-five feet in width, and is divided into forty-five rooms. There are several rooms in the basement, in one of which is the outfit for heating the whole building by steam. The farm has a good barn and other farm buildings. It has also a good tile drainage and is a first-class farm, well located. The Kokomo & Pete's Run gravel road runs through it. The infirmary building fronts directly on the gravel road and is one-half mile west of the city limits.

P. H. Y. Haynes is the present superintendent and is paid eight hundred dollars a year salary, out of which he must pay for



his help in operating the farm. The products sold from the farm belong to the county. The farm contains one hundred fifty-three and twenty-six hundredths acres.

#### ORPHAN'S HOME.

During the years prior to the founding of the Orphan's Home Association, orphan children, half orphan children and other children who had been rendered homeless by the varying misfortunes of life and who were without friends or kindred to provide homes for them, were taken to the county poor asylum to be cared for. Here they were housed, clothed and fed, but the associations were not suitable to develop good men and women. It was impossible for the superintendent to care for their training and teaching and their environment was not such as to stimulate them to make the best of their lives. In 1868 the ladies comprising the Ladies' Union Missionary Society, recognizing these facts, and prompted by the idea of a home especially for orphan children, arranged for and gave a festival October 22, 1868, in aid of this project, and realized one hundred and twenty-five dollars in money, which was placed in the First National Bank of Kokomo and set apart as the beginning of a fund for this purpose; to this was added other sums from time to time, raised in like manner. In January, 1873, a number of these ladies who had actively interested themselves in this work formed and incorporated an association called the Orphans' Home Association of Howard county. Under the direction of this organization they continued to hold festivals and systematically solicited donations to their funds, so that at the close of the year 1873 they had in bank, money and notes approximating one thousand, two hundred dollars. The object of the association, as announced, was "to provide ways and means by which the orphan and destitute

children of the county might be provided a comfortable home, clothing and food, and also to bring them as far as possible under the influence of good moral training, leading them into habits of industry, and extending to them the hygienic benefits of cleanliness and fresh air, and finally procuring homes for them in good families. Having amassed a fund sufficient to start with, and feeling confident in the beneficial influence of an illustration of their work by opening a home, they, on the first day of November, 1873, rented a house and secured the services of Mrs. Mary A. Street as matron, who took charge with five children under her care. Miss Anna Street acted as teacher. Having put the purpose of the association into actual operation, they increased their efforts to add to its material resources. The home was first opened in the west part of the city, but its increasing demands made it necessary to secure greater accommodations, and a larger house was rented on North Union street, where they remained until the opening of their new home in the autumn of 1875. During the year 1874 it became very manifest that other and more extensive accommodations were needed, as demands were constantly coming to the managers for the admission of children. The management had also extended the sphere of their design and had now, in view of the removal of all small children from the county infirmary, regarding it as an unsuitable place for rearing the young, and also to remove from them in after years the odium of having been paupers. The association was limited in means, but determined to procure, if possible, a site on which to erect a building that would be ample in its capacity for years to come. In canvassing for this a committee called on Peter B. Hersleb, a bachelor living alone on his farm just south of the city. Mr. Hersleb was a Dane, said to have been of princely lineage, who came to this country because of a love of freedom, with possibly a bit of adventure. Mr. Hersleb was a cultured gentleman with all

the finer instincts of his nature well developed. The fact that he lived alone in his bachelor quarters impressed many that he was somewhat eccentric. In this he was misjudged, as all testified who came into close personal touch with him. In his den, as he termed it, he was ever affable and polite. He it was who in the campaign of 1858 came so near defeating James A. Wildman for county auditor that it required the vote of Honey Creek township to do it. Such was the man the committee called upon to ask to sell them a building site at the southeast corner of the intersection of Markland avenue and Home avenue, that being the northwest corner of his land. He refused to sell to them. Instead he gave them an acre at that place and also three hundred dollars in money, and afterward gave them five hundred dollars more, and many other donations that were of value to the association. Mr. Hersleb's generosity stimulated them to greater efforts in getting the means to build with. They applied to the county commissioners for assistance. The commissioners replied that they had no power under the law to make such donations. However, after much importuning, they gave them fifteen dollars, and at the next term twenty dollars, and at the next thirty-five dollars. Believing that benefit would accrue to the home if recognized as a county institution, they procured the services of Judge James O'Brien in the preparation of a bill to be laid before the legislature, which was passed and became a law in 1875, by which they were authorized to take orphan and destitute children into their home and receive for each child twenty-five cents per day toward its support. Another source of income was a dining hall at the county fair, which netted them two hundred dollars, P. E. Hoss giving them twenty-five dollars for one meal. The Young Ladies' Sigourney Band gave one hundred and seventy-five dollars, several citizens gave one hundred dollars each, and smaller donations, down to five cents for the children's treasury, were made.

Elicum Boggs, deceased, bequeathed eight hundred dollars, six hundred of which was in city bonds. After securing these funds the association felt justified in commencing their building. They let the contract to J. W. Coffman in the spring of 1875 and during the summer it was built and completed so that it was occupied October, 1875. The building was a two-story and basement building, forty by forty-six feet, containing thirteen rooms, all heated by a furnace in the basement; the total cost of the building, including the heating plant, was four thousand dollars. In 1876 the home had been in practical operation for three years, and this statement was given out: "During the three years this home has been in operation sixty-seven homeless children have found refuge there; several have been returned to their friends; thirty-three have had homes furnished them in the country, and but three have died. The expense of the home for the past year, 1876, was eight hundred ninety dollars and fifty-nine cents." In 1883 this statement was made regarding the work of the home: "The number of children now in the home is twenty, and the average number is about twenty. In the ten years of the home there have been over two hundred children provided with good homes, in good families, thus securing them from want, neglect, ignorance and possible pauperism and degradation. We are justified in saying that through the efforts put forth by this organization it was that the present law was enacted by which young children are taken from the county poor houses and cared for properly until good homes can be secured for them, thus saving many from becoming not only paupers, but criminals. With the twenty-five cents a day given by the county for each child they are enabled to keep the home in active operation, paying the matron from twenty to twenty-five dollars per month and a governess twelve dollars per month and the cook two dollars per week. People from the country often bring them donations of eatables, and

sometimes articles of clothing. The most active and continuous workers in promoting the interests of the home from the beginning are Mrs. Emma E. Dixon, Mrs. Eva Davis, Mrs. Jane Turner, Mrs. Dr. Dayhuff, Mrs. Hendry, Mrs. Mariah Leach, Mrs. Lizzie Hasket, Mrs. L. B. Nixon, Mrs. J. Coffman, Mrs. L. W. Leeds and Electa Lindley. Others that have come into the association since and have been active workers are Mrs. A. F. Armstrong, Mrs. Sarah Davis, Mrs. N. R. Lindsay, Mrs. T. C. Philips, Mrs. Dosh, Mrs. Dr. Mavity, Mrs. Kraus, Mrs. Rosenthal and Mrs. Dr. I. C. Johnson. In June, 1902, after twenty-seven years' service, bids were submitted for the repair and improvement of the building. Both bids were above the appropriation for the purpose, and the commissioners of necessity rejected them. The next year, 1903, the county council appropriated six thousand dollars for a new orphans' home building. In September of that year two bids were received; the lower one proposed to build complete the home, with a heating plant, for seven thousand, eight hundred forty-seven dollars, and without a heating plant for seven thousand, four hundred ninety-seven dollars. This, being in excess of the appropriation, was rejected. At the October term of that year there is the following record of release and consent: "Whereas, No suitable buildings or equipment have been prepared or arranged for the orphans' home of Howard county, Indiana, and it is impossible for the Howard County Orphans' Home Association, for said reasons, to continue its work at the present time, and said association is, because of the lack of proper buildings and equipment and the failure of the county to provide the same, compelled to give up its work of caring for the orphans at present, the said association does therefore hereby consent to the temporary abandonment of the orphans' home in Howard county, Indiana, and does, under the present circumstances, release to the board of commissioners the children now

in the orphans' home of Howard county, Indiana. Signed by the president, Mary S. Armstrong." Whereupon the board ordered the children in the home transferred to the White Institute at Treaty, near Wabash, in Wabash county. Since that date Howard county has had no orphans' home and the orphan and homeless children of our county have been kept at the White Institute at a charge of thirty cents a day for each one. The present expense to Howard county and her citizens is about thirteen hundred dollars annually. From the best information at hand it appears that the White Institute is a corporation founded and managed under the control of the Friends church for the care, training and instruction of orphan and homeless children.

---

### MILITARY HISTORY.

Sixty-one years had passed after the close of the war of Independence when Howard county was organized, in 1844, and if any soldier of that war ever made his home within this county, he must have been an old man. It is not definitely known that any soldier of the Revolution lived within our county. Tradition says that an aged man named Barngrover, who died many years ago and whose solitary grave is in a pasture field just off the New London gravel road about two miles southwest of Kokomo, was a hero of that war.

The soldiers of the War of 1812 had a fair representation among the early settlers of our county. From the "Military History of Howard County," compiled by John W. Barnes, we gather that the following were once residents of our county. Their names and lives, as preserved in that sketch, are: Alexander G. Forgey settled in Howard county in 1842 and made a home just east of Poplar Grove, and died in 1855, aged seventy-five years.



Israel Ferree was born in Virginia about the year 1775. He was stationed for a considerable part of his enlistment at Norfolk, Virginia. He came to this county in 1850 and died in 1863.

Daniel Heaton was born in Pennsylvania August 27, 1780. While quite young he formed a strong liking for frontier life, and leaving his home, came westward and purchased land in what is now Preble county, Ohio. The town of Eaton, the county seat of this county, was afterward named in his honor. Here he married Mary Furgeson, who bore him eleven children. It is probable that he resided at this place at the time of his enlistment. Whether he was captain of the company to which he belonged at its first organization is not known, but that he held this office afterward, and by successive promotions was finally made colonel, is well known. He was stationed part of the time at Fort Wayne and participated in the battle of Tippecanoe with General Harrison, to whom he was ever afterward greatly attached. After the war his desire for Western life brought him to Indiana, where he engaged in hunting, trapping beaver, and trading with the Indians. In this pursuit he made several trips as far westward as Iowa on horseback. In 1841 he came to Howard county and settled on Little Wild Cat creek, in Harrison township, a short distance east of West Middleton. He was a member of the Masonic Order and at the time of his death he was the oldest member in the county, having belonged to the order nearly fifty years. The sword that he carried during the War of 1812 he presented to the Masonic lodge in New London. He was an ardent and enthusiastic Union man during the war of the Rebellion and a great admirer of Lincoln. He firmly believed that the administration would be finally triumphant but did not live to see it. The Tribune of April 23, 1861, has this to say of him, "Colonel Heaton, the veteran soldier, eighty-one years old, was in town on Sunday. He wants to volunteer. He says a man had better say his prayers,

make his will and prepare to go to hell, than to speak against our country in his presence."

Colonel Heaton was small of stature, energetic and active, positive in his nature and a great reader, especially of the current literature of the day. He was married three times and had sixteen children, eight boys and eight girls. On the 14th day of January, 1863, when the rebellion had grown to gigantic proportions, when the fierce winds of winter were howling without, and all nature seemed agitated, his life went out with the storm. His funeral rites were said by the Rev. Mr. Keeler, a Baptist minister, and his remains were laid forever at rest in the little burial ground at Alto.

Samuel Giles was born in Lexington, Kentucky, in 1792. He enlisted in his native state and served under Colonel Richard M. Johnson. He was in the battles of Tippecanoe and the Thames. He came to this county in 1861 and died in 1866.

Robert Morrison, also a soldier of 1812, died in 1868.

#### WERE AT FORT ERIE.

John Miller was born in Westmoreland county, Pennsylvania, October 13, 1794. His father died when he was seventeen years old. He, in company with his brother, George Miller, moved to Warren county, Ohio, near Lebanon, about the year 1811, which was then almost a wilderness. In 1814 he helped to organize a company, which was being recruited at the military post at Dayton, Ohio. This company was sent to Fort Meigs, on the Maumee. He was sent from this place to Hamilton, Ohio, as a recruiting officer. His regiment was transferred to the command of General Brown, and took part in the battle of Lundy's Lane. He also helped to defend Fort Erie against the repeated attempts of the British to take it. The siege lasted more than six weeks, when the British

were repulsed. After the war Miller resided for a time in Darke county, near Fort Jefferson, famous in history as the place where St. Clair retreated after his defeat by the Indians at Fort Recovery. In 1826 he married Sarah Broderick. In 1850 he moved to Howard county, three-quarters of a mile north of Jerome, where he resided until his death, which occurred February 22, 1873. His wife survived him five years. The ashes of both repose in the Jerome cemetery, on the banks of Wild Cat, where rest many of the pioneers of Howard county. John Miller was an industrious citizen, identified with all of the early improvements of the county and a firm friend of education and free schools.

William Apperson was born in Culpeper county, Virginia, April 12, 1786. When the war was declared he was living in Washington county, Virginia. He enlisted in Captain Byer's company and served his full term. He came to Clinton county, Indiana, in 1843, moved to Howard county in September, 1844, and settled on and pre-empted the farm owned by the late Elbert S. Apperson, but now owned by the Apperson brothers of automobile fame. He died December 20, 1874.

Henry Jackson, born in Fleming county, Kentucky, in 1795, enlisted in his native state in 1813, serving nine months and participating in the battle of the Thames. In 1843 he emigrated to this county and settled in Clay township. He died in 1853 and was buried in the Barnett graveyard, about eight miles west of Kokomo.

Peter Gray was born in Kentucky in 1780 or 1781. He enlisted in his native state and served five years in the regular army. He was under General Jacob Brown and helped to gain the brilliant victory at Lundy's Lane. In this fierce contest he received three wounds, one in the forehead and one in the breast by saber strokes, and one a musket ball, in the leg, which he bore with him to the grave. He died and was buried at Russiaville in 1879.

John Rivers was born in North Carolina September 5, 1795. He enlisted when only seventeen years of age as a soldier from that state. He came to this county about the year 1841 and settled two miles southwest of Russiaville.

Captain John Harrison, a veteran of the War of 1812, should not be omitted from this list. He came to Howard county in 1839 and settled in the southeastern part of Ervin township, building a two-room log house, using one room as a store and various public uses, as a polling place, the commissioners' meeting place, etc. At the election in 1844, held at his house, he was elected as the first sheriff of Richardville county.

#### THE WAR WITH MEXICO.

In 1846, when war was declared with Mexico, this county was very sparsely settled and there was no attempt at raising a company here. The sentiment of patriotism was very strong among the settlers, though they were scattered and few and were waging a mighty contest in making homes in the forests and swamps of this new country. While no opportunity presented itself for them to volunteer for this war at home, they sought and found it in another county. Captain Milroy was organizing Company A of the First Indiana Regiment at Delphi, in Carroll county, and the following persons from our county went there to join it: Barnabas Busby, Boston Orb, Andrew J. Forgey, Thomas Kennedy, William Gearhart, George Ervin, John Gearhart, Edward Irvin, Andrew Gerhart, James A. Forgey, Samuel Gerhart, Isaac Landrum, Daniel Isley, Thomas Landrum, William Harrison, Samuel Yager, John Barngrover, Samuel Gay, James Barngrover, William Judkins and Anthony Emley. Andrew Park also went from this county, but probably not in the same company.

Of the Mexican war veterans who have since made their homes in this county may be mentioned B. F. Voiles, Pollard J. Brown, John Myers, James A. Haggard, John Twinum, Charles M. Fifer, Irvin Tennell, Job Tennell, Michael Craner, Williams S. Reeves, Norvell Fleming, Paul Miller, Daniel Barnhart, Calvin Carter, James L. Bailey, William Vandembark, David Randall and Philip McDade. Of those who went to the war from this county only six served their entire term of enlistment and these were Barnabas Busby, Andrew J. Forgey, John and James Barngrover, William Judkins and Anthony Emley. The others either died or were discharged. John Gearhart was the first man from this county to die, as he also was the first of his regiment.

It may well be noticed that these soldiers and veterans of the War of 1812 and of the war with Mexico were not men actuated solely by a spirit of adventure, or men who were out of settled employment, or men who had not found their place in the work of life and who went into the army because they had nothing else to do. They were the useful citizens of their several communities, and when their work was accomplished in overcoming the nation's foes and peace was restored these men returned to their homes and took up again their civic duties and began again their useful lives of peace. The citizen soldiery of our county is its great safeguard.

#### HOWARD IN THE CIVIL WAR.

The great war of our country and perhaps the greatest of all countries and of all times was the war of the Rebellion, sometimes called the war of the States, but more correctly the war for the Preservation of the Union. Those who began the war did it for the purpose of establishing a separate government, another nation whose chief cornerstone was to be negro slavery throughout its

entire territory. The North and the South were to be separate but neighboring nations, with no natural boundaries; only state lines should separate them.

Governments thus located, because of their different administrations and conflicting interests and close proximity, would be subject to much friction, leading to wars and national hatreds. In the course of events the time would come when the East or the West would conclude, because of some local interest, that it would be best for them to form a separate government, and thus disintegration having commenced it would go on until this mighty Republic would be separated into many jarring republics or kingdoms. Thus the war of the Rebellion was a war by the Government of the United States for its own preservation.

Negro slavery was the principal cause of the war. In the Southern, or slave-holding states, a large majority of the white people regarded negro slavery as a useful institution, without a moral wrong; their education and the custom of their country had confirmed them in the belief that the negro was an inferior race and as such was designed for service for their masters, the whites. The laws of the land had made property of the slaves and thus the slave-owner not only looked on his negro slaves as useful burden-bearers and toilers, but as his individual property. This domestic condition had produced in the South a class of idle, proud aristocrats who looked on the laboring classes, whether negro or poor whites, as inferiors. So strong was this feeling at the beginning of the war that they boasted that one Southern gentleman could whip five Yankees.

On the other side there was a large number of people in the Northern states who believed that negro slavery was morally wrong, and that it was a national sin to tolerate it, by enacting laws regulating it and recognizing property rights in human beings. The Fugitive Slave Law was especially odious to these people.



This class of people were especially numerous and active in Howard county. There was another and a conservative class who contended that advancing civilization and time would solve the slavery question in the gradual emancipation of the slaves; that the bitter agitation of the ultra pro-slavery people of the South and anti-slavery people of the North was exceedingly dangerous and unwise; and sought, by all manner of compromise suggestions, to quiet the public feeling.

During the presidential campaign of 1860 John C. Breckenridge was the candidate of the pro-slavery people, Abraham Lincoln of the anti-slavery people and Stephen A. Douglas of the conservatives. Every element was wonderfully stirred, and public feeling ran high. Breckenridge received some votes in Howard county, Douglas a large number, but Lincoln had a majority. When Lincoln was declared elected the pro-slavery people felt that a crisis had come; that the end of their cherished institution, slavery, was in sight, and they immediately began preparations to resist it. And though Lincoln had been lawfully elected President, they declared they would not submit to his government, and began to pass secession ordinances in the Southern states and to organize another government in the South.

#### SOUTHERN SYMPATHIZERS.

Their pro-slavery friends of the North sympathized with them and thus almost all sections of the North had "Southern sympathizers."

The friends of Douglas saw the impending storm and sought, by every means, to avert it. They predicted it would be a long and bloody war; that the flower of the manhood of the North would be sacrificed before the war would be successfully ended; and

that it would cost an enormous amount in treasure and war supplies. They contended that the freeing of four million negroes would not near justify such a war. They pleaded with the victorious anti-slavery people to give the pro-slavery people of the South guarantees that their rights would not be interfered with and that the national government would not interfere with what the Southern people denominated their domestic affairs. They pleaded with the Southern people, saying it would be ruinous to dissolve the Union and to engage in a fratricidal war. Foreseeing that war was inevitable unless the antagonistic elements could be reconciled, John J. Chittenden, a senator from Kentucky, a man universally respected for his patriotism, his ability and great moral worth, on the 18th of December, 1860, presented in the United States Senate a series of Compromise Resolutions, which were long debated and finally rejected by nineteen votes for and twenty votes against.

Early in February the famous Peace Conference, called on the initiative of Virginia, met at Washington; only twenty states were represented. For twenty-one days this conference deliberated behind closed doors, but it was learned afterwards that the sole matter debated and considered was the slave question. The question foremost was, how much could the North yield to the South on the slave question to avoid war?

The final conclusion of the conference was really a surrender by the North on all the points in controversy; providing, first, that Congress should never interfere with slavery in the District of Columbia, over which, by the Constitution, Congress held exclusive jurisdiction without the consent of the slave-holding state of Maryland and the consent of the slave-holders of the District; second, that Congress should not forbid slave-holders from bringing their slaves to Washington, nor abolish slavery in any of the dockyards, fortresses, or territories under the jurisdiction of the United States where slavery then existed.

Third, that Congress should not prohibit and should so amend the Constitution that the states should not prohibit the transportation of slaves from and through any of the states and territories where slavery then existed, either by law or usage.

On the other hand, the South was to consent to the suppression of the slave trade; that the District of Columbia should not be used as a slave market, and that slavery should be prohibited north of thirty-six degrees, thirty minutes north latitude.

Of the twenty states represented eleven voted for, seven voted against and two divided.

The extreme Southern states were not represented. They were resolved upon breaking up the Government entirely and establishing for themselves a thorough slave-holding oligarchy and refused to take any part in the Peace Convention.

Notwithstanding this stand of these Southern states many good and well-meaning citizens of the North petitioned Congress to pass the Crittenden Resolutions, which differed in no great degree from the Peace Conference Resolutions.

Probably the fairest presentation of the views of the anti-slavery people was made by Senator Charles Sumner, November 27, 1861. But looking at the concessions proposed I have always found them utterly unreasonable and indefensible. I should not expose them now, if they did not constantly testify to the origin and mainspring of this rebellion. Slavery was always the single subject-matter and nothing else. Slavery was not only an integral part of every concession, but the single integer. The single idea was to give some new security in some form to slavery. That brilliant statesman, Mr. Canning, in one of those eloquent speeches which charm so much by the style, said that he was "tired of being a 'security grinder,'" but his experience was not comparable to ours. "Security grinding," in the name of slavery, has been for years the way in which we have encountered this conspiracy.

## THE PRESIDENT'S MESSAGE.

The proposition of the last Congress began with the President's message, which was in itself one long concession. You do not forget his sympathetic portraiture of the disaffection throughout the slave states or his testimony to the cause. Notoriously and shamefully his heart was with the conspirators, and he knew intimately the mainspring of their conduct. He proposed nothing short of a general surrender to slavery, and thus did he proclaim slavery as the head and front—the very *causa causans* of the whole crime.

You have not forgotten the Peace Conference—as it was delusively styled—convened at Washington, on the summons of Virginia, with John Tyler in the chair, where New York, as well as Massachusetts, was represented by some of her ablest and most honored citizens. The sessions were with closed doors; but it is now known that throughout the proceedings, lasting for weeks, nothing was discussed but slavery. And the propositions finally adopted by the convention were confined to slavery. Forbearing all details, it will be enough to say that they undertook to give to slavery positive protection in the Constitution, with new sanction and immunity, making it, notwithstanding the determination of our fathers, national instead of sectional; and even more than this, making it one of the essentials and permanent parts of our Republican system.

But slavery is sometimes as deceptive as at other times it is bold; and these propositions were still further offensive from their studied uncertainty, amounting to positive duplicity.

At a moment when frankness was needed above all things, we were treated to phases pregnant with doubts and controversies, and were gravely asked, in the name of slavery, to embody them in the Constitution.

There was another string of propositions, much discussed last winter, which bore the name of the venerable senator from whom they came—Mr. Crittenden, of Kentucky. These also related to slavery, and nothing else. They were more obnoxious even than those from the Peace Conference. And yet there were petitioners from the North—and even from Massachusetts—who prayed for this great surrender to slavery.

Considering the character of these propositions—that they sought to change the Constitution in a manner revolting to the moral sense; to foist into the Constitution the idea of property in man; to protect slavery in all present territory south of thirty-six degrees, thirty minutes, and to carry it into all territory hereafter acquired south of that line, and thus to make our beautiful Stars and Stripes, in their southern march, the flag of slavery; considering that they further sought to give new constitutional securities to slavery in the national Capital and in other places within the exclusive Federal jurisdiction; that they sought to give new constitutional securities to the transit of slaves from state to state, opening the way to a roll call of slaves at the foot of Bunker Hill or the gates of Faneuil Hall; and that they also sought the disfranchisement of more than ten thousand of my fellow citizens in Massachusetts, whose rights are fixed by the Constitution of that Commonwealth, drawn by John Adams; considering these things I felt at the time, and I still feel, that the best apology of these petitioners was, that they were ignorant of the true character of these propositions, and that in signing these petitions they knew not what they did. But even in their ignorance they testified to slavery, while the propositions were the familiar voice of slavery crying, 'Give, give.' "

## IN THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES.

As typifying the feelings of the more radical men on each side these quotations are given. Mr. Lovejoy, in the national house of representatives, said: "There never was a more causeless revolt since Lucifer led his cohorts of apostate angels against the throne of God; but I never heard that the Almighty proposed to compromise the matter by allowing the rebels to kindle the fires of hell south of the celestial meridian of thirty-six thirty."

Mr. Wigfall, senator from Texas, said: "It is the merest balderdash—that is, what it is—it is the most unmitigated fudge for any one to get up here and tell men who have sense and who have brains, that there is any prospect of two-thirds of this Congress passing any propositions as an amendment to the Constitution, that any man who is white, twenty-one years old, and whose hair is straight, living south of Mason and Dixon's line, will be content with."

The following extract from the Mobile Advertiser is but a fair reflection of much of the work of the Southern press to fire the hearts and minds of the Southern people against the North: "They may raise plenty of men; men who prefer enlisting to starvation; scurvy fellows from the back scum of cities, whom Falstaff would not have marched through Coventry with; but these recruits are not soldiers, least of all the soldiers to meet hot-blooded, thoroughbred, impetuous men of the South. Trencher soldiers, who enlisted to war on their rations, not on men, they are; such as marched through Baltimore, squalid, wretched, ragged and half-naked, as the newspapers of that city report them. Fellows who do not know the breech of a musket from its muzzle, and had rather filch a handkerchief than fight an enemy in manly combat. White slaves, peddling wretches, small-change knaves and vagrants, the dregs and



offscouring of the populace; these are the levied forces whom Lincoln suddenly arrays as candidates for the honor of being slaughtered by gentlemen—such as Mobile sent to battle yesterday. Let them come South and we will put our negroes to the dirty work of killing them. But they will not come South. Not a wretch of them will live this side of the border longer than it will take us to reach the ground and drive them over.”

#### RULE OR RUIN POLICY.

There was a large element in the South in the beginning who were opposed to this rule and ruin policy, not only among the masses but many of the prominent leaders.

The Hon. A. H. Stephens, on the 14th of November, 1860, in the hall of the House of Representatives at Milledgeville, Georgia, made these patriotic remarks: “The first question that presents itself is, shall the people of the South secede from the Union in consequence of the election of Mr. Lincoln to the Presidency of the United States?

“My countrymen, I tell you frankly, candidly and earnestly that I do not think they ought. In my judgment the election of no man, constitutionally chosen to that high office, is sufficient cause for any state to separate from the Union. It ought to stand by and aid still in maintaining the Constitution of the country. To make a point of resistance to the Government, to withdraw from it, because a man has been constitutionally elected, puts us in the wrong. We are pledged to maintain the Constitution. Many of us have sworn to support it. Can we, therefore, for the mere election of a man to the Presidency, and that, too, in accordance with the prescribed forms of the Constitution, make a point of resistance to the government without becoming breakers of that sacred instrument ourselves?

"But that this government of our fathers, with all its defects, comes nearer the objects of all good governments than any other on the face of the earth, is my settled conviction. Contrast it now with any other on the face of the earth. ('England,' said Mr. Toombs.) England, my friend says. Well, that is next best, I grant; but I think we have improved upon England. Statesmen tried their apprentice hand on the government of England and then ours was made. Ours sprung from that, avoiding many of its defects, taking most of the good, and leaving out many of its errors, and, from the whole, constructing and building up this model Republic—the best which the history of the world gives any account of. Where will you go, following the sun in its circuit around the globe, to find a government that better protects the liberties of the people and secures to them the blessings we enjoy? I think one of the evils that beset us is a surfeit of liberty, an exuberance of the priceless blessings for which we are ungrateful.

"I look upon this country, with our institutions, as the Eden of the world—the paradise of the universe. It may be that out of it we may become greater and more prosperous; but I am candid and sincere in telling you, that I fear, if we rashly evince passion, and without sufficient cause shall take that step, that, instead of becoming greater or more peaceful, prosperous and happy, instead of becoming gods, we will become demons, and at no distant day commence cutting one another's throats."

This speech was received with great applause.

#### SECESSION AND DISUNION.

Secession and disunion were sweeping over the South like a tidal wave and within three months the author of this patriotic address accepted the vice-presidency of the Southern Confederacy,

and on the 21st of March, 1861, he made this declaration: "The new Constitution has put at rest forever all the agitating questions relating to our peculiar institution—African slavery as it exists among us—the proper status of the negro in our form of civilization. This was the immediate cause of the late rupture and present revolution. Jefferson, in his forecast, had anticipated this as the rock on which the old Union would split. He was right.

"What was conjecture with him is now realized fact. But whether he fully comprehended the great truth upon which the rock stood and stands may be doubted.

"The prevailing idea entertained by him and most of the leading statesmen at the time of the formation of the old Constitution was that the enslavement of the African was in violation of the laws of nature; that it was wrong in principle, socially, morally and politically.

"These ideas were, however, fundamentally wrong. They rested, however, upon the assumption of the equality of the races. This was an error. It was a sandy foundation and the idea of a government built upon it, when the storm came and the wind blew it fell. Our new government is founded upon exactly the opposite ideas. Its foundations are laid, its cornerstone rests upon the great truths, that the negro is not equal to the white man; that slavery subordination to the superior race is his natural and normal condition. Thus our new government is the first in the history of the world based upon this great physical, philosophical and moral truth.

"Our Confederacy is founded upon principles in strict conformity with these laws.

"This stone, which was rejected by the first builders, is become the chief cornerstone in our new edifice."

## PUBLIC SENTIMENT IN HOWARD.

The cause of the war of the Rebellion and the public sentiments in relation to it have thus been set forth at some length as explaining most fully the division of sentiment in Howard county at the beginning and throughout that war.

If there were any at all who really wished the Confederates to win and the Union destroyed they were few indeed. The citizenship of the county were practically unanimous in wishing the Union preserved.

They differed as to methods and policies. The Republicans believed that the Southern states were in rebellion because they were victors in the national election, having elected Lincoln President. For that reason they had a personal interest in putting down the rebellion; they also were in direct opposition to the slaveholders on the slavery question, and because of these antagonisms the feelings between them was hot and bitter, and being largely in the majority in the county, the war sentiment was overwhelmingly in the majority.

These made the same mistake the Southerners had made in underestimating the fighting powers of their opponents. Many of them declared that it would only be a before-breakfast job to put down the rebellion.

Those who had supported Douglas for President were for peace first and war only as the last resort. Their forecast of the impending struggle was more nearly correct than either of the others; they foresaw that it would be long and bloody and would end only when one side was completely exhausted. They, too, considered slavery the sole issue to wage war for and they did not consider this of such paramount importance to justify a long, bloody and exhaustive war, and so they urged a peaceable settlement if possible. They urged both sides to make concessions in the interests

of peace and to cultivate a spirit of friendship rather than hostility. While the war was going on, they urged that every opportunity for concluding an honorable peace with a reunited country be used. At no time did they consent to a dissolution of our Union.

Because of the highly wrought up feelings of all of the people, there was more or less friction between the war and the peace elements and many unkind and unjust things were said and done. Dr. Lewis Kern, in April, 1861, came near being mobbed on the streets of Kokomo, a victim of this excited condition of the public mind because of some alleged saying imputed to him reflecting on the war spirit of the times.

But when Fort Sumpter was fired on and the flag went down in surrender to the rebels, their differences were forgotten and the followers of Douglas followed their leader in offering themselves for service for their country and the Union. It is true that in the Congressional elections of 1862 and the national election of 1864 that party lines were clearly drawn, and the Democrats representing the peace party polled a large vote. They clung tenaciously and fondly to the delusive hope that the people of the South could be induced to lay down their rebellious arms and return to their allegiance to the Union by making certain guarantees respecting their negro slaves. After more than forty years have passed and time has cleared up all things we are constrained to wonder how those people could so elude themselves. We must remember, however, that the mists of partisan prejudice were all about them and their vision was not clear.

#### LINCOLN TO THE KENTUCKIANS.

They were wholly ignorant of the feeling and purposes of the Southern leaders; they thought that if Lincoln and his party

friends would give guarantees that negro slavery would not be interfered with in the South; that the trouble would end. And yet they had no reason for believing this. Lincoln himself had made this clear. In a speech at Cincinnati, when on his way to Washington for the first inauguration, addressing directly a party of Kentuckians, he said, "You perhaps want to know what we will do with you. I will tell you so far as I am authorized to speak for the opposition. We mean to treat you, as nearly as possible, as Washington, Jefferson and Madison treated you. We mean to leave you alone, and in no way to interfere with your institutions; to abide by all and every compromise of the Constitution. We mean to remember that you are as good as we; that there is no difference between us other than the difference of circumstances. We mean to recognize and bear in mind always that you have as good hearts in your bosoms as other people, or as we claim to have, and treat you accordingly."

In the same journey, at Philadelphia, he said, "I have often inquired of myself what great principle or idea it was that kept this Confederacy so long together. It was not the mere matter of the separation of the colonies from the motherland; but that sentiment in the Declaration of Independence which gave liberty, not alone to the people of this country, but I hope to the world for all future time. It was that which gave promise that, in due time, the weight would be lifted from the shoulders of all men. This was a sentiment embodied in the Declaration of Independence.

"Now, my friends, can this country be saved on this basis? If it can I shall consider myself one of the happiest men in the world if I can help save it. If it cannot be saved on that principle, it will be truly awful.

"But if this country can not be saved without giving up that principle, I was about to say, I would rather be assassinated on this



spot than surrender it. Now in my view of the present aspect of affairs, there is no need of bloodshed or war. There is no necessity for it. I am not in favor of such a course, and I may say, in advance, that there will be no bloodshed unless it be forced upon the government, and then it will be compelled to act in self-defense."

The fairmindedness of Lincoln is shown in the following extract from a speech delivered at Peoria, Illinois, a short time before:

"I think that I have no prejudice against the Southern people. If slavery did not now exist among them they would not introduce it. If it did now exist among us we would not instantly give it up. This I believe of the masses North and South. Doubtless there are individuals, on both sides, who would not hold slaves under any circumstances; and others who would gladly introduce slavery anew, if it were out of existence. We know that some Southern men do free their slaves, go North and become tip-top abolitionists; while some Northern men go South and become most cruel slave-masters."

Mr. Lincoln closed his first inaugural address with these words: "In your hands, my dissatisfied fellow countrymen, and not in mine, is the momentous issue of civil war. The government will not assail you. You can have no conflict without yourselves being the aggressors.

"You have no oath registered in heaven to destroy the government; while I shall have the most solemn one to 'preserve, protect and defend it.' I am loath to close. We are not enemies but friends. We must not be enemies. Though passion may have strained it must not break our bond of affection. The mystic chords of memory, stretching from every battle field and patriot grave, to every living heart and hearthstone all over this broad land, will yet swell the chorus of the Union, when again touched, as surely they will be, by the better angels of our nature."

In view of the developments of the past forty-eight years and the light we now have it may be confidently asserted that the real questions and conditions of the country at the beginning of the Civil war were not fully realized and understood by any of the parties then existing. The slavery question was treated and considered the sole question in controversy and as the whole cause of the disruption of the Union. The real cause seems rather to have been a condition growing out of slavery.

## VIEWS OF SLAVE-HOLDERS.

The slave-holders, accustomed for generations to having colored servants to wait upon them and to do all their various kinds of labor, had come to look upon labor as degrading and to consider themselves as socially above the laboring classes. A slaveholding aristocracy had grown up in our country. They had become proud and domineering, and were wholly out of sympathy with the spirit of a free people. The poor whites of the South were ostracised by them and considered by them as little better than the negroes.

Senator Toombs gave expression to this aristocratic feeling when he said to Stephens that England was a better government than ours. He had in mind their lords and titled nobilities.

It was the design of the rebels to overthrow our free institutions and to introduce in their stead the reign of slavery. Capital was to own labor. The industrial classes were to be slaves kept in ignorance. The privileged class were to live in indolence and luxury, maintained by the toil of their unpaid serfs.

It was really the old, old problem of the privileged few and the toiling masses being solved again in a new form.

It is said of the Austrian Prince Metternick that, standing

upon the balcony of his beautiful palace overlooking the Rhine and looking out upon his vineyards filled with men and women performing feudal service for their lord, he exclaimed to the brilliant company about him, "Behold the true philosophy of society—gentlemen in the palace, laborers in the field, with an impassable gulf between."

That was the philosophy of society that appealed to the slaveholders of the South and the real cause of the rebellion. It is a matter of great wonder that such a gigantic struggle could have been precipitated by so few persons. The whole number of slaveholders in the South did not probably exceed three hundred thousand.

Not more than one hundred thousand possessed any considerable number of slaves. And yet this petty oligarch, entirely subordinate to a few leading minds, organized the most gigantic rebellion which ever shook the globe. Senator Sumner has said, "The future historian will record that the present rebellion, notwithstanding its protracted origin, the multitude it has enlisted, and its extensive sweep, was at last precipitated by fewer than twenty men; Mr. Everett says by as few as ten."

#### PEACE PARTY FAILS.

Notwithstanding the efforts of the peace party of the North to stay the oncoming struggle; notwithstanding Mr. Lincoln's conciliatory declarations, the Southern leaders went industriously on in getting ready for the struggle. They planned to precipitate a riot in Baltimore while Mr. Lincoln was passing through and to assassinate him, and had planned a way for the assassin to escape.

Detectives discovered the plot and notified Mr. Lincoln at Philadelphia of it. He went on to Harrisburg, as he had planned; but

at nightfall he stole out with a few friends, took a special train to Baltimore, was transferred from one depot to another unobserved, and was in Washington ahead of time and unannounced. General Scott and Secretary of War Holt took active measures to secure Mr. Lincoln's safety in Washington.

On the morning of April 12th, the rebel batteries opened fire on Fort Sumter, and on the following day the garrison was forced to surrender.

The effect of the bombardment and capture of Fort Sumpter on the North was electrical. As the news of the insult to the national flag, of the battle and the capture of the fort by the rebels, was flashed along the wires, excitement, perhaps unparalleled in the history of the world, pervaded every city and hamlet and almost every heart. All party distinctions seemed to be forgotten. There were only two parties—patriots and traitors. The feeling in Howard county was intense. The people, in their anxiety for the war news, engaged all the papers of the newsdealers before they arrived and besieged the newsboys on the trains for the daily papers, and often the supply was exhausted before all were supplied.

The writer of this was the newsboy of the rural community in which he lived almost the entire period of the Civil war, and through storm and shine daily he went to the nearest station for the papers. Interest in the war news from the many battlefields of the South never flagged.

#### NEWS OF FORT SUMPTER.

In speaking of the fall of Fort Sumpter the Tribune said, "Let all old party lines be obliterated and all angry words of other days be forgotten. These are not times in which to remember former difficulties. A dark cloud hangs over the country. All the world

looks on amazed and anxious. Already has our Government been disgraced and wherever civilization is known the people are awaiting in astonishment to see whether or not the American Union is what it has been represented or no government at all."

The unanimity with which the whole North arose in this crisis is one of the most extraordinary events of history.

Men who, but a few days before, had been bitterly hostile, were at once seen standing side by side on the same platform to resist this rebellion.

Senator Douglas, the great leader of the Northern Democrats, made a speech at Chicago, from which the following extracts are made: "That the present danger is imminent, no man can conceal.

"If war must come—if the bayonet must be used to maintain the Constitution—I say before God, my conscience is clean, I have struggled long for a peaceful solution of the difficulty, I have not only tendered those states what was theirs of right, but I have gone to the very extreme of magnanimity.

"The slavery question is a mere excuse, the election of Lincoln a mere pretext. The present secession movement is the result of an enormous conspiracy formed more than a year since, formed by the leaders in the Southern Confederacy more than twelve months ago. The conspiracy is now known. Armies have been raised, war is levied to accomplish it. There are only two sides to the question. Every man must be for the United States or against it. There can be no neutrals in this war; only patriots or traitors.

"I know they expected to present a united South against a divided North. They hoped in the Northern states party questions would bring civil war between Democrats and Republicans, when the South would step in, with her cohorts, aid one party to conquer the other and then make easy prey of the victors. Their scheme was carnage and civil war in the North.



"While there was hope of peace, I was ready for any reasonable sacrifice or compromise to maintain it. But when the question comes of war in the cotton fields of the South or corn fields of Illinois, I say the further off the better.

"It is a sad task to discuss questions so fearful as civil war; but sad as it is, bloody and disastrous as I expect it will be, I express it as my conviction before God that it is the duty of every American citizen to rally around the flag of his country."

#### FIRST CALL FOR VOLUNTEERS.

On Monday, April 15th, the President issued a call for seventy-five thousand volunteers for three months' service in putting down the rebellion and called an extra session of Congress for July 4th. Following close upon the call of the President came the following proclamation by the governor of Indiana:

"WHEREAS, An armed rebellion has been organized in certain states of this Union, having for its purpose the overthrow of the United States; and

"WHEREAS, The authors and movers in this rebellion have seized, by violence, various forts and arsenals belonging to the United States and otherwise plundered the government of large amounts of money and valuable property; and

"WHEREAS, Fort Sumter, a fortress belonging to the United States, the exclusive possession and jurisdiction over which were vested in the general government by the Constitution of the United States, has been besieged by a large army and assaulted by a destructive cannonade, and reduced to submission, and the national flag hauled down and dishonored; and

"WHEREAS, The President of the United States, in the exercise of the power vested in him by the Federal Constitution, has called



upon the several states remaining true to their allegiance to aid him in the enforcement of the laws, the recovery of the national property and the maintenance of the rightful authority of the United States; now, therefore, I, Oliver P. Morton, governor of the state of Indiana, call upon loyal and patriotic men of the state to the number of six regiments to organize themselves into military companies and forthwith report the same to the adjutant-general in order that they may be speedily mustered into the service of the United States. The details of the organization are set forth in the instructions of the adjutant-general herewith published.

“OLIVER P. MORTON, Governor.”

In response to this proclamation the Tribune of the 16th inst. contained this call:

“Dr. Richmond and other citizens request us to call a meeting at Richmond & Leed’s Hall to-night for the purpose of considering the duties of citizens in the present crisis. Turn out, patriots. Volunteers are being offered all over the country. All parties agree now.” Although the notice was short, the meeting was well attended. Fiery speeches were made and ringing resolutions passed and preparations were immediately begun for the organization of a company.

#### THE FIRST TO FALL.

William R. Philips, who was one of the first to fall in defense of his country from this county, headed the list of volunteers. In less than one week nearly two hundred names were enrolled. On Friday evening, April 19th, the company met in Richmond & Leed’s Hall and elected the following officers: Thomas J. Harrison, captain; Thomas Herring, first lieutenant, and William R. Philips, second lieutenant.

On the Saturday afternoon following posters were put out calling a meeting at the Methodist Episcopal church in the evening for the purpose of securing a fund for the support of the families of volunteers who were about to start in the service of their country. Accordingly, at an early hour, the house was filled to overflowing. Mr. Charles Murray was made chairman, and, on motion of Mr. James W. Robinson, the following persons were appointed an executive committee: J. W. Robinson, Thomas Auter, Herman Keeler, Benjamin R. Norman and Samuel Rosenthal. Thomas Jay was elected treasurer. The books were opened for subscriptions and the people responded liberally. Jay and Dolman headed the list with two hundred dollars. Nearly every one present gave something in amounts from two dollars to five dollars. One man gave a lot in the city of Kokomo and several farmers subscribed one hundred bushels of corn each. The total subscription amounted to more than two thousand dollars.

Someone suggested that the citizens should furnish the volunteers with blankets. Here, again, was a great rush to see who should have the privilege. Gentlemen offered all they had, together with comforts, to answer until the volunteers could get where they could buy blankets, and twenty-five dollars to buy them with. This was the spirit of the people, and in five minutes over one hundred blankets were provided. Flannel shirts and drawers were also named. As the boys were to leave on Monday morning it was suggested that, as the company would remain a week or two at Indianapolis, these could be made and shipped down to the care of Captain Harrison. This was agreed upon, when immediately ladies offered a dozen each, gentlemen offered bolts of flannel, others came up and handed in money, and in a few minutes the whole company was provided for.

The following persons were appointed a committee to solicit

further aid in Center township: Worley Leas, R. F. Kennedy and George W. Hocker. By a motion the people in each township were requested to act immediately and secure a large fund for the support of the families of volunteers. Messrs. Thomas Jay, Samuel Rosenthal and . . . . . Chapin were appointed to receive and distribute blankets on Sunday. Several short speeches were made and the assembly adjourned with the most patriotic feeling prevailing.

#### GENEROUS DONATIONS.

These patriotic and generous donations for the comfort and well-being of the volunteers were not only the substantial expression of the feelings of the people but were also necessary contributions to the needs of the volunteer soldiery as well, for in the beginning the government had no well-disciplined commissary department.

Sunday, April 21st, was a memorable day in the history of Howard county. In the issue of April 23, 1861, the Tribune thus describes it: "The streets were crowded early in the morning. The people from all parts of the county came in by scores and fifties. Both churches were filled at the usual hour for holding meeting. At the Methodist Episcopal church a first-rate sermon and devout prayers for the safety of the country were listened to with close attention. At the Christian church, Francis O'Dowd addressed a large audience in the most patriotic style, pledging his all at the close for the government.

Meanwhile volunteers were constantly enrolling their names. About noon the fife and drum were heard and most of the afternoon the companies were under drill. At three o'clock p. m. the volunteers marched out the East Road and met a tremendous procession coming from that direction. There was a large number of four-horse wagons and a large procession of horsemen. In the crowd

were many volunteers coming down to leave for the service. When the two multitudes met, thundering cheers for the stars and stripes were heard for miles around. The procession, about a quarter of a mile in length, returned to the public square, where Professor Baldwin addressed the assembly most eloquently. So great was the enthusiasm that Professor Baldwin himself and all the teachers and pupils who were old enough enlisted, so that the school was discontinued for some time. The dry goods stores were kept open and such things as were needed by soldiers were freely given without a cent of pay. Money was distributed for use while in camp and every want that could be thought of was provided for. Such a Sabbath never was or perhaps never will be witnessed in Kokomo as this one was." As the evening shadows thickened into night the bells pealed forth a strange, sweet music to those who were to leave on the morrow. The churches were crowded again and many fervent prayers were offered for the flag of our country and for those who had pledged themselves to stand by it against every foe.

At sunrise on the following day the town was full of wagons and horses, and from six o'clock until train time an immense multitude thronged all the streets about the depot. The time had come when the first company of soldiers ever organized in Howard county were waiting to depart for a service of which no one at that time had the least conception.

There were hundreds of tearful eyes as the last farewells were said. It was the parting of parents with children, of husbands with their wives, brothers with sisters and lovers with each other, with pledges to be true till war's desolation was over. The thought of it being the last good-bye paled many a cheek and moistened many eyes unused to tears.

As the train steamed up not a word of complaint was made: it was a firm pressure, a warm look of encouragement and a God-

bless-you and they were gone. The Tribune of the next day contained this patriotic sentiment from the able pen of the late T. C. Philips: "The times that try men's souls are upon us. Every man, every woman, every person able to work has important duties to perform. Let us begin now. There must not be an idle person. A large crop must be raised and fewer men than usual must raise it. Every acre of ground must be tilled. Patriots are in demand and, thank heaven, they are ready. Thousands of strong men will be needed in defense of our country, and they are presenting themselves, asking to serve in that defense. Every one left at home can do the work of two. In the days of the revolution, women performed the labor of men, and men did double labor.

"The days of '76 are present with us in '61. The battles must be fought over again. An army of rebels ten times worse than the tyrants who denied us liberty in '76 would now wrench that liberty from us and drag the flag of our country and our fathers in the dust. Arouse, freemen! If patriotism ever was needed that time is now. Let there be no influence against the enlisting of your son in the cause. Ask God's blessing on him and let him go. We heard a day or two since a man offered to furnish the family of a volunteer all the flour needed until he should return. 'But,' said another, 'if he never returns?' 'While I live the contract shall be kept inviolate,' was the answer. That is the true spirit. May the people be imbued with the spirit of true patriotism, and may those who remain at home do their whole duty. Those who go away, we know, will do theirs."

When the company arrived at Indianapolis it took quarters at Camp Morton and immediately organized. It was found that there were nearly enough men for two companies, and so the boys organized a new company, and Dr. Corydon Richmond, who, it seems, was a most zealous worker in the cause, hurried home and procured



a sufficient number of men to complete the second company. So energetic were our boys that in one week from the day the first meeting was called in Kokomo the first company was mustered into the service and succeeded in obtaining a place in the Sixth (three months) Regiment.

This was the first regiment mustered in the state for the war of the Rebellion. The five previous regiments had been raised for the war with Mexico.

#### THE OATH.

The following is the oath which each man was required to take and which all volunteers and regulars mustered into the service of the United States are required to take before final enrollment: "I do solemnly swear that I will bear true allegiance to the United States of America; that I will serve them honestly and faithfully against all enemies or opposers whatsoever; that I will obey the orders of the President of the United States and of the other officers appointed over me. According to the rules of the armies of the United States, so help me God."

This company designated themselves the Howard Rifles and was known as Company D in the regiment.

The Indianapolis Journal paid them the following tribute on the day they were mustered in: "Captain Harrison, who was a member of the Legislature in 1858, arrived yesterday with his company, the Howard Rifles, and took quarters at Camp Morton. His men are of those who can pick squirrels out of the tops of the tallest trees and rebels from the secession ranks as far as a Sharp's rifle will carry." Thomas M. Kirkpatrick and Barnabas Busby, both being farmers, did not get their affairs arranged in time to join the first company, but hastened to Indianapolis and joined the second company. Mr. Kirkpatrick was chosen captain, Mr. Busby



first lieutenant and N. P. Richmond second lieutenant of this company.

Captain Kirkpatrick's company was made Company C in the Twelfth Regiment, and after failing to get in the three months' service was transferred to the Thirteenth Regiment as Company E and was stationed at Camp Sullivan.

Thus, while Captain Harrison's company had the honor of being in the first three months' regiment organized in the state, Captain Kirkpatrick's company was in the first three years' regiment.

During the stay in camp in Indianapolis the men were in active preparation for war, drilling almost constantly. Many little incidents occurred to break the monotony of camp life, and when, on the 30th of May, the Sixth Regiment was ordered to the front, they were in high spirits. They left for western Virginia by way of Cincinnati and Parkersburg. They had been fully equipped, armed and clothed and presented a gay appearance. Their passage through Indiana and Ohio was a grand ovation. The Cincinnati Enquirer of May 31st said of them: "The attendance at the depot yesterday when Colonel Crittenden's command arrived was very large and all along the entire length of the march through the city the throngs on the sidewalks and the street corners were immense, and, as the brave Indianians marched along, the cheers that greeted them were vociferous. The gallant troops made a fine appearance and were applauded by everybody for their soldierly demeanor. The regiment was brought to a halt and a front-face when opposite the residence of Larz Anderson, Esq. Colonel Anderson advanced to the curbstone and was greeted by a present-arms and a salute from the officers, with a remark from Colonel Crittenden that the salute was a compliment from the Sixth Regiment of Indiana Volunteers. Colonel Anderson replied, 'I thank

you, gentlemen; God bless and protect you.' The column then wheeled into line, and as the troops marched by the hero of Sumter, they rent the air with enthusiastic cheering."

On the 2nd of June, the regiment arrived at Webster, Virginia, and was marched, with other troops, the same night through a drenching rain a distance of fourteen miles, and on the morning of the 3d of June took part in the first battle of the war at Philippi.

It participated in the march to Laurel Hill and the engagement with Garnett's rebel command at Carrick's Ford on the 12th of July. It returned to Indianapolis on the 25th of July and was finally discharged August 2, 1861.

#### THIRTEENTH REGIMENT.

The Thirteenth Regiment, in which was Captain Kirkpatrick's company, left Indianapolis on the 4th of July, 1861, and on the morning of the 10th joined McClellan's forces at the foot of Rich mountain, in western Virginia, where, on the following day, it participated in battle. In this battle William Riffle was killed—Howard county's first martyr for the preservation of the Union.

From this time on the Thirteenth was in active campaign work for the entire three years. It took part in the numerous skirmishes at Cheat mountain pass, and on the 12th and 13th of September, 1861, in the engagements on Cheat mountain summit and Elkwater supported Howe's Battery, Fourth United States Artillery. At Greenbrier, on the 3d of October, and during the remainder of October, it was engaged in scouting expeditions along the Holly and Kanawha rivers. After this it marched to Alleghany under General Milroy and participated in the battle there on the 13th of December. It wintered at Green Spring Run. General Shields took command of the division in the spring and under him the regi-

ment moved to Winchester and then scouted up the valley to Strasburg, returning to Winchester. It participated in the battle of Winchester Heights, March 22, 1862. Two or three months were now employed in marching up and down the valley, giving chase to the rebels, and in the latter part of June the regiment embarked at Alexandria for Harrison's Landing, on the James river, where it arrived July 2d. In August it marched to Fortress Monroe and thence to the Nansemond river, where it remained nine months, engaging in numerous operations in that region of country, making three reconnoissances to Black river, fighting the battle of the Deserted Farm on the 30th of January, 1863, defeating Longstreet in his attempt to seize Suffolk from April 10th to May 3, 1863, and in tearing up and bringing off about forty miles of track from two railroads from the 13th to the 19th of May. In these operations the regiment marched over 400 miles. On the 27th of June the regiment left Suffolk. It participated in the operations on Morris Island during the siege of Forts Wagner and Gregg, and was the first regiment to enter Wagner in the assault on the 7th of September.

The Thirteenth participated in nearly all the operations of General Butler's army south of Richmond and was conspicuous in the engagement at Wathal Junction, Chester Station, and the charge on the rifle pits near Foster's farm, in all of which the loss was about two hundred. It joined the Army of the Potomac in June, 1864, marching with the army to Cold Harbor, where, there being no field officers present for duty, Captain Kirkpatrick assumed command. The regiment was actively engaged in the battle at that place and in all the operations in the vicinity of the Chickahominy until June 12th, when it returned to Bermuda Hundred. On the 15th it crossed the Appomattox river and was engaged in the assaults on the rebel works in front of Petersburg.

On the 18th Captain Kirkpatrick's company, having served the full time of its enlistment, was ordered from the skirmish line, and on the 19th left for Indianapolis, arriving on the 24th of June. They were mustered out of the service July 1, 1864.

About one-half of the company afterwards veteranized.

#### MILITIA COMPANIES.

In May, 1861, the boys of Kokomo from twelve to eighteen years of age, catching the military spirit that pervaded the country, organized a company under the name of the Wild Cat Rangers. The Tribune said: "We learn that the officers have reported their company to the governor, have purchased a part of their musical instruments, made arrangements for caps, etc., and will begin to drill regularly at an early day."

The names of many of these boys appear on the regular muster rolls of regiments that were formed in later years.

In the latter part of June, 1861, the first company of the Howard county regiment of the Indiana Legion was formed at Kokomo.

The following letter from the adjutant-general shows how the company was organized:

"INDIANAPOLIS, INDIANA, June 13, 1861.

"The Union Tigers, a volunteer militia company, organized at Kokomo, in Howard county, Indiana, under the military laws of said state, having complied with the requirements of said laws, are hereby authorized and ordered to elect officers at their armory in Kokomo, on Tuesday evening, the 18th day of June, 1861; and John Bohan, Thomas Jay and J. F. Henderson are hereby appointed to receive and count ballots cast at said election (in presence of

whomsoever may be deputized to preside at such election) and to make returns of such election to this office without delay.

"LAZ. NOBLE, Adj.-Gen. Vol. Militia."

#### THE UNION TIGERS.

Mr. T. C. Philips was delegated authority by the adjutant-general to preside at the meeting of the Union Tigers, and the election resulted as follows: James Bailey, captain; James A. Wildman, first lieutenant; William S. Snow, second lieutenant.

At various times after this other companies were formed in all or nearly all the townships, and were known as Union Wild Cat Rifles, The Union Legion, Harrison Guards, Howard Guards, Fairfield Guards, Wild Cat Rangers, Cassville Guards, Honey Creek Legion, Liberty Guards, Noble Guards, Ervin Guards and Wild Cat Rifles. The field officers and staff of this legion were: John M. Garrett, colonel (afterwards entered U. S. service); N. P. Richmond, colonel; James A. Wildman, lieutenant-colonel; Charles E. Disbro, major; Samuel W. Thornton, adjutant; Morgan A. Chestnut, quartermaster; Reuben King, surgeon; John W. Cooper, judge-advocate; Thomas Lythe, paymaster.

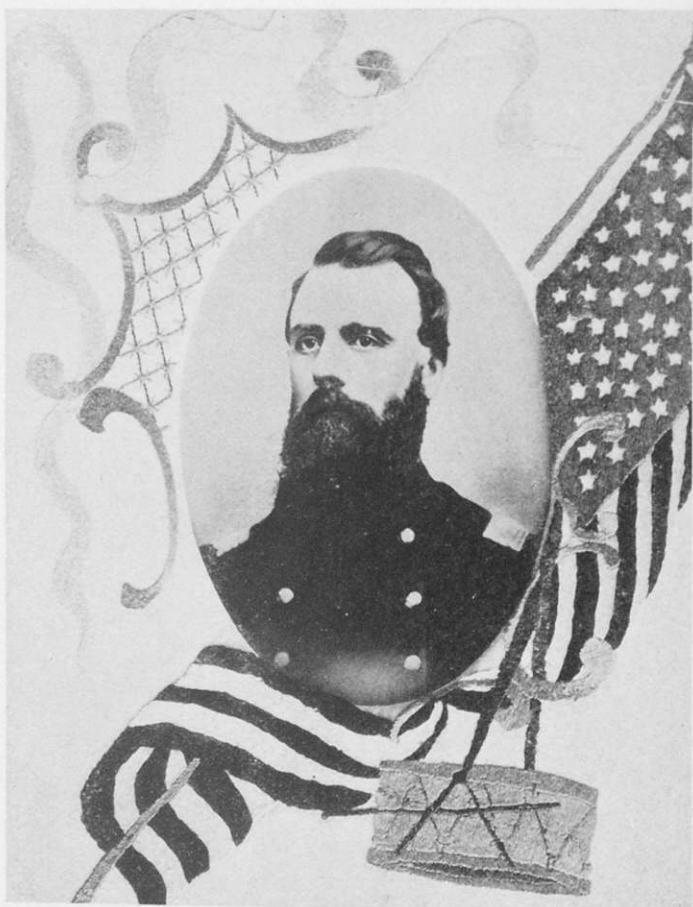
#### THE THIRTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

In the latter part of August, 1861, Dr. Jacob S. White, who had succeeded in raising a company in this county, left for Anderson, where a regiment for this Congressional district was forming under Colonel Asbury Steele.

The Tribune said of the departure of this company: "A very large multitude assembled at the C. & C. depot last Wednesday to see the boys of Dr. White's company off to camp at Anderson.







GEN. THOMAS J. HARRISON.

Some of the partings brought tears to the eyes of many. The grief of some was manifested in loud cries, but the deepest feeling was quieter. Husbands left their wives and babes with emotions that cannot be described. One gentleman, Mr. Clarke, of Ervin, got married on Sunday evening, on Monday volunteered and left on Wednesday. One wagon with six horses came in from western Howard loaded with young ladies and other decorations. Banners floated and music of the best kind was furnished. The little cannon was out and after fifty or sixty thundering discharges it burst. Squire Norman was touched on the leg, but was not hurt. No injury was received by any one, but how the people escaped we cannot tell."

In the organization of the regiment, Dr. White was appointed surgeon and Thomas S. Ferrell was elected captain.

#### THE THIRTY-FOURTH AT VICKSBURG.

This, the Thirty-fourth Regiment, participated in the siege of Vicksburg, the battle of Port Gibson, Champion Hills, the siege of Jackson and many encounters. As in the Sixth Regiment, Howard county boys had the honor of participating in the first battle of the war, so Howard county boys in the Thirty-fourth, more than two thousand miles from Philippi, engaged in the last battle at Palmetto Rancho, on the 13th of May, 1865.

This battle was fought partly on the old Palo Alto battleground, where General Taylor first encountered the Mexicans on the 8th of May, 1846. It is quite a coincidence that the first battle of the Mexican war and the last battle of the great rebellion were fought on the same ground, and that the respective anniversary days were but five days apart.

## THIRTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

The work of organizing a company of one hundred and one men for an independent regiment of sharpshooters, authorized by the War Department, began about the time of the departure of Dr. White's company.

This company filled up rapidly and in a few days seventy names were down for still another company. Prior to leaving, the company organized by electing the same officers that had served in the first company organized here, to-wit: T. J. Harrison, captain; Thomas Herring, first lieutenant, and W. R. Philips, second lieutenant. The company left on August 28, 1861, for Indianapolis. In the regimental organization, Captain Harrison was made colonel, John Bohan, quartermaster, and Dr. L. D. Waterman, surgeon. After Captain Harrison's promotion, Herring and Philips were promoted by the unanimous consent of the company. Stephen D. Butler was elected second lieutenant.

This regiment left for Kentucky early in September. It marched with Buell to Nashville, then to the Tennessee river, and was in the battle of Shiloh on the 7th of April, 1862, where Lieutenant W. R. Philips, who had been associated with his brother, T. C. Philips, in editing the Tribune, was killed.

The regiment took part in the battles of Stone River, December 31, 1862, and January 1 and 2, 1863. Through the remainder of the campaign of 1863 it served as mounted infantry. On June 6, 1863, it had a sharp fight with Wheeler's cavalry near Murfreesboro, took part in the skirmishes at Middleton and Liberty Gap, and during the movement upon Chattanooga engaged the enemy at Winchester.

On the 19th and 20th of September it participated in the battle of Chickamauga, and on the 15th of October, 1863, was reorganized as the Eighth Cavalry.

The regiment re-enlisted as a veteran organization on the 22d of February, 1864. It participated in the McCook raid around Atlanta and the Kilpatrick raid in Georgia, and at the battle of Lovejoy Station led the charge of the left wing, riding over Ross' division of rebel cavalry, capturing his artillery and four battle flags. It was in the battle of Jonesboro and Flint river and in the campaign through Georgia was in the following battles and skirmishes: Waynesboro, Buckhead Church, Brown's Cross Roads, Reynold's Farm, Aiken, Bentonville, Averasboro and Raleigh. It whipped Hampton's entire force at Morrisville and thus had the honor of fighting the last battle in North Carolina.

The regiment was mustered out of service on the 20th of July, 1865, reached Indianapolis the last week of July and was finally discharged early in August.

This regiment had in all two thousand five hundred men on its rolls, and had nine officers killed in battle. It lost about three hundred in prisoners, and captured from the enemy over fifteen hundred men, one thousand stand of arms, three railroad trains, fourteen hundred horses and mules, many wagons, fourteen pieces of artillery, four battle flags, besides destroying many miles of railroad.

It was also engaged in many raids and skirmishes of which no mention is here made.

#### FAMILIES OF THE VOLUNTEERS.

In 1861 the county commissioners appropriated seven hundred fifty dollars out of the county funds for the relief of the families of those who had volunteered.

On the evening of October 31st, the Ladies' Union Aid Association was organized for the purpose of making underclothing for

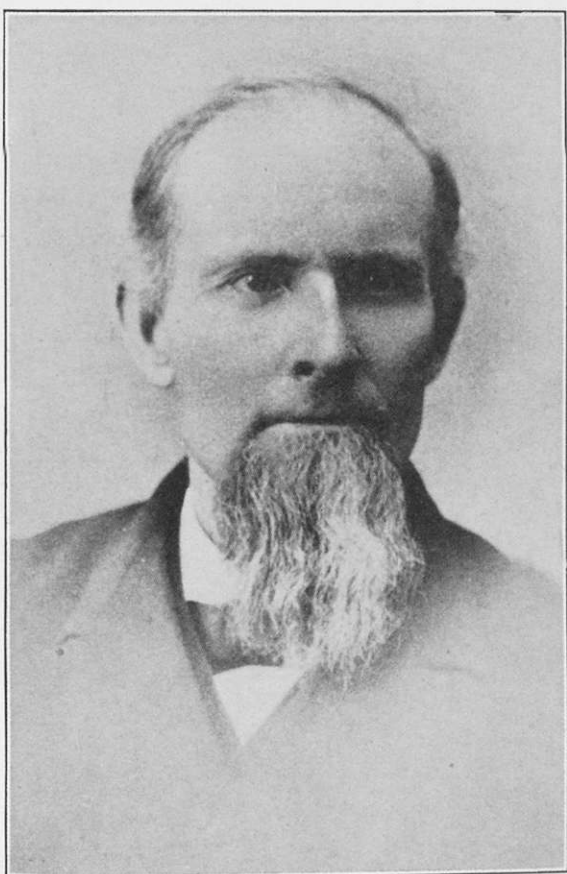
the boys who were far away in open tents and who would soon be exposed to the rude blasts of winter. Many a "God bless the noble women of Howard" went up to heaven that winter and each succeeding winter till the war was over from Howard county boys in every Southern state.

#### FIFTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

The company that was forming at the time Captain Harrison's company departed organized by electing Willis Blanch, captain; Timothy H. Leeds, first lieutenant, and John L. Hall, second lieutenant. Another company was also partly organized in this county, with William K. Hoback, captain; Joel H. Hoback, first lieutenant, and Lewis S. Horn, second lieutenant. These companies proceeded to Richmond in November, 1861, where they were organized as Companies G and H respectively of the Fifty-seventh Regiment.

On the 10th of December the regiment moved to Indianapolis, where it remained to December 23d, when it took its departure for Kentucky, where it spent the winter without engaging in battle. The regiment marched to Nashville, Tennessee, arriving there early in March. It started for Pittsburg Landing on the 21st of March, and was in hearing of the battle of Shiloh on the 6th of April, but did not arrive till the afternoon of the 7th, when it immediately engaged in battle. During the siege of Corinth the regiment was actively employed.

After this it marched into northern Alabama and in July, 1862, to middle Tennessee, where it remained till September, making many arduous marches and undergoing great hardships. It took an active part in the campaign against Bragg, engaging in the battle of Perryville, Kentucky, with only slight loss. After this it went to Nashville, December 1, 1862.



COL. WILLIS BLANCHE.





At the battle of Stone river the Fifty-seventh suffered severely, losing seventy-five men out of three hundred and fifty engaged. Here the regiment greatly distinguished itself. During the remainder of the winter and spring of 1863 it remained in camp near Murfreesboro, drilling constantly and doing severe picket duty. It took part in the eleven days' scout of Major-General Reynolds, and in the battle of Missionary Ridge it bore a conspicuous part.

#### HARDSHIPS AND PRIVATIONS.

The campaign in east Tennessee during the winter of 1863 and 1864 was probably unequaled during the whole war for hardship and privation. Of these the Fifty-seventh suffered a full share.

On the 1st of January, 1864, the regiment almost unanimously re-enlisted as a veteran organization. It took part in the initial operations of the campaign against Atlanta, and during the summer was almost constantly engaged in battle or in skirmishing. It was in the assault on Rocky Face Ridge, near Dalton, Georgia, May 9th; at Resaca, and in the action near Adairsville it took an active part. On May 27th it lost severely in the battle near New Hope Church, on the Altoona mountains. It was under fire every day from this time until June 3d, losing many men.

In the terrible struggles and skirmishes around Kenesaw it bore a full part. On the 27th of June the regiment, then commanded by Colonel Willis Blanch, formed the skirmish line in front of the assaulting column of the Fourth Corps. Its loss was heavy. It participated in the battle of Peach Tree Creek, July 20th, and from this time until the 25th of August lay in the trenches in front of Atlanta. The regiment was slightly engaged in the battle of Jonesboro, August 31st. After the occupation of Atlanta the Fifty-seventh was sent to Chattanooga. It helped to drive Hood into

Alabama, and afterward formed a part of the army of General Thomas, which resisted the invasion of Tennessee. It was engaged at Franklin, November 30, 1864, where it sustained severe loss. On the 15th and 16th of December it participated in the battle of Nashville, where Colonel Blanche was wounded.

After the pursuit of Hood's army, the regiment lay in camp at Huntsville, Alabama, some months, moving into east Tennessee as far as Bull's Gap in April, 1865. It then went to Nashville and was transferred to Texas, where it remained until mustered out of the service. The Fifty-seventh saw much arduous service, its losses in battle were heavy, and its marches severe, but it behaved with great gallantry on every occasion and achieved an enviable record and an honorable fame. In its commanding officers it was particularly fortunate, one of whom, Colonel Blanche, of this county, being a soldier of distinguished merit.

#### RELIEF SENT TO SHILOH.

When the news reached our citizens of the great battle of Shiloh, a meeting was hastily called and a surgeon was immediately sent to the sufferers, together with money, lint and bandages and whatever was thought would aid in their relief. This movement was connected with an authorized organization at Indianapolis, and it was a noble work at the right time.

#### SEVENTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

In July, 1862, another company was organized here, which elected Francis M. Bryant, captain; James C. Metsker, first lieutenant, and Irvin Polson, second lieutenant. It was mustered into service as Company C of the Seventy-fifth Regiment, at Wabash.

on the 19th of August, 1862. This regiment proceeded to Kentucky, where it took an active part in the campaign, marching to Scottsville and Gallatin and then back to Cave City in pursuit of Morgan's forces. The winter was passed mostly in camp at Gallatin, and in January the regiment moved to Murfreesboro, where it remained till June 24, 1863, when it started toward Tullahoma, and on the march engaged in the battle at Hoover's Gap. It was the first regiment to enter the rebel works at Tullahoma, about the 1st of July. It participated in the battle of Chickamauga on the 19th and 20th of September.

It then returned to Chattanooga, engaging in the battle of Missionary Ridge on the 25th of November. The Seventy-fifth passed the winter of 1863-64 in the vicinity of Chattanooga, and in the spring of 1864 moved to Ringgold, Georgia. During the Atlanta campaign it was actively engaged, participating in the battles of Dalton, Resaca, Adairsville, Dallas, Kenesaw mountain, Peach Tree creek and Jonesboro. In October it marched in the campaign against Hood and returned to Atlanta in time to start with Sherman's army on the 16th of November in its famous march to the sea, reaching Savannah in December. In January, 1865, it marched through the Carolinas to Goldsboro, in North Carolina, and participated in the battles of Bentonville and Fayetteville. After the surrender of Johnston's army, it marched to Richmond, Virginia, and thence to Washington, D. C., where, on the 8th of June, 1865, it was mustered out of service.

#### EIGHTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

In the month of August, 1862, three more companies were raised in this county.

The first was officered as follows: William Burns, captain;

B. F. Haven, first lieutenant, and John T. Stewart, second lieutenant. The second: John E. Williams, captain; G. Markland, first lieutenant; William Styer, second lieutenant. The third: B. W. Gifford, captain; William A. Hunt, first lieutenant; William T. Hutchinson, second lieutenant.

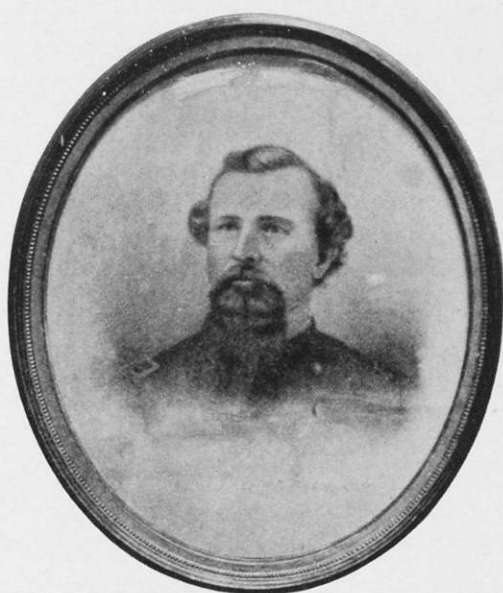
These companies were rendezvoused at Wabash and were organized, with other companies, into the Eighty-ninth Regiment, at Indianapolis, August 28, 1862. The companies were called F, D and G, respectively.

In the organization of the regiment, Charles D. Murray was made colonel and J. F. Henderson surgeon, both of Kokomo. In the October following, Harless Ashley, also of Kokomo, was appointed quartermaster.

Proceeding to Kentucky the regiment reinforced the garrison at Munfordsville. After a long fight and stubborn resistance it was compelled to surrender to superior numbers on the 16th of September.

The officers and men were paroled, and, after a furlough to their homes, the regiment reassembled at Indianapolis on the 27th of October. The order for their exchange being received, the regiment, on the 5th of December, proceeded to Memphis, and on the 21st of December was placed on duty at Fort Pickering, where it remained until the 18th of October, 1863. It was then transferred to the city of Memphis, where it was engaged on picket duty until the 26th of January, 1864, when it left on transports for Vicksburg, reaching there on the 31st of January. From this point it moved on to the Meridian raid, skirmishing with the enemy at Queen's Hill and at Meridian, where it arrived on the 14th of February.

After tearing up the Mobile & Ohio Railroad track it proceeded to Marion, camped a few days and returned by way of Canton to Vicksburg, reaching there on the 4th of March.



COL. C. D. MURRAY,  
Second Resident Attorney of Howard County.





The Eighty-ninth left Vicksburg on the 10th of March for the mouth of the Red river, reaching Semmesport on the 12th, and on the next day assisted in assaulting the fort, which was captured on the 14th. It moved from there to Alexandria, thence to Henderson's Hill, and there captured two hundred and seventy rebels and four pieces of artillery. The Eighty-ninth bore a conspicuous part in the battle of Pleasant Hill on the 9th of April, 1864.

On the 7th of May the regiment met the enemy at Bayou La Mourie, and after a sharp engagement charged and repulsed him. Resuming march toward the Mississippi, the regiment repulsed the enemy near Marksville, in a slight engagement, and on the 18th, at Smith and Norwood's plantation, had a severe contest and repulsed the enemy with great slaughter.

On the 19th the regiment embarked for Vicksburg, arriving on the 24th of May. It remained here until June 4th, when it embarked for Memphis, leaving this point for Colliersville. It now escorted a wagon train to Moscow and then moved to Lagrange, Tennessee. Here it remained till the 5th of July and marched to Pontock, Mississippi, arriving there on the 11th. Moving from here it engaged in the battle of Tupelo on the 14th of July. The regiment then returned to Memphis, where it remained till September, except a short expedition into Northern Mississippi in pursuit of Forest, made in August. On the 19th of September the regiment landed at Jefferson Barracks, Missouri, and on the 2d day of October started in pursuit of the rebel General Price.

In this expedition the regiment marched seven hundred and fifty miles and was in no engagement, but had the misfortune to lose Quartermaster Ashley, who, with two other officers, stopped to take dinner at a country house. Falling behind the column a short distance, they were captured by guerillas and murdered almost immediately after near the village of Greenton, Missouri.

This long march ended at St. Louis, where the regiment remained till the latter part of November and then took steamer to Nashville, where it arrived on the 30th, and on the 15th and 16th of the following month took part in the battle near that place. On the 17th, starting in pursuit of Hood's army, it marched to the Tennessee river, and on January 1, 1865, was transported to Eastport, Mississippi. Here it remained till February 9th, when it proceeded by steamer to Vicksburg and thence to New Orleans, arriving there on the 21st of February. From there it moved on transports to Dauphin Island, near Mobile, on the 8th of March, and on the 19th up Mobile bay by steamer to the mouth of Fish river, and thence to Doris Mills, where it remained till March 25th.

It then marched to a point between Spanish Fort and Blakely and participated in the siege until the fortifications were taken.

The regiment now went to Montgomery, Alabama, thence to Providence and then took transports to Mobile, where it was mustered out of service on the 19th of July, 1865. During its term of service the Eighty-ninth marched two thousand, three hundred and sixty-three miles on foot, traveled by steamer seven thousand, one hundred and twelve miles and by rail one thousand, two hundred and thirty-two miles, making total distance traveled ten thousand, seven hundred and seven miles.

#### COMPANY E, ELEVENTH CAVALRY.

Late in the fall of 1863 a company was recruited in this county, under the call of September 14th of that year.

The officers were: John M. Garrett, captain; William H. Sumption, first lieutenant, and Jesse A. Cate, second lieutenant. This company became Company E of the Eleventh Cavalry, One Hundred and Twenty-sixth Regiment, which perfected its organi-

zation at Indianapolis, March 1, 1864, the command being given to Robert T. Stewart.

On the first day of May the regiment left Indianapolis and moved by rail to Nashville, Tennessee. It arrived on the 7th of May and remained until the 1st of June, when it marched to Larkinsville, Alabama, and was placed on duty along the line of the Memphis and Charleston Railroad. The regiment was kept on this duty until the 16th of October, when it marched back to Nashville, where it was mounted and sent to the front. It was actively engaged in the campaign in front of Nashville in November and December, and after the defeat of Hood's forces pursued him as far as Gravelly Springs, Alabama. It was then dismounted and placed on duty until February 7, 1865, when it crossed the Tennessee river to Eastport, Mississippi, and remained there until the 12th of May. In obedience to orders the regiment embarked on a steamer for St. Louis, arriving May 17th. After being remounted it marched to Rolla, Missouri, and from there to Fort Riley, Kansas, where it was engaged in guarding the Santa Fe route across the plains with headquarters at Cottonwood Crossing. From this place it marched to Fort Leavenworth, arriving September 11th.

On the 19th of September the regiment was mustered out of service in compliance with telegraphic orders received from the general commanding the Department of Missouri. It arrived at Indianapolis on the 26th of September, partook of a sumptuous dinner and was publicly welcomed at the State House. The regiment was then marched to Camp Carrington, paid off and discharged.

#### ONE HUNDRED AND THIRTIETH REGIMENT.

During the winter of 1863-4 the One Hundred and Thirtieth Regiment was recruited from the Eleventh district with headquar-

ters at Camp Stilwell. This camp was located on the beautiful grounds just east of the C. and C. railroad and south of the residence of Milton Garrigus. T. N. Stilwell, of Anderson, was appointed commander of the post. Company A of this regiment was composed wholly of Howard county volunteers, who elected Elijah W. Penny captain, John B. Littler, first lieutenant, and William S. Birt second lieutenant.

This regiment left its camp in Kokomo on the 16th of March for Nashville, Tennessee. On the 5th of April it marched from this place to Charleston, Tennessee, where it arrived on the 24th. On the 3d of May it broke camp and on the 9th first came into the presence of the enemy at Rocky Face Ridge. From this time until the 15th of May the regiment was engaged in a continual series of skirmishes, terminating in the decisive battle of Resaca, during which the regiment repelled a charge of the enemy. After the battle it joined in the pursuit; skirmishing was constant as day followed day. The rain fell in torrents and the men were destitute of shelter, and for a long time short of rations. On the 17th of June the regiment was engaged with the enemy at Lost Mountain and on the 22d at Pine Mountain. On the 27th it drove the rebels into their works at Kenesaw Mountain. It next encountered the enemy near Decatur, drove him beyond its limits and destroyed the railroad. It took a full share in the siege of Atlanta and on the 29th of August was engaged in the battle of Jonesboro. From the 4th of October the regiment was in pursuit of Hood until the 15th of December, when the battle took place in front of Nashville, lasting two days and resulting in the extinction of Hood's army. Joining in the pursuit, the regiment pushed rapidly on until the 27th, when it went into camp at Columbia. On the 5th of January, 1865, the regiment marched to Clifton and embarked for Cincinnati, Ohio, and thence to Washington City by rail. Embarking on steamer at

Alexandria, the regiment sailed to Fort Fisher, North Carolina, and disembarked.

From Fort Fisher the regiment embarked for Morehead City and thence went by rail to Newbern, North Carolina. On the 8th of March the enemy was encountered at Wise's Forks, and abandoned the field in great confusion.

The One Hundred and Thirtieth Regiment took a prominent part in this engagement and moved immediately after its close to Kingston, and on the 20th of March moved to Goldsboro. Leaving this place, it went to Smithfield, and thence to Raleigh, where it arrived April 14th. From Raleigh the regiment moved to Greensboro, thence to Charlotte, where it went into camp. During the summer and fall of 1865 the regiment was employed in guard duty at Charlotte. On the 2d of December, 1865, the regiment was mustered out of service at this place and arrived at home on the 13th. Upon its arrival it was greeted with a public reception. Its members on receiving final payment and discharge, left for their homes.

#### ONE HUNDRED DAY MEN.

On the 28th of April, 1864, Mr. T. C. Phillips received the following telegram:

"Twenty thousand volunteers to serve one hundred days in the army of the United States are called for from Indiana. Will you please consult with patriotic citizens of your county and take such steps as will insure the raising of the men as speedily as possible? Plan of organization by mail today. By order of the Governor.

"WILLIAM H. SCHLATER, Colonel and Military Secretary."

#### ONE HUNDRED AND THIRTY-FIFTH AND ONE HUNDRED AND THIRTY-SEVENTH REGIMENTS.

Harrison Stewart, who had been one of the first to volun-



teer in the three months' service, immediately began to recruit a company under this call.

Failing to raise a full company, the men from this county were consolidated with a part of a company from Montgomery county, and became Company I of the One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Regiment. Mr. Stewart was commissioned first lieutenant. This regiment departed for Tennessee in the latter part of May, 1864. In a few days after the organization of the above company another full company reported ready for service with B. Busby captain; Milton Garrigus, first lieutenant, and Daniel G. Wilkins, second lieutenant. This company proceeded at once to Indianapolis and became Company C of the One Hundred and Thirty-seventh Regiment. In the organization of the regiment Mr. Garrigus was promoted adjutant. This regiment also proceeded to Tennessee. Both regiments on arriving at Nashville were assigned to duty along the lines of the railroad used by General Sherman for the transportation of supplies to his army, then advancing on Atlanta. Both these regiments served beyond the period of one hundred days, and returned to Indianapolis, where they were finally discharged from service.

#### COMPANY I, ONE HUNDRED AND FORTY-SECOND REGIMENT.

At the expiration of his term of service in the One Hundred and Thirty-seventh Regiment Milton Garrigus at once set about organizing another company with headquarters at Indianapolis. A few men from this county joined this company, which, when organized, became Company I of the One Hundred and Forty-second Regiment, which enlisted for one year under the call of July, 1864. Mr. Garrigus was commissioned captain and Timothy Scott second lieutenant.

#### THE FINAL ENLISTMENT.

Harrison Stewart recruited the last company raised in the

county. This was Company H of the One Hundred and Fifty-third Regiment. The officers were: Harrison Stewart, captain; Aquilla Myers, first lieutenant, and Henry B. Stewart, second lieutenant. This regiment was organized at Indianapolis on the 1st of March, 1865, and left on the 5th for Nashville, but was stopped at Louisville by order of General Palmer and sent to Russellville, where it was sent out in detachments to Hopkinsville, Bowling Green and other points in that section of country.

Company H was at different times engaged in fighting guerrillas, but sustained no losses. On the 16th of June the regiment returned to Louisville and was assigned to duty at Taylor Barracks, where it remained until September 4, 1865, when it was mustered out of service.

It was publicly welcomed home at Indianapolis on the 6th in the Capitol grounds. Speeches were made by General Mansfield, Hon. John H. Farquar and Colonel Nelson Trusler.

#### MORGAN'S RAID IN INDIANA AND OHIO.

Early in July, 1863, General John Morgan with his guerrilla bands of soldiers crossed the Ohio river from Kentucky into southern Indiana, creating intense excitement throughout Indiana, many being apprehensive he would come as far north as Indianapolis, burning and destroying property as they went.

He had a small force and the rapid gathering of the citizen soldiery of the state made it exceedingly unsafe for him, and turning to the east, he went into Ohio and sweeping around Cincinnati, attempted to recross the Ohio above Cincinnati.

On July 10, 1863, the following telegram was received here from the Governor:

"T. C. Phillips, Kokomo, Ind.:

"I want all the available force from your county brought to

this city at the earliest possible moment. Come organized if possible. Organization, however, can be completed here and arms furnished. Please send runners over the country and inform all the people. Answer what you can do. Bring blankets.

"OLIVER P. MORTON."

This telegram was received at 10 o'clock a. m. on Friday and at 1 p. m. over one hundred men got aboard the train for Indianapolis and about three hundred followed on Saturday. After an organization was completed at Indianapolis it was learned that Morgan had crossed into Ohio. When the Indiana troops were asked if they were willing to follow the rebels into another state every man from Howard responded in the affirmative.

Had the troops been hastened forward immediately the Howard county boys might have had the honor of helping capture the guerilla chieftain at Hamilton, Ohio, but when they arrived at that place they learned that Morgan had crossed the railroad at Glendale only an hour before. They proceeded to Cincinnati and arrived at home Friday evening.

#### BOUNTIES.

As the war progressed calls for more men for the service had been issued; in addition losses by battle, sickness and exposure had to be made good by recruiting new men for the old regiments until the number of men of military age in Howard county had been so depleted that it was no longer possible to secure the number of men wanted by asking for patriot volunteers. Other counties had the same conditions and experience and were hiring men to enlist by paying bounties.

It therefore became necessary for Howard county to do the

same else she would lose her own men, who would go elsewhere to enlist, attracted by the bounties being paid.

At a special session in July, 1862, the county commissioners had appropriated five thousand dollars as a bounty to volunteers, and at their regular meeting in September following five thousand dollars more were appropriated.

To raise this fund a tax of twenty cents on each one hundred dollars of taxable property was levied. This action was strongly criticised by soldiers in the field, who had gone at the first calls without bounty, and were thus taxed for a fund that was to increase the pay of those who had enlisted more than a year afterward, and which, to the amount of their taxes, at least, diminished the pay of the earlier volunteers.

About the same time, for the purpose of determining the quota or equitable share of soldiers to be furnished by each county under the calls for more troops, a census or militia enrollment of the men of military age (between eighteen and forty-five) was made. The first week in September the enrollment of the militia was completed. The enrolling commissioner, Rawson Vaile, with Corydon Richmond, examining surgeon; J. W. Cooper, provost marshal, and the eleven deputy commissioners for the townships of the county, met at the clerk's office to decide on applications for exemptions from the draft.

The attendance was large and the examination lasted several days. Seventeen months of war had worked a great change. In the beginning men had been eager to enlist and many young men under eighteen years of age had evaded this requirement and gone into the service; now men were anxiously seeking to be excused for some disability.

The following table shows the number enrolled in each town-

ship, the number exempt, the number now in service, and also those conscientiously opposed to bearing arms:

| Townships.     | Enrolled militia. | Number exempt. | Number of volunteers. | Number conscientiously opposed. |
|----------------|-------------------|----------------|-----------------------|---------------------------------|
| Center .....   | 323               | 70             | 205                   | ..                              |
| Jackson .....  | 74                | 10             | 42                    | 1                               |
| Harrison ..... | 158               | 15             | 76                    | 9                               |
| Clay .....     | 108               | 19             | 44                    | ..                              |
| Taylor .....   | 181               | 31             | 150                   | 6                               |
| Ervin .....    | 331               | 71             | 73                    | ..                              |
| Monroe .....   | 171               | 48             | 57                    | 56                              |
| Union .....    | 200               | 31             | 81                    | ..                              |
| Honey Creek.   | 123               | 59             | 50                    | ..                              |
| Howard .....   | 182               | 28             | 70                    | 18                              |
| Liberty .....  | 200               | 46             | 54                    | 35                              |
| <hr/>          |                   |                |                       |                                 |
| Totals...      | 2,051             | 428            | 902                   | 125                             |

This tabular statement shows that at least one-third of Howard county's military strength was already in the field in September, 1862.

In October, 1864, Center, Harrison and Ervin townships raised enough money by voluntary subscriptions to raise a sufficient sum to hire volunteers to fill their quota and thus escape the draft of that date.

The amount raised by each township was about ten thousand dollars.

#### BOUNTIES IN 1865.

A meeting was held at James Hall, in Kokomo, on Saturday afternoon, January 7, 1865, and organized by calling Michael

Thompson, of Jackson township, to the chair and appointing A. B. Walker, of Center, secretary.

At this\*meeting the following resolutions were adopted with slight opposition:

WHEREAS, The President of the United States has called for three hundred thousand more men and has limited the time of raising them by volunteering to the 15th of February next, and

WHEREAS, The governor of Indiana has permission to raise eleven new regiments in this state, and the time for raising the same has been limited to the 7th of February next, and

WHEREAS, The citizens of other counties are moving actively in the matter by paying liberal bounties, by appropriations from their county commissioners, thus securing for themselves the available men who are in their own midst as well as in other localities, thereby rendering it entirely out of the question and impossible for those counties not paying a local bounty to secure any credits whatever, thus leaving all such counties one way only to fill their quotas, and that by draft, and

WHEREAS, It is the opinion and sense of this meeting that it is the surest, most reliable, equitable and expeditious way of raising a fund to pay a local bounty to have our county commissioners make an appropriation. Thus making the burden of this work in which all should be interested fall equally upon all in proportion to the ability of each individual to pay. Therefore, be it

*Resolved*, By this meeting, that we hereby request our county commissioners to make an appropriation of a sufficient sum of money to pay a local bounty of three hundred dollars to each and every volunteer necessary to fill the quota of this county.

In a few days after this meeting the county commissioners were called together by the auditor, but after a consultation adjourned without taking any action whatever excepting to adjourn until Feb-



ruary 6th. In the meantime the Governor had extended the time for raising the required number of troops a few days. Large bounties were being paid in adjoining counties and our boys were leaving and volunteering elsewhere. The people were becoming thoroughly aroused and alarmed, and on Monday morning, February 6th, the day appointed by the commissioners to meet again in special session, at a very early hour the people began to flock into Kokomo in great numbers, highly excited over the prospect of a draft. They saw that Howard county would be depopulated and preferred taxation rather than that their farms should lie uncultivated for want of help. A meeting of the people convened at an early hour in James Hall, the largest in the city, and it was crowded to its utmost capacity. Upon a vote being taken only four persons voted against paying a county bounty. The commissioners were present at this meeting and seeing that the people were almost of one mind, at once held a meeting and placed upon record the following order:

It is this day ordered by the commissioners of Howard county, Indiana, that an appropriation of ninety-eight thousand dollars be and the same is hereby made and ordered for the purpose of raising a local bounty of four hundred dollars to each and every volunteer who may enlist in the military service of the United States under the call of the President of the United States for three hundred thousand men, bearing date December 19, 1864.

This appropriation shall be made in county orders, signed and issued by the auditor of said county, and in sums ranging from ten dollars to one hundred dollars each. Said orders to be paid within one year or as soon thereafter as the money to pay the same can be collected for that purpose by taxation. This appropriation to be paid to the several townships in proportion to the number of men required from each township to fill said call. And if the entire quota of said county shall not be filled by volunteers then the num-

ber that have volunteered to be apportioned to the several townships in proportion to the number of men required from each.

It is further ordered that the county auditor aforesaid shall issue said orders to regular appointed agents of each and every township of the county, when they shall deposit with the auditor a certificate or receipt that money enough has been collected to cover the amount of the order or orders called for by said township, provided, however, that if volunteers wish to take orders in lieu of money they have that privilege.

It is further ordered that all volunteers obtained from other than Howard county are to be credited to the several townships in proportion to the quotas required. It is further ordered that Ithamer Russell be appointed to receive said fund and disburse the same whenever certificates are presented showing that volunteers have been received and mustered into service and credited to Howard county under this call.

Signed: David Greason, Jerome Brown, John Moulder, County Commissioners.

The following tabular statement shows the amounts expended for local bounties, for relief of soldiers' families and for miscellaneous military by the county of Howard and the several townships:

|                            | Bounty.   | Relief.  |
|----------------------------|-----------|----------|
| Howard county .....        | \$108,000 | \$15,000 |
| Center township .....      | 11,000    | 10,000   |
| Clay township .....        | 2,870     | 1,500    |
| Ervin township .....       | 24,550    | 2,065    |
| Harrison township .....    | 12,500    | 1,550    |
| Howard township .....      | .....     | 550      |
| Honey Creek township ..... | 7,000     | 830      |
| Jackson township .....     | 3,000     | 450      |

|                        |           |          |
|------------------------|-----------|----------|
| Liberty township ..... | 17,030    | 700      |
| Monroe township .....  | 10,500    | 1,250    |
| Taylor township .....  | .....     | 850      |
| Union township .....   | 4,915     | 1,375    |
| Totals .....           | \$201,365 | \$36,120 |

## DRAFTS.

On Monday, October 6, 1862, the first draft took place in this county, under the supervision of Rawson Vaile, commissioner, as follows: Ervin township, 18 men; Liberty township, 5 men; Clay township, 1 man; total, 24 men.

Those who were conscientiously opposed to bearing arms, having been excused, though able-bodied, from actual military service, were regarded, so far as the draft was concerned, as separate communities, and were required to furnish the same per cent. of the whole number of able-bodied men as had been furnished by other citizens of the government. The average number of volunteers and men drafted for actual service was about forty per cent. of the whole number of those not exempt from actual military service.

Consequently the government saw fit to draft forty per cent. of the conscientious ones, and assessed the commutation fee of two hundred dollars each. Their names were placed in a separate box and drawn as follows: Ervin township, 17; Monroe township, 23; Harrison township, 4; Taylor township, 3; Howard township, 8; Liberty township, 14; Union township, 6; Jackson township, 1; Honey Creek township, 9; total, 75.

On the 26th and 27th of October, 1864, a second draft took place at Kokomo for six townships. The following was the result by townships, being double the number of men necessary to fill the

quota of each: Clay, 18 men; Honey Creek, 28 men; Jackson, 22 men; Liberty, 66 men; Monroe, 68 men; Union, 78 men. Howard and Taylor were exempt from this draft because they already had more than their quota of men in the field. And Center, Harrison and Ervin, as stated under bounties, raised enough money by subscription to hire their quotas filled.

## CLOSE OF THE WAR.

On the 9th of April, 1865, overtaken and seeing no hope of escape, General Lee agreed to surrender. On the morning of the 10th the story of Appomattox reached Howard county and fairly set the people wild with joy. The Tribune of April 13, 1865, said:

"Last Monday was that 'happy day' that the people have been singing about for several years. It was the happiest day that the people of this generation ever experienced. The enthusiasm extended over the entire country and the people everywhere rejoiced.

"Our town was all ablaze on Monday night. Bonfires lighted up the streets; thousands of burning candles were in the windows. Old and young were on the streets; gentlemen congratulated each other. Old enemies met and buried the past. Ladies sang patriotic songs, and Rev. Mr. Jenkins, Elder Hobbs and others made brief speeches. Everybody felt good, glorious and festive. At a late hour the greater number of those on the streets began to move homeward, feeling just as happy as they well could feel, while many went in out of the cold and kept up their rejoicing until the early hours of the morning. It was indeed a glorious day and evening, made glorious by the brilliant achievements of our gallant army on Sunday, the 9th of April. Hurrah for the Fourth of July, the 9th of April! Yankee Doodle and Yankee army."

Before the week ended this greatest rejoicing was turned into the deepest mourning the country ever knew. On the evening of April 14th President Lincoln was assassinated. On the 19th of April, 1865, the day set apart by the government for the funeral ceremonies of this great and good man, the Rev. C. Martindale was selected by the people of this community to preach a befitting and appropriate sermon, which he did in the Methodist Episcopal church in Kokomo, choosing the text: "Clouds and darkness are round about Him, righteousness and judgments are the habitation of His throne."

In his closing remarks he said: "On this memorable occasion we should resolve to live for God and humanity. Let the memory of Lincoln and Washington arouse us to action; let the blood of the heroes of '76 and '61-64 cry in our ears; let the dangers and struggles of the past teach us lessons of wisdom. Especially let the murder of our beloved Chief Magistrate, Abraham Lincoln, arouse us to crush treason and slavery, and to teach us to trust the living God as the Ruler of our great nation. Four years ago Mr. Lincoln left his quiet home in the West to assume the great duties required at his hands, appealing to Heaven for help and asking the prayers of the pious. Assassins sought his life then, but God protected him till his work was done. Now he returns to his boyhood home again; though fallen, he goes a conqueror. He has freed four million bondmen and saved a nation, and now, amid sorrows such as were not felt at the death of Washington, he goes to his long, last repose, where the boom of the cannon, the tramp of the armed host, the groan of the bondman or the hand of the assassin shall not disturb his repose. Peaceful be his rest, quiet his repose. Softly whisper the winds of the West around the grave of Abraham Lincoln, the second Washington of America, and the world's great liberator."

## THE WELCOME HOME.

It seemed especially fitting that July 4, 1865, should be celebrated in a more than ordinarily impressive manner; the war was over, the country was reunited and many of the veterans had returned to their homes. It was therefore determined to combine the old-fashioned Fourth of July celebration with a formal welcome home of the brave men who had given it an added meaning.

Great preparations were made to make this a happy day to citizen and soldier. At 5 o'clock in the morning a loud report from the cannon on the public square reminded the people that the glorious day had dawned. Soon the city was astir; some villain had spiked the gun in the night or the exercises would have begun an hour sooner. By 9 o'clock the streets were crowded with people; at 10 o'clock a large procession under command of Colonel Willis Blanche marched to the grove on the east of the city followed by the artillery squad and a large concourse of citizens. Colonel Richmond, the chief marshal, called the assemblage to order and introduced the Rev. Martindale, who announced the old familiar hymn, "Am I a Soldier of the Cross?" which was sung with much spirit. Mr. Martindale then led in prayer and was followed by a national air by the band; and then the gallant Metsker, of the old Seventy-fifth, stepped forward and in a loud voice read the Declaration of Independence. Elder Hobbs was then introduced to the audience and delivered an eloquent oration. The Tribune of July 6 complimented the oration as being one of the finest ever delivered in the city. Elder Hobbs paid a glowing tribute to the memory of those who had fallen in defense of our liberties; and to those who had been spared to return he gave cheery welcome and said: "For all the grand results of the past four years, under God, we are indebted to the armies and navies under the Stars and Stripes. The soldiers have suffered



much in battle, in loathsome prisons and dreadful marches, but God gave them victory at last." The speaker concluded his address by repeating these lines of welcome, composed by himself:

"Thrice welcome, ye brave boys in blue,  
With your banners all torn yet true;  
Welcome, ye sons of patriot sires—  
Now rekindle the sacred fires—  
From year to year renew the flame,  
Until fair Columbia's name  
Shall be in every land revered,  
And shall on ev'ry sea be feared.  
Welcome, thrice welcome, all ye braves.  
This the land of our fathers' graves,  
A goodly land by them blood bought,  
Came to us, unearned, unsought;  
But now, bravely thro' freedom's war,  
You've borne their flag, nor lost a star."

After the address dinner was announced. Baskets of luxuries had been prepared in nearly every home in Howard county, and the committee had tastefully and conveniently arranged the tables, so that all could be accommodated. The soldiers and their families were first given places, and afterwards the citizens. This was a sumptuous repast, and all partook freely, and though hundreds were served, there was enough left for as many more. After dinner the crowd reassembled at the grounds and speeches were made by Judge Lindsay and Capt. Milton Garrigus. In the evening there was quite a display of fireworks and the cannon sent its echoes far into the night. All in all, it was a very patriotic and happy celebration.

## MEMORY OF ALL SOLDIERS REVERED.

The former observations upon the citizen soldiers of the War of 1812 and the Mexican war holds good for the citizens who were the soldiers of the Civil war. Our citizens delight to honor their memory; and the honorary service so auspiciously begun on this first Fourth of July after the war has been continued in the Memorial Day services—a day set apart to decorating the graves of those who have gone out of this life, and recounting again the brave deeds of all who served their country.

In the laying out of Crown Point Cemetery a beautiful circular mound was dedicated to the fallen heroes of our Civil war. In the Kokomo Dispatch the following notice is made: "At a special meeting of the common council on Tuesday evening, June 12, 1883, G. D. Tate introduced a resolution ceding to the county the round plat in Crown Point Cemetery, known as the Cenotaph ground, on condition that a suitable memorial monument be erected thereon which shall record the names of all soldiers who died in the Union service in the Civil war. The county commissioners voted on yesterday five thousand dollars in equal installments to apply to the purchase of the proposed cenotaph. The proposed cenotaph is to be erected at a cost of not less than ten thousand dollars. It is proposed to raise the additional five thousand dollars by private contributions. The monument will be an honor to the county, as well as a grateful tribute to the dead who died for the flag. Let the good work go bravely on."

On February 4, 1885, the county commissioners let a contract to Whitehead & Wright, of Indianapolis, to construct a soldiers' monument according to plans submitted by R. F. Carter, of South Rye Gate, Vermont, for \$7,450, the work to be completed on or before May 25, 1886. The beautiful monument in the northwest

corner of Crown Point is the mute evidence of that work. The contract included all the required lettering and yet the condition that the names of all Union soldiers who died in the service should be recorded thereon was not complied with.

Below is such a list, as nearly as can be ascertained, imperfect though it be:

Howard county soldiers were represented in the following regiments: Sixth, Eighth, Twelfth, Thirteenth, Fifteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-first (First Heavy Artillery), Twenty-sixth, Thirty-fourth, Thirty-sixth, Thirty-ninth (Eighth Cavalry), Forty-sixth, Forty-seventh, Fifty-first, Fifty-seventh, Sixtieth, Sixty-third, Seventy-third, Seventy-fifth, Seventy-seventh (Fourth Cavalry), Seventy-ninth, Eighty-sixth, Eighty-seventh, Eighty-ninth, Ninetieth (Fifth Cavalry), Ninety-ninth, One Hundred and Twenty-sixth (Eleventh Cavalry), One Hundred and Thirtieth, One Hundred and Thirty-first (Thirteenth Cavalry), One Hundred and Thirty-fifth, One Hundred and Thirty-seventh, One Hundred and Fortieth, One Hundred and Forty-second, One Hundred and Fifty-third, One Hundred and Fifty-fifth, Twenty-eighth (Colored), Eighth (United States Colored), and Seventeenth Battery.

#### SOLDIERS WHO DIED IN THE SERVICE.

Howard county's "roll of honor" is as follows: Thirteenth Infantry—William H. Bates, died at Indianapolis, July 14, 1861; Thomas Bogue, killed at Allegheny, December 13, 1861; John Burns, died June 6, 1862, of wounds received at Allegheny; Francis M. Hardesty, died at Cheat Mountain Pass, September 3, 1861; Daniel Helms, died at Suffolk, Virginia, November 3, 1862; Mark Helms, killed at Winchester, March 23, 1862; Jonathan Hockstedler, killed at Winchester, March 23, 1862; William Honner, died

at Folly Island, January 26, 1864; Eleazor Jones, died at Cheat Mountain Pass, September 19, 1861; William Rader, killed at Winchester, March 23, 1862; William Riffle, killed at Rich Mountain, July 11, 1861; George L. J. Ring, died at Beaufort, South Carolina, October 4, 1863; Benjamin Seward, killed at Foster's Farm, May 20, 1864; William Shirley, died February 19, 1862, of wounds received at Allegheny; John M. Simpson, died June 7, 1864, of wounds received at Cold Harbor.

Thirty-Fourth Infantry—John Brown, died at Nelson Barracks, Kentucky, February 22, 1862; Henry Brown, died at Buffalo, Kentucky, February 11, 1866; Adam Ferrell, died at Vicksburg, July 26, 1863; William Albertson, died at St. Louis, July 22, 1863; George Burns, died at Louisville, Kentucky, March 20, 1862; Theodore P. Butcher, died while on furlough, May 16, 1862; John Hale, died at Buffalo, Kentucky, February 11, 1862; Silas A. Hoover, died at Louisville, Kentucky, February 26, 1862; William J. Johnson, died at St. Louis, Missouri, February 12, 1863; William Linvill, killed at Champion Hill, May 16, 1863; Tobias M. Overholser, killed at Champion Hill, May 16, 1863; David Proud, died at Nelson Barracks, Kentucky, February 15, 1862; Thomas S. Terrell, died July 26, 1863, at Memphis, Tennessee; Hiram Van Horn, died at St. Louis, Missouri, October 13, 1862; Thomas P. Winterode, died at New Orleans, September 30, 1864.

Thirty-Ninth Regiment (Eighth Cavalry)—William R. Phillips, killed at Shiloh, April 7, 1862; Stephen D. Butler, killed at Chickamauga, September 20, 1863; Jacob Brown, died in prison at Florence, South Carolina, January 20, 1865; Elijah F. Colter, killed at Fairburn, Georgia, August 19, 1862; Henry B. Colter, killed at Cannelton, Georgia, September 10, 1864; Benjamin C. Davis, died September 5, 1864, of wounds; James P. Davis, died at Louisville, Kentucky, December 31, 1861; Herrick Hoback, died of wounds,

April 14, 1862; Milton Jones, died of wounds, September 9, 1863, at Stone River; Fauzy Julien, died January 23, 1863, of wounds received at Stone River; Thomas F. Julien, died at Nashville, Tennessee, September 14, 1862; William H. Linder, died April 27, 1862, of wounds received at Shiloh; George McKinsey, died at Nashville, July 11, 1864; Nicholas Mulvaney died at Savanna, Ga., March 16, 1865; Erwin W. Richardson, killed at Pulaski, September 27, 1864; Richard J. Ricks died at Louisville, Dec. 4, 1864; Charles Robertson, died at Nashville, September 5, 1863; John W. Shilling, died of wounds received at Stone River; William Stanley, died January 9, 1863, of wounds received at Stone River; Uriah Snyder, died at home, May 5, 1864; Ausborn E. Thompson, died at Louisville, February 28, 1862; Henry H. Thornburg, died at Hubbard's Cove, August 31, 1862; William F. Tyler, died at Nashville, September 22, 1864; Jeremiah Washburne, killed by bushwhackers, September 14, 1863; Nathaniel F. Whitaker, died at Murfreesboro, June 16, 1863; Samuel P. Witherow, died at Louisville, Kentucky, January 19, 1862.

Fortieth Infantry—John M. Baly, died at Jeffersonville, Indiana, January 7, 1865; William Burt, died at Camp Irving, Texas, August 14, 1865; Levi Ellis, died at Huntsville, Alabama, February 21, 1865; Louis W. Jones, died at Nashville, December 16, 1864; Joel Law, died January 23, 1865; Henry A. Pickering, died at Nashville, March 24, 1865; Samuel Scales, died at Louisville, February 18, 1865; William Smith, died of wounds at Nashville, December 1, 1864.

Fifty-Seventh Infantry—John Adamson, killed in battle at Stone River, December 31, 1862; John W. Adamson, veteran, killed in battle at Kenesaw Mountain, June 23, 1864; Joseph Arnold, died at Kokomo, Indiana, May 18, 1862; Isaac Browning, died at Paducah, Kentucky, May 26, 1862; George Campbell, veteran, died at Big

Shanty, Georgia, July 29, 1864; John L. Colvin, died at Camp Irwin, Texas, October 14, 1865; William Dimitt, veteran, died at Chattanooga, July 24, 1864; David H. Douglas, veteran, died at Memphis, April 28, 1865; Melvin C. Endicott, died at Corinth, Mississippi; Robert A. Gordon, killed at Resaca, Georgia, May 15, 1864; Andrew J. Harding, died November 16, 1862; John Hawkins, died at Quincy, Illinois, March 12, 1863; Joseph Higgins, killed at Pine Mountain, Georgia, June 15, 1864; Willis Hilton, died at Nashville, March 29, 1862; Andrew J. Langley, died at Chattanooga, Tennessee, March 10, 1864; Samuel Mathers, veteran, killed in battle at Kenesaw Mountain, June 18, 1864; Peter W. McReynolds, veteran, died at Louisville, Kentucky, August 24, 1864; Stephen A. Miller, veteran, died at Chattanooga, July 5, 1864, of wounds; Lewis Pike, veteran, lost on steamer Sultana, April 27, 1865; George T. Pike, veteran, killed near Nashville, December 16, 1864; Henry Ravel, died at Bardstown, Kentucky, March 30, 1862; Andrew Rhoads, killed in battle at Stone River, December 31, 1862; Lewis Snodderly, died of wounds in 1864; James Weaver, died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, April 13, 1863; George D. Winders, died at Nashville, January 13, 1863; James Yount, died June 4, 1863:

Seventy-Third Infantry—Henry H. Thornton, killed at Stone River, December 31, 1862.

Seventy-Fifth Infantry—Emisley Bright, died at Nashville, Tennessee, October 15, 1863; Francis M. Bryant died December 2, 1863; Eli Burris died at Gallatin, Tennessee, February 20, 1863; John G. Coate died at Richmond, Virginia, February 16, 1864; James Ellet, died at home, February 20, 1863, John Fay, died at Louisville Kentucky, December 7, 1863; George W. Henderson, died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, March 26, 1863; Jacob Hinkle, died at Gallatin, Tennessee, January 20, 1863; John M. Hodson, died at Nashville, Tennessee; Benjamin Huff, died at Nashville, Tennessee, November 21, 1863;



Henry Jones, died at Scottsville, Kentucky, January 5, 1863; Samuel McClure, died at Bowling Green, Kentucky, December 11, 1862; Henry Myers, died at Lebanon, Kentucky, September 5, 1862; Allen M. Paff, died at Louisville, Kentucky, October 11, 1862; John Smiley, died at New Albany, Indiana, October 30, 1862; Hiram Stephens, died at Gallatin, Tennessee, February 23, 1863; Thomas J. Stringer, died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, March 6, 1863; Richard Templin, died at home, February 28, 1864; James Thorington, died at Richmond, Virginia, February 21, 1864; Reuben Waldron, died at Gallatin, Tennessee, February 17, 1863; James B. Whisler, died at Atlanta, Georgia, November 1, 1863.

Eighty-Ninth Infantry—James L. Armantrout, died February 17, 1863; Francis M. Beard, died in Howard county, October 27, 1862; William H. Bishop, killed at Yellow Bayou, May 7, 1864; William R. Brener, died at Jefferson Barracks, Missouri, October 20, 1863; Jeremiah P. Brown, died June 3, 1864, from wounds; John Carpenter, died March 1, 1863; William J. Carter, died near Canton, Mississippi, March 1, 1864; Wesley Defenbaugh, died at Fort Pickering, Tennessee, June 22, 1863; Nathan M. Elmore, died of wounds received at Yellow Bayou, Louisiana, May 18, 1864; Harvey Earley, died April 10, 1863; Tilghman A. Farlow, died at Memphis, Tennessee, June 20, 1864; Alexander Fleming, died June 25, 1863; William H. Fritz, died July 29, 1863; Bedford W. Gifford, killed May 18, 1864, at Yellow Bayou, Louisiana; Thomas Gordon, died at Fort Pickering, Tennessee, February 23, 1863; Hugh Heathcoat, killed at Munfordsville, Kentucky, September 14, 1862; Nicholas Hughes, died at Fort Pickering, Tennessee, July 8, 1863; Richard M. Hughes, died at home January 10, 1863; William Hughes, died at Jefferson Barracks, Missouri, December 17, 1864; William R. Hulse, died at Memphis, Tennessee, July 10, 1864; William A. Hunt, killed June 23, 1864, by guerillas; Henry

T. Jennings, killed at Yellow Bayou, Louisiana, May 18, 1864; Reuben E. Johnson, died at Nashville, Tennessee, December 8, 1864; John M. Kane, died at New Albany, Indiana, September 28, 1863; Ulysses P. King, died at Fort Pickering, Tennessee, August 10, 1862; George E. Knoble, died January 19, 1863; Lewis Long, died at Memphis, Tennessee, December 16, 1862; Allen McDaniel, died August 15, 1864; Robert McReynolds, died at Memphis, Tennessee, January 18, 1864; John F. Martin died at Memphis, Tennessee, March 16, 1864; David Morris, died at Fort Pickering, Tennessee, August 30, 1863; LaFayette Morris, died at Woodsonville, Kentucky, October 24, 1862; Francis M. O'Dowd, died at Andersonville prison, August 9, 1864; Benjamin F. Oiler, died at Fort Pickering, Tennessee, May 26, 1863; Simon Peters, died at home, December 28, 1862; James W. Ploughe, died at Andersonville, Georgia, September 2, 1864; William H. Poff, died near Memphis, Tennessee, December 12, 1862; Allen Ramsey, died at Memphis, Tennessee, August 3, 1863; Erastus Ross, died at New Orleans, June 22, 1864, of wounds; Jesse Sanders, died at Memphis, Tennessee, September 23, 1864; Daniel Sheets, died July —, 1864; Adam Shepard, died November 15, 1862; John S. Springer, died at Memphis, Tennessee, June 5, 1864; Daniel W. Straughn, died September 18, 1863; William R. Low, August 9, 1864; Elijah E. Thrailkill, killed at Fort Pickering, Tennessee, April 27, 1863; Charles N. Tyler, died at New Orleans, March 11, 1865; Nathan Wickersham, died at home, August 7, 1863; Hugh Willits, died February 17, 1865, of wounds, in hospital at Nashville, Tennessee; William T. Wilson, died at home, October 18, 1862; William Yates, died May 18, 1863.

## NINETIETH REGIMENT (FIFTH CAVALRY).

The following were lost from the ranks of the Ninetieth Regiment: John V. Champion, killed in East Tennessee by bushwhack-

ers in 1864; John S. Holler, died in Andersonville prison in 1864; Augustus Q. Myers, killed at Rheatown, Tennessee, October, 1863; Jeremiah A. Starr, killed at Rheatown, Tennessee, October, 1863.

Ninety-Ninth Infantry—Noah Cate, died of wounds received August 15, 1864.

One Hundred and First Regiment—Wiley Bagwell, died at Bacon Creek, Kentucky, November 20, 1862; Tidell Rush, died at Danville, Kentucky, October 25, 1862; Barrett Spray, died at Munfordsville, Kentucky, December 16, 1862; George Sumption, died at Marietta, Georgia, October 6, 1862.

One Hundred and Eighteenth Infantry—Richard Bodle, died at Camp Nelson, Kentucky, January 5, 1864; Jefferson W. Carr, died at Camp Nelson, Kentucky, December 7, 1863; James L. Golding, died at Tazewell, Tennessee, December 14, 1863; Ezeriah Hutson, died at Knoxville, Tennessee, December 10, 1863; William J. Purois, died at Tazewell, Tennessee, January 12, 1864, of starvation; Emory Russell, died at Cumberland Gap, Tennessee, December 14, 1863; Milton E. Reiley, died at Powell River, Tennessee, January 26, 1864; Ovid Youngs, died at Indianapolis, Indiana, September 6, 1863.

One Hundred and Twenty-Sixth Regiment (Eleventh Cavalry)—Dawson M. Brown, died at Nashville, Tennessee, November 6, 1864; George W. Crewtherd, died at Indianapolis, Indiana, March 31, 1864; Isaac Carpenter, died at Louisville, Kentucky, February 12, 1865; John W. Cochran, died at Indianapolis, Indiana, March 5, 1864; Enoch Dale, died at Nashville, Tennessee, December 26, 1864; James Hutto, died at Louisville, Kentucky, May 2, 1865; Moses Hinkle, died at Nashville, Tennessee, December 26, 1864; James Hodson, died May 14, 1865; William King, died at Bellefonte Station, Alabama, July 7, 1864; William Lindley, died at Kokomo, Indiana, May 3, 1864; Henry M. Long, lost on Sultana, April 27, 1865;

Albert N. McCoy, died at Larkinsville, Alabama, June 20, 1864; Lloyd Pennington, died at Jeffersonville, Indiana, January 12, 1865; George B. Pennington, died at Nashville, Tennessee, March 13, 1865; Andrew J. Pierce, died at Nashville, Tennessee, November 6, 1864; Israel P. Pool, died at Nashville, Tennessee, October 22, 1864; Jacob Pool, died at New Albany, Indiana, March 4, 1865; Charles L. Summers, died at Nashville, Tennessee, December 22, 1864, of wounds; Robert Steward, died at Louisville, Kentucky, February 6, 1865.

One Hundred and Thirtieth Infantry—Thomas N. Armstrong, died November 28, 1864, of wounds; Thomas H. Endicott, killed near Atlanta, Georgia, August 5, 1864; William Elliot, died at Atlanta, Georgia, October 18, 1864; George Boffman, died at Louisville, Kentucky, April 17, 1865; John H. Denman, died at Nashville, Tennessee, December 15, 1864; Joseph Godfrey, died at Kingston, Georgia, August 15, 1864; William F. Havens, died at home February 29, 1864; Albert W. Hoke, killed by accident April 3, 1864; Nathan Maudlin, died at Chattanooga, Tennessee, June 4, 1864; Thomas O'Neil, died at Knoxville, Tennessee, September 16, 1864; William T. Rolston, died at Chattanooga, Tennessee, November 8, 1864; John T. Shepherd, died at Kingston, Georgia, June 5, 1864; Reuben J. Smith, killed at Nashville, Tennessee, December 15, 1864; Jesse Swinger, died at Marietta, Georgia, September 1, 1864; William White, Jr., died at Marietta, Georgia, August 20, 1864.

One Hundred and Thirty-first Regiment (Thirteenth Cavalry)—George M. Burns, died at Cahaba Prison, Alabama, January 5, 1865; Nicholas Tow, died at Mobile, Alabama, October 5, 1865.

One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Infantry—Baker Boffman (Baughman), died at Bowling Green, Kentucky, June 20, 1864.

One Hundred and Fortieth Infantry—Jonathan Berry, died at New Albany, Indiana, December 3, 1864.

One Hundred and Forty-second Infantry—John H. Golding, died at Nashville, Tennessee, April 17, 1865.

One Hundred and Fifty-third Infantry—William M. Floyd, died at Russellville, Kentucky, August 1, 1865; Levi Seward, died in Tipton county, August 18, 1865.

#### NUMBER OF MEN SENT BY HOWARD COUNTY.

Howard county sent into the field more than fifteen hundred men for service. Hundreds of these perished on the battlefields of the South or by the slower means of wounds or wasting diseases incident to the privation and exposures of the march and camp. The remnant who returned had sacrificed much of the vigor of their manhood for their country, but they had accomplished that for which they gave their service—a reunited country, built on solid foundations more than ever before. The right to secede was completely overthrown. The idea of the old confederation of states was gone, and instead we had an indivisible Union.

(See page 468 for addenda.)

---

#### INDUSTRIAL HISTORY.

Howard county is an agricultural county of the first class. Corn, wheat, oats, rye, potatoes and hay are produced in abundance.

Corn is the banner crop. The deep, black soil and the abundant rainfall and a growing season of just the right length combine to make this a good corn county. The various grasses—clover, timothy and blue grass—find a natural home here and produce sure and abundant crops of hay and afford excellent grazing, thus making this a good live stock country. As has heretofore been indi-



cated, in the beginning the possibilities only of our present high agricultural condition were here. These fertile soils were covered with heavy forests and, for much of the year, with water, too.

With much hard labor and great expense all these lands have been tile underdrained so that the land is not only drained of water but air is introduced into the soil, adding to its fertility. The forests have been cleared away until now a timber famine is almost in sight.

#### LUMBERING.

While the clearing has been going on the lumber business has been an important industry. For many years all the log and frame buildings were built in their entirety out of native timber and lumber—roofs were of oak clapboards or shaved walnut or poplar shingles, the frames and siding of yellow poplar lumber, the floors of ash lumber and the finish of black walnut lumber. This has continued until recent years, when the growing scarcity of native timber and the high prices of native lumber compelled the use of pine and cheaper materials. The use of the native lumber for so many years has saved the people of this county a very large sum of money.

For many years the shipping of lumber from the county, cut by local sawmills, was an important industry. Vast sums were realized from the sale of the walnut, poplar and ash lumber while that timber was being cut away; then another very large sum was received for the oak timber, as heading and lumber, and later still a considerable sum was received for the beech and sugar, and later still the despised water or soft elms are being exchanged for cash, omitting any mention of handle and hoop-pole timber.

The gross sum received from the sale of Howard county timber and saved by the people in using this timber for various domestic uses—buildings, fences, fuel, etc.—if accurately computed would



be a vast sum. This source of revenue is practically past, but is compensated for by well-cleared fields, fitted for the modern methods of cultivation, and the woodlands, thinned out and cleared of underbrush and affording excellent blue grass pasturage. There is little or no waste lands on the farms now, where some years since much of it was unused. Denser population and high-priced lands have tended toward more intensive and better farming.

#### DEVELOPMENT OF FARMS.

Perhaps there is no vocation in life in which there has been so much advancement all along the line as in the farm life in Howard county in the past sixty years. Then he sowed his wheat broadcast and plowed it in the cornfield with a single-shovel plow, or harrowed it in with an "A" harrow, if in a plowed field. He harvested it with a reap hook, threshed it with a flail or tramped it out with horses and blew out the chaff with a fanning mill; later he cut the grain with a cradle and threshed it with a "groundhog thresher" and cleaned it with a fanning mill, and a little later threshed it with a horse power separator. Several years later, when the fields were partly cleared of the stumps and roots, he began to use the modern method of sowing his grain with a drill and to cut it with machines but yet binding by hand and threshing with steam power separators, but doing all the work about the machine by hand—cutting the bands and feeding the grain into the machine by hand; measuring the grain into bags by hand, loading the grain into wagons by hand and stacking straw by hand—all hard, dusty work. Now he sows all his small grain with drills in fields cleared of stumps and roots. He pulverizes the soil with modern harrows and field rollers, all provided with spring seats. He harvests the grain with self-binders and puts off the sheaves in bunches for shocking, and threshes with

steam power machines that cut the bands and feed with self-feeders that elevate and weigh the threshed grain and dump it into wagons, ready to be hauled to market, and stacks the straw with an automatic wind stacker.

#### MODERN METHODS.

The present-day farmer would not know a jumping shovel plow should he meet one. Very few of them could cross off a field in straight furrows the proper width for corn rows, and to drop the corn into the crosses with three to four grains to the hill would be beyond his or her skill, and then to cover the corn with an old-fashioned hoe, among stumps and roots, would be the limit; and then to cultivate it with the single-shovel walking plow among roots, that too often would spring back and hit him on the shins, would precipitate a labor strike indeed. The modern farmer does none of these things. In the bright springtime, when the conditions are all right, he hitches three good horses to a modern breaking plow, drives out to a field where the memory of stumps and roots has almost faded away, and turns over the mellow soil and has nothing to suggest evil thoughts. And when the field is ready for planting he does not go out and cross it off with his single-shovel plow, but alone and unattended he hitches to his two-horse check row planter and plants twice as much in a day as did that force of five people in the elder day and does a better job; and when the green shoots are visible and can be seen across the field in the row, he drives out to the field with a riding cultivator and plows without fear of bodily injury.

When the clover blooms are more than half brown and the bloom has fallen from the heads of the timothy stalks, this farmer does not get down his rusty mowing scythe and, after grinding to a keen edge, with a long sandstone whetrock in his pocket go out to

the field and in the burning sunshine swing his scythe back and forth, cutting the heavy growth of grass and throwing it into swaths to be afterwards scattered for drying, occasionally stopping to whet his scythe with the whetrock. After the hay is cured he does not throw it into windrows with a fork and then pitch it on a wagon and afterwards pitch it into the mow.

#### HOW HAY IS NOW HARVESTED.

No. The modern farmer hitches to an up-to-date mower, mows a field quickly, hitches to a tedder, kicks it up so as to permit the air to pass through and dry it out quickly, and then backs his hay wagon up to a hay loader, hitches them together and drives around the field, while the loader gathers up the hay and delivers it on the wagon. After the wagon is loaded he drives to the barn and there a hayfork, drawn by horse power, picks up the hay from the wagon and deposits it in the mow.

When the summer is past and the wintry storms have come, this farmer does not wrap himself up as best he can, go out and harness up a team, restless with cold, and drive to the field, and, brushing the snow off of his shocks of fodder, load and haul them to a wood lot or the straw pile and scatter the fodder on the ground for the stock to pick over and make a meal of. No. Last fall, while the weather was pleasant, he canned many acres of green corn in his silo and now, while the cold and snow are without, he feeds his well-housed stock in their separate stalls with a feed which they thoroughly relish; and then, too, before the snow had fallen he had the shredder to tear his fodder into bits and blow it into mows in his barns convenient for feeding and where, under shelter and in the dry, he does his farm chores. He appreciates the value of warm, dry quarters for his stock and he largely has barns for all

his stock and thus feeds more economically and profitably. Not only has he made these wonderful advances in his industrial methods but in his social life as well. Once he was shut in at his farm house for months at a time, because of impassable roads; now a good, free gravel road passes the front gate of nearly every home. Once he often passed more than a week without receiving any mail and then only by going a long distance in bad weather; now the rural mail carrier brings it to his home every day except Sunday. Once he often passed more than a week without receiving any mail to or from neighbors; now any member of the family can, by stepping to an instrument on the wall, call up almost any one wanted, far or near. In the matter of schools, too, the countryside has been favored. Where a generation ago the scholars were compelled to dress for exposure and walked a mile, a mile and a half or two miles to school, in paths across field and through woods, returning in the evening over the same path and often through storm, now the well-equipped school wagon carries the scholars from the home to the school and from the school to the home again.

#### CONDITIONS ARE CHANGING.

As wonderful as has been the industrial advance of the past, the end is not yet. Our rich soils and high-priced lands suggest changes in the industrial methods of farming—changes that are already taking place; the canning factories and the city markets are making places for the small farmer and his intensive farming; the dairying industry is being rapidly developed and the farmer of today is giving attention to the problem of preventing soil exhaustion.

It is well that the conditions of the farming class are as favorable as they are, for because of natural resources the leading industry of Howard county must continue to be agriculture.

Before ever factories came into her midst, the farming community was engaged in the herculean task of making the present well-improved farms. Their present and prospective high state of culture forecast a condition of continued prosperity, where homes abound in comfort and contentment.

#### MERCANTILE LIFE.

Contemporaneous and almost inseparably connected with these industrial activities of the farm have been the mercantile enterprises of the county. These have kept pace with the demands of the time. The first stores or trading places were in keeping with the country, primitive establishment. The wants of the people were few and simple and their ability to buy quite limited. The purpose of the early merchants and manufacturers was to meet these simple wants. The first mill erected in the county was built in 1840. This was built just east of New London, on Little Honey creek. The Stone-braker mill was built in 1848. In various parts of the county grist-mills and sawmills and combination mills—grist and saw in one—were built from time to time as the demand seemed to justify. Nearly all of the early mills were water mills.

These mills have nearly all passed out of existence. David Foster was the first Kokomo merchant. Before coming to Kokomo he had a trading house at the boundary line, about twenty rods north of the crossing of that line by the Wild Cat pike. This house was a log house, stoutly built, with portholes in the walls, and contained two rooms, the storeroom being on the Seven-mile Strip side of the line and the counter over which he dispensed goods on the Reserve side. It is said this peculiar construction was to evade the law in selling whisky to Indians on government territory. John Bohan was the second merchant, coming here in 1844 from Ander-



son and commencing on the southeast corner of the square where the Kokomo Bank is now located. Other early merchants were Austin North, J. D. Sharp and Samuel Rosenthal.

At or near New London, Joshua Barnett was the first merchant, coming there in 1839. His stock of goods consisted of a few groceries, liquors and small notions that he could sell to the Indians. Soon after John Harrison came with a meager stock of goods, and, locating at Harrison's place, becoming the second trader in Monroe township. Charles Allison clerked for him in the spring of 1840, and thus began his business career in Howard county.

Burlington, in Carroll county, was the nearest village and trading point in the early history of the western part of the county. Because of the inconvenience of going so far to trade, Henry Stuart opened up a general store at or near Russiaville in 1842. His stock consisted of almost everything saleable—dry goods, groceries, hardware, etc. Mr. Stuart purchased his goods at Lafayette, Cincinnati and Chicago and transported them in wagons. The people had little money and made their purchases, for the most part, with "trade," exchanging ginseng, which grew abundantly in the wild state, wild meats, fur skins and honey. There appears to have been an abundance of wild honey in those early times. It is related of Joseph Taylor, who was afterwards sheriff of Howard county, that, when a young man, he had often carried a keg of wild honey, weighing sixty pounds, on horseback to Burlington.

Deer were also very plentiful, as Mr. Stuart had at one time piled up in his cabin one hundred "saddles" or pairs of deer horns. Once he purchased a barrel of strained honey of Vincent Garner, a pioneer settler of that community. Mr. Stuart in turn took his trade to Lafayette and exchanged or traded it for goods. At one time a botanical doctor engaged Mr. Stuart to procure him five hundred pounds of yellow root and nerve vine. This afforded the



women an opportunity to earn some money. Mr. Stuart traded with the Indians, and the first wagon ever seen at Kokomo carried Mr. Stuart's goods, which he traded to the Indians. It required two days for Mr. Stuart and his man to make the trip, and they spent only two hours in the Indian town. Mr. Stuart's store was not really in Russiaville, being just outside on the northwest. Martin Burton was the first merchant really within the limits of Russiaville.

#### FIRST TRADING POINTS.

Alto was the earliest trading place in Harrison township. R. Cobb was the first merchant there; Milos Judkins was the first shoemaker, and William P. Judkins was the first cabinetmaker. This was in 1848, or early in 1849; and in a short time there were three stores there stocked with well-selected goods, and three cabinet shops were operating prosperously. It is also said that there was as much business done there as in Kokomo at that time. Greentown was the first trading point in Liberty township, and its beginning was largely due to the demand of the neighborhood for a convenient trading point. It was laid out in 1848 on the site of an old Indian town known as Green Village, named thus, it is said, because the Indians having cut off the timber on the site of the village, grass had grown up, making a green landscape in contrast with the dark forest all around, and the name Greentown was adopted for the white man's town. The first merchants were L. W. Bacon and his father in a double hewed log house built by them on the northeast corner of the intersection of Main and Meridian streets. They stocked their store room with a miscellaneous assortment of merchandise to the amount of about one thousand dollars and sold goods for two years. A little later C. O. Fry erected another store room on the southwest corner of the same street intersection. Dr. Barrett

bought an interest in Fry's store and together they continued in business for several years. These were soon followed by others and Greentown soon became an important trading point.

Jerome had its origin in much the same way. It is said of the early settlers in the vicinity of Jerome that the greater amount of trading during the early days was done at Marion, Jonesboro, Peru, Logansport and Noblesville, some of the first settlers going as far as Indianapolis for their merchandise.

Flour and meal were obtained from those places in the summer time; but during the winter seasons when the condition of the early roads precluded the possibility of travel, many families manufactured their own breadstuffs by hand, crushing the grain in a rude mortar made by hollowing out the top of a stump. One of those pioneers has said, "We were compelled to go to Jonesboro and Somerset on the Mississinnewa and to points on the White river and the Wabash for grinding. It was a long, winding bush road through the woods, across the sloughs. We took mostly corn, as scarcely any wheat was raised in the county. The writer remembers riding on horseback to Somerset purposely to get flour for a house-raising, which he bought there and returned with before he slept after leaving town."

#### IN HONEY CREEK TOWNSHIP.

From a description of pioneer life in Honey Creek township we are told, "Corn must be carried fourteen miles on horseback to have it converted into meal. Two miles below Burlington was the nearest mill—the old 'Crummel mill.' Often did the pioneer go six miles farther down Big Wildcat to the 'Adams mill.' It required all of one day and the most part of the following night to make the trip. Doubtless a modern Honey Creek youth of twelve years would feel some timidity in undertaking such an errand through a wolf-

infested wilderness." The founding of the early towns and the building of the first mills were prompted more by necessity than the desire of industrial gain, and so it is said of Jerome that the chief cause which led to its founding was a general desire on the part of the community for a trading point, there being no town nearer than Jonesboro on the east and Russiaville and New London on the west. The immediate outgrowth of this demand was the establishment of a small store and a blacksmith shop in 1847, which formed the nucleus around which several families located. Soon after Hampton Brown laid out the village and named it Jerome in compliment to his son Jerome. Thomas Banks bought a lot and built a store house and became the first merchant. He stocked his room with a miscellaneous assortment of merchandise to the value of about five hundred dollars and sold goods for three years, selling out to Joel and C. Murphy.

Goff & Allen erected a hewed log store building in 1853 and engaged in merchandising for four years, carrying a large stock valued at three thousand five hundred dollars. They sold out to Harvey Brown.

West Liberty had its origin in the erection of a large water mill near its northeastern limits; this and a blacksmith shop led Moses Jones to plat a town site in the latter part of 1849.

#### FIRST BUSINESS HOUSE.

Moses Rich erected the first business house in 1850. This was a log building sixteen by twenty feet. Rich carried a stock valued at one thousand dollars, and did a good business. He carried on the business for twelve years. David Macy erected the second store building and was a prominent merchant and operated an extensive store for five years, when he closed out and left the place. Syc-

more Corners had its origin in the building of what is now the "Clover Leaf railroad" and was laid out in 1881 by O. P. Hollingsworth. Allen Quick and Frank Hoon were the first merchants, who fitted up the old frame school house for a store room soon after the building of the railroad. This is a good shipping and trading point.

Vermont was laid out in 1849 by Milton Hadley, who had obtained a part of float section No. 7. He appears to have been a man of considerable enterprise and ambition and in platting Vermont he laid out a very pretentious town, with a public square and a large number of town lots clustered around the square. A white oak tree standing on the bluff of Wild Cat was the starting point for the survey of this future metropolis of Howard county. The town plat suggests that he considered his town site so superior to any other that possibly others would appreciate it and thus would be influenced to change to the town he had planned. This hope, if hope it was, was disappointed, and after a brief and feeble existence the town ceased to be and its site is now cultivated fields and the white oak doubtless, ere this, like the town whose sentinel it was, has disappeared. Charles Ellison was the first merchant of this town, carrying on a grocery store and a dramshop. His dramshop was the resort of the tough characters of the surrounding country and gained for the place a bad reputation. Benjamin Jackson and John Colescott were other early merchants. After the building of the Clover Leaf railroad, to the north of the old town, a station and trading point was established on the railroad a short distance northwest of it.

#### LAI D OUT NEW LONDON.

New London was laid out in 1845 by John Lamb and Reuben Edgerton. At that time there were three houses, or cabins, in the

town. Jonathan Hawarth was at that time engaged in the sale of dry goods and groceries. He was succeeded by Isaac Ramsey. Soon after the organization Richard Nixon came to the town and engaged in the mercantile business. He remained there many years.

Fairfield was laid out in 1849 by John J. Stephens in anticipation of the building of the I. & P. Railroad, which had been surveyed through that point some time previously. On the completion of the railroad the place became a prominent shipping point and had a reputation of being one of the best shipping points and markets on the line between Peru and Indianapolis for a number of years; but because of the building of the Pan Handle railroad on the east, and the improvement of the highways leading into Kokomo, much of the trade has been diverted to other points.

Bundy & Johnson were the first merchants in a little house west of the railroad. They did a fair business on a stock valued at \$500. Overman & Stout started the second store. They erected a small storeroom just northeast of the railroad. After two years their stock was closed out. Thompson & Evans did the largest mercantile business of any firm in Fairfield. Their storeroom was on the west side of the railroad and on the south side of the street. They also operated the large warehouse and elevator erected by Evans & Fortner.

#### THE FIRST WAREHOUSE.

The first warehouse was built by Bundy & Robinson and was in the south part of town and on the west side of the railroad tracks. Tampico was laid out in 1852 by Ephraim Trabue. Spencer Latty was the first merchant. Terre Hall was also laid out in 1852 by Asa Parker. Cable & Osborne were the first merchants, dealing in a miscellaneous assortment of articles. Both towns were the outgrowth of the location and building of the P., C. & St. L. Rail-



road and both had, in course of time, the accessories—blacksmith shops and sawmills.

Cassville was laid out in 1848 by William and Nathan Stanley. Its origin was the survey for the construction of the I. & P. Railroad, and after the building of the railroad for a time had quite a reputation as a trading point. The first stock of goods was brought to the place by John and David Evans, who erected a good frame storehouse near the railroad and did a good business for four years and then sold out to Samuel Martindale.

Poplar Grove was first settled in 1847 by Caleb Coate and the merchants were Coate & Morris, who conducted a dry goods and grocery store.

These various trading points have been continued to the present time, with two or three exceptions, and outside of Russiaville and Greentown have just about held their own. A few points have been added as Plevna and Phlox and Guy in the east, and Kappa, Ridgeway and West Middleton in the west end.

Russiaville and Greentown, in the opposite ends of the county, are flourishing and growing towns.

#### SAWMILLS BECOMING SCARCE.

Reference has already been made to the lumber industry of the county. In the years that are past the great sawdust piles in frequently recurring intervals bore silent witness to the fact that here had been a sawmill. Since the exhaustion of the timber these mills are few in number and are found at the towns. It is therefore considered not worth while to make further reference to them.

The other class of mills, for grinding flour and meal, instead of going out of use have much increased their usefulness. Many of those early mills, with their simple and meager beginnings, have



gone on from one improvement to another until they are now up-to-date and prosperous mills; while the decaying and falling framework and the abandoned millraces mark the places where others were busy in a former generation, and it is deemed worth while to note these beginnings and to rehearse a history of that which is past but remains to the present.

The Stonebraker mill, after sixty years, still does business at the old stand and is one of the best-known objects in the county. The mills and the various milling industries in the vicinity of New London, which were dependent upon the water power of Honey creek, have long since ceased to exist. The past sixty years have witnessed a wonderful shrinkage in the water supplies of the county.

#### SOME OF THE FIRST MILLS.

At Russiaville the first gristmill was built out of logs on Squirrel creek, near the present site of the cemetery, and was a mere corn cracker and was operated by water power.

In 1852 Martin Burton built the first flouring mill in Russiaville. At first it was a water power mill, but in a few years was changed to a steam mill. In 1870 it was destroyed by fire, but was rebuilt and has been improved until it is up-to-date and a good industry.

The first gristmill in Harrison township was built by James Brooks just south of Alto in 1848. It was a small corn-cracker and wheat mill. A part of the old frame is still standing and a portion of the millrace is yet in existence. In 1850 Samuel Stratton erected a gristmill in connection with his sawmill on Little Wild Cat northwest of the site of West Middleton.

#### THE WEST MIDDLETON STEAM FLOURING MILL.

Early in 1882 Samuel and Joseph Stratton and Amos C. and John Ratcliff formed a company and began the erection of a steam

flouring mill at West Middleton. It is a brick building, built upon a heavy stone foundation. The body of the building is thirty-six by forty-eight feet and is four stories high. It is provided with a very complete outfit for handling and cleaning wheat and making flour and cornmeal. The original cost was ten thousand dollars, and it had a capacity for seventy-five barrels per day.

The first mill in Taylor township was a handmill for grinding corn and was built and owned by Nathan C. Beals, who lived about one mile northeast of the site of Fairfield. This mill he made out of two boulders taken from his farm in Section 20. The lower stone was fixed, and the upper stone was revolved on a pivot inserted in the lower stone. There was a wooden pin or post inserted in the outer edge of the upper stone, by which it was turned. The meal-hoop was made of the inside bark of a shell-bark hickory tree and sewed together with leather wood bark. The mill was fed by a boy, who threw in a few kernels at a time. It is said the grinding on this mill was rather tedious, and yet it served the milling purpose of the neighborhood.

The Fairfield Steam Flouring Mill was built in the year 1858 by Joseph Haskett. The building is a frame and is two and a half stories high. New machinery has been added from time to time, keeping it fully up-to-date in milling processes. It has a good reputation and does good work. It has a capacity of one hundred barrels of flour per day of twenty-four hours.

Reuben Hawkins, of Union township, built the first mill in the eastern part of the county. He settled on Lilly creek, about a mile northeast of Jerome, in 1844, and soon after built his mill. He manufactured the buhrs for the mill out of two large boulders near the mill site. The mill was operated by water power and ground very slowly, but made a very fair article of meal. Hawkins attached a turning lathe and, being an expert workman in wood,

soon had all the work he could do, making tables, stands, chairs and various other articles of furniture, which he sold to the settlers of the adjacent country.

James Lancaster also had a small mill on Lilly creek just northwest of Jerome, which was a rude affair, operated by hand with some help from the water of the creek. The proprietor took half of the grain for toll.

In 1847 the Brown brothers erected a water mill on Big Wild Cat, just south of Jerome. It was a combination mill; that is, it did both grinding and sawing and was thus operated until 1860, when it was torn down and the machinery used in the construction of a new mill on the same location. It has a grinding capacity of one hundred bushels of grain a day.

Moses Jones, of West Liberty, erected a large water mill just northeast of the village in 1849. This was a large three-story building with two runs of buhrs and a saw attached. It was an excellent water mill and was operated until 1862, when it was completely destroyed by fire.

In the year 1875 William Jessup moved a steam flouring mill from Kokomo to West Liberty. It has since been remodeled and improved so that it is a modern, well-equipped mill and regarded as a good acquisition for that community.

#### A COMBINATION MILL.

The first mill in Liberty township was erected by Luther Segraves and stood about one mile south of Greentown on Big Wild Cat. This was a combination mill, sawing lumber and grinding grain, as the customer desired. This mill did a good business and was in operation until about the year 1863.

William Lindley erected a sawmill in the southern part of the township, on Big Wild Cat, and, in 1850, sold it to a man by the

name of Dorman. Five years later Dorman built an addition to the original building, put in two runs of buhrs and added steam power and did a very good business. This was known as the Dorman Mill.

The Greentown roller flouring mills were built and began business in 1889. They are thirty-two by forty-two feet in dimension, with all needed outbuildings, and are built of brick. They have a daily capacity of seventy barrels of flour. The proprietors of the mill deal in flour, meal, feed, and grain of all kinds.

In 1842 Joshua Barnett commenced a milldam across Wild Cat, in the southeast corner of Ervin township. He finished this dam in 1843 and built a sawmill with corn-cracker attachment in 1846. This mill was conveyed to Moses Cromwell, who converted it into a gristmill, and it became known as the Cromwell mill.

In 1847 Robert Coate built a combined saw and gristmill at Poplar Grove. So great was the demand for lumber from this mill he ran it day and night, weekday and Sunday.

#### WATER MILL FLOUR POPULAR.

William Grant built a gristmill on Big Wild Cat, near the present location of the Critchlow Brothers' slaughter pens, in 1847, and a little later he built a sawmill near the gristmill. These events were the cause of great rejoicing among the inhabitants of the young county seat, who were thus afforded opportunity of getting both breadstuff and building material almost right at home.

This mill was transferred to Moses Cromwell, who, leaving the mill at the boundary line, came and operated it by water power very successfully for several years.

Those water-power mills ground rather slowly, and as the millers did not do an exchange business, but tolled each man's grist

and ground it for him, often compelling him to wait quite awhile for his "grinding," especially if there were others in ahead of him. The writer remembers as a boy taking grain to the mill to be ground, going as early in the day as he could, taking a lunch and fishing outfit and spending the day fishing in the millrace while the grist was being ground. It was an experience not altogether bad.

The good housewives of the elder day thought at least that the flour ground at the old-time water-power mills was better than the flour made at the steam mills.

The first steam flouring mill at Kokomo was the Leas mill, built nearly fifty years ago across the railroad and opposite the Lake Erie Elevator. Worley Leas was, for many years, the proprietor. In later years it was known as the Howard Flouring Mills. The last proprietors were Darnall & Dawson. Lately it has been discontinued.

The second mill was the Spring Mills, built at the southeast corner of Jefferson street and Indiana avenue, by George W. Hocker more than forty years since.

Its present proprietor is C. M. Barlow, who has had charge of it for fifteen or twenty years.

Mr. Barlow also does an extensive feed and grain business through the L. E. & W. and P., C. & St. L. elevators.

The third mill was erected in the fall of 1896 and is known as the Clover Leaf Mills, and is a twenty-five barrel daily mill. It is a modern roller merchant and gristmill. L. W. Smith is the proprietor.

#### HAS UNDERGONE A CHANGE.

The milling business has undergone a great change in the past sixty years.

Formerly the mills ground each man's grist separately and for the owner taking toll before grinding. That necessitated every cus-



tomor waiting at the mill for his grinding or else returning home and going back another time for the flour and bran. Later they began an exchange business, weighing the grain and giving a given number of pounds of flour and bran for each bushel of wheat. At this time most men sell their grain and buy flour and feed as needed; and the miller buys the grain, manufactures it into flour, meal and feed and sells it to the trade.

#### TANNERIES.

In the early history of the county there were numerous tanneries. All the towns and villages and many country communities had its shoemaker or shoemakers. Almost every family did its shoe repairing.

Of the several tanneries it may be mentioned that just east of New London there was a good tannery; that the Judkin brothers, of Alto, had a small tannery on the north bank of Little Wild Cat just north of Mt. Zion church, which they later on moved nearer their places of business at Alto, one of them being a shoemaker and the other a cabinet-maker. Barnhart Learner was then a resident of the township and a shoemaker also. It is said that Francis Galway was the first tanner at Jerome, starting a tannery in 1847. The enterprise proved very remunerative to the proprietor, who operated it successfully for twelve years. In 1859 it was purchased by John Willitts, who ran it for four years and was then allowed to go down. Joshua Galway started a tanyard at Vermont in the year 1850 and kept it up five or six years. It proved a paying venture.

Early residents of Kokomo remember that in very early times a tannery was commenced just west of the log jail. The exact date of the beginning and by whom started are forgotten. This much



is authentic history, that the Cains came into possession of it in 1867, forty-one years ago, and that of all the tanyards of the county it is the sole survivor. The Cains have operated it in connection with their harness making business during all these intervening years.

#### TRAVELING SHOEMAKERS.

These early residents further say that in the early times there were traveling shoemakers, who went from house to house and made shoes and boots for the families, boarding and living with the family while making the family stock of boots and shoes. That was the protective principle in active operation: home-grown hides, home tanneries and home-made boots and shoes.

Those whose memory goes back half a century will recall that there were then many good-bearing apple orchards; that the fruit was of superior excellence; that the Vandever Pippin, Yellow Bellflower, Maiden Blush, Golden Russet and Early Harvest varieties were the leading kinds; and as they recall these facts will wonder where those early orchards in a country so new came from, and will be interested in these notes. Charles Harmon and J. W. Heaton planted apple orchards at an early date. Harmon went to Williams' nursery, at Indianapolis, taking several days for the trip, and bought one hundred trees. Heaton bought forty trees of a tree peddler from Clinton county and set them out in a deadening from which the logs had not yet been removed. John Heaton planted the first nursery in Liberty township about two miles southwest of Greentown, near the site of Richville church, and many of the early orchards were started from this nursery.

#### THE FIRST NURSERY.

It is said that Joseph Brown, of Union township, had the first nursery in the county, starting it from stock brought from Rich-

mond in 1850. The first orchards in Union township were set out in 1846 by Jesse Lancaster and Charles P. Baldwin, on the Farrington and Galway farms joining Jerome on the east. The trees were carried from Fairmount, in Grant county, on horseback. Lancaster carried fifty-five trees and Baldwin thirty-five. They were tied in bundles, each having two bundles fastened together, a bundle on each side of the horse and the tops reaching backwards. In this way they threaded their way through the forest along a wagon trace, and there was along that way a distance of ten miles without a house.

The pioneers of the county seemed to have been impressed that this was a good fruit country and they began early to plant orchards, and these citations are but a few examples of how the early settlers secured orchards. Within a few years there were nurseries in various parts of the county, enabling the farmers to secure nursery stock conveniently and at little cost. Howard county has never grown apples in such quantities as to have large quantities for export, but usually has had plenty for home consumption.

The county could become a good apple-growing district if enough interest and care should be given the industry. Her other products are sufficiently profitable to call attention from this business.

#### TRAPPING AND HUNTING.

Trapping and hunting may not be said to have been a regular industry of the county, but yet there have been a few trappers and hunters who were quite successful in this business in the early years of its settlement, and the great majority of the early settlers supplemented their efforts to feed and clothe themselves and families by hunting. Of the early pioneers who engaged in trapping, "Uncle Jim" Brooks, of Harrison township, was probably chief. James, at

the age of twenty-seven, and his father left Hamilton county in the fall of 1838 and followed an Indian trail through to the reserve and camped with a party of land hunters south of the present site of New London. In a few days they built some bark wigwams on Little Honey creek and trapped during the winter. The products of their toil were the skins of seventy otter. During the summer of 1839 they caught one hundred and forty coons on Shaw's prairie. In the fall of 1840 they built some bark huts on the land afterwards owned my Foster, near Kokomo, and trapped above the town extensively. They caught a great many coons and wildcats. It being very cold, they frequently found coons frozen in the snow. One evening the father, returning from up the creek, found a frozen turkey, but before he got home dropped it near a button bush pond near where the courthouse now stands.

James, going out to look for it, found it in the clutches of a wildcat, so he set two otter traps and the next morning went out and found that he had caught the wildcat. The next spring they found five bee-trees in an Indian sugar camp. These they cut down and by the use of moss strained out seventeen gallons of fine honey.

In that day wolf hides sold for seventy-five cents and scalps for one dollar and fifty cents. Wildcat hides sold for eight dollars, otter hides from six to nine dollars, and deer hides from fifty cents to one dollar each. In a history of Honey Creek township is found: "The early pioneers had very little to sell, and what they had could not be sold for money. Wild game and wild honey seem to have been the principal articles offered in exchange for the necessary commodities of life."

#### A BEE HUNTER.

Of one of the pioneer hunters and trappers of Union township it was said: "James Husted was an odd character, who achieved

quite a reputation among the early settlers as a successful bee hunter and trapper. He was an unmarried man and lived entirely alone in a little rail pen, which he built about two and a half miles east of Jerome. He made no improvements but spent all his time in the woods, trapping during the fall and winter season and hunting wild honey in the summer. From the sale of the furs and wild honey he realized considerable money, which he hoarded away with miserly care. He remained in this part of the country until the game became scarce, when he packed his few household goods and, with them on his back, departed for more congenial quarters further west."

Of the pioneers of Liberty township it is said: "The forest supplied the meat from the bountiful store of game, in quantity and quality according to demand. Deer were everywhere abundant and afforded the chief means of subsistence to many families during the first two or three years' sojourn in the woods. Jonathan Fisher states that in one year he killed one hundred and twenty-five within a few miles of his home. A man by the name of Ray was a hunter of considerable note and frequently killed four or five deer a day, of which he kept nothing but the hams and hides. The other parts of the carcass were given to anyone who desired them, or left in the woods to be devoured by the wolves. Wild turkeys were so plentiful as to be no rarity and were considered game not worth the ammunition required to kill them. An occasional bear was seen, but the majority of these animals had disappeared several years prior to the first settlement by the whites. A large one was killed a short distance east of Greentown in 1846, which weighed over four hundred pounds. This was the only one ever killed in the township so far as now can be learned."

Wolves roamed the woods in great numbers and proved very

destructive to stock. Farmers were obliged to build tight pens for their hogs and sheep; yet despite all their precautions an occasional lamb or porker would fall a prey to these gaunt scourges of the forest. In time, these animals disappeared, many of them being killed by the early settlers for the reward offered by the state for their scalps.

#### MONEY WAS SCARCE.

Money in those early days was a scarce article and many families were compelled to deny themselves the luxuries which today are classed as necessities. Deer skins, ginseng and maple sugar, of which large quantities were made every spring, were articles of commercial importance, by means of which many families kept themselves supplied with groceries, dry goods, etc.

In Howard township a man named Dix is recalled, who settled on the John Barnes farm and made a few improvements. He is remembered as a noted backwoodsman, whose greatest delight was hunting and trapping, which he followed very successfully. By the sale of deer skins, venison hams and wild honey, he managed to supply his family with what groceries and few articles of wearing apparel they needed, while he went clad in the conventional buckskin garb common among the pioneer hunters sixty years ago. After game became scarce he sold out and went West.

#### MAPLE SUGAR INDUSTRY.

Reference has already been made to the fact that the making and sale of maple sugar was a not inconsiderable industry in pioneer times. Milton Garrigus states he and his father made eight hundred pounds of sugar and a barrel of molasses in the spring of



1847 on their claim in Liberty township. He further states that the Indians delighted to make sugar and molasses in their immense sugar orchards and that on the tract where he "squatted," in 1847, there was an abundance of bark troughs and spiles, rude stables for ponies, big troughs for storing sugar water, where they had been used by the Indians for sugar making.

The only recorded instance of trouble between the Indians and the early white settlers grew out of Charles O. Fry, in Union township, settling too near an Indian sugar camp a short distance southwest of Jerome. He erected his first cabin near an Indian sugar camp, which so exasperated the red men, who were in no wise friendly toward the settler, that serious results very nearly followed. The savages looked upon Fry's action as an encroachment, and gathering a number of their braves together, they rode through the country, tore down a number of newly-erected huts and unoccupied cabins, burned fences and seized the stock belonging to several settlers. Fry and Joseph Brown visited the Indian camp to make reparation for the offense committed, which was rather more easily effected than they expected. The chief said all would be well and no further depredations be committed, providing the white man (meaning Fry) would procure for them a load of hay for their ponies.

Brown and Fry were compelled to go to Marion for the hay, an undertaking attended with many difficulties, as they were compelled to cut their road through the woods for almost half of the distance.

The hay was unloaded at the Indian village in due time and thereafter all was peace between the red skins and settlers.

There were countless numbers of thrifty sugar trees all over the county, and if the county had had waste lands for their growth



and preservation, the maple sugar industry of Howard county would now outrival Vermont.

The truth of the matter is the lands of Howard county are too fertile to permit their use for industries that are leaders in other states.

#### HEAD OF THE HARDWARE BUSINESS.

Of the commercial industries of Howard county, the hardware firm now known as the Armstrong-Landon Company is easily at the head, both in point of continuous existence and in the volume of business transacted, having had a continuous existence of more than fifty years. Very few of the residents of Howard county now living can recall that small hardware establishment on the east side of the square just opened by the firm of Dr. J. A. James, Dr. Horace A. Armstrong and Addison F. Armstrong. That was in the spring of 1856. Two members of this new firm were prominent physicians of the growing town and the third was a young man just embarking in a business career that was to prove eminently honorable and successful and whose business enterprise was to be of uncalculable benefit to the future city of Kokomo in many ways. The senior member, Dr. J. A. James, combined in a marked degree the intelligent physician and the public-spirited citizen. These two men contributed largely to the development of Kokomo on a broad and enduring basis. Two years after the beginning of their business it had outgrown its room and they were compelled to seek more roomy quarters. Accordingly they moved to the Bohan and Ashley corner, where the K., M. & W. traction station now is, into a room sixteen by eighty feet, at that time the second largest business room in the village.

They continued to occupy this for four years, or until 1862,

and their business had increased so that they must have more room. They, therefore bought a lot on the east side of the square next to the southeast corner and began the erection of a three-story building. When nearly completed this building was blown down by a tornado and in the downfall carried with it the storeroom occupied by the firm and also the Tribune office.

Undaunted by this double misfortune the firm immediately began to prepare to rebuild, and completed the new building the same year. They were, however, not through with misfortune, for in 1867 the block in which they were was destroyed by fire. They rebuilt the same year, but this time only a two-story building.

During 1867 the senior member, J. A. James, retired from business and was succeeded by Josiah Beeson, the firm name being Armstrong, Beeson & Company. Before another year had passed Dr. Horace A. Armstrong died and his interest was purchased by Dr. Edward A. Armstrong. For two years the firm remained under the old name, when Mr. Beeson sold his interest to Messrs. Zimri, Nixon and Isaac Ellis, and the name of the firm was changed to Armstrong, Nixon & Company. This firm continued until 1874, when the death of Mr. Nixon caused another change. The members composing the new firm were A. F. Armstrong, Dr. E. A. Armstrong, J. C. Pickett and George W. Landon, under the firm name of Armstrong, Pickett & Company. In the spring of 1875, the firm, finding their business increased to such an extent as demanded still further enlargement of their facilities, decided to erect a building capable of accommodating it and began the construction of a storeroom opposite the southeast corner of the public square. It is sixty-six feet front on Sycamore street and one hundred and thirty-two feet long, and is four stories and a basement high, with heavy brick walls and stone foundation.

It is conveniently arranged and a building hard to surpass for the purposes for which it was erected.

#### KEEP A LARGE STOCK.

A large stock of the latest and best makes of farm machinery, builders' supplies, stoves and ranges, a stock of buggies and harness and a complete stock of general hardware is carried by the firm. In addition they have a tin shop and a full line of tin and galvanized iron supplies. Near by is a lumber yard, well stocked. They are thus enabled to supply the varied wants of a wide range of customers. They have a large, first-floor salesroom, thus providing their friends and customers with a comfortable waiting and resting room.

January 1, 1883, Mr. Pickett retired from the firm and E. S. Hunt entered, and the name of the firm was changed to Armstrong, Landon & Company. In 1888 the firm name was changed to Armstrong, Landon & Hunt Company. On the death of Mr. Hunt, some years later, the firm name was again changed to Armstrong, Landon & Company, which remains to the present time. A. F. Armstrong continued as president until his death about five years since. The present officers are: George W. Landon, president; Thomas C. Howe, vice-president; H. Neck Landon, secretary, W. A. Easter, treasurer.

When E. S. Hunt entered the firm in January, 1883, the Hunt lumber yard was taken over into the property and management of the company. This property consisted of an extensive lumber yard at the intersection of the P. C. & St. L. Railroad and Monroe street. Later the planing mill was added. The planing mill part of this industry seems to have had its beginning with the Hunt brothers,

Henry and Ezra, at New London, while the water power was abundant and the industrial future of New London was radiant with hope. Later, with the coming of the F. & K. Railroad, Russiaville gave promise of more substantial business returns and the planing mill was moved to that place. A few years later the Hunt brothers transferred the business to the location referred to in Kokomo. A little while prior to 1883 Ezra had come into the sole management of the lumber business by the retirement of Henry. Since taking control of this branch of their work they have developed and expanded it until it is one of the important parts of the county's industries. They are engaged in the manufacture of doors and sash, the dealing in all kinds of lumber, the manufacture of all kinds of building material for the interior finish of private residences, consisting of stairways, offices and bank work, and the contracting for the construction and erection of all kinds of buildings. The company has engaged extensively in the manufacture of interior work for churches, church seats and pulpits, having done work of this kind in various parts of the Union. Although this firm began business here in the infancy of the county, much earlier than any other firm, and has continuously engaged in the same business, and has at all times put push and vigorous business methods into it, they have not monopolized their lines of business.

#### PLANING MILL BUSINESS.

S. C. Moore built the S. C. Moore planing mill at the northwest intersection of the L. E. & W. Railroad and Jefferson street in 1874 and operated it until his death in 1905, a period of thirty years. During the last ten years his son, Edward S., was associated with him, and the firm was S. C. Moore & Son. At the death

of the elder Moore, Elmer Danner became associated with Edward S. Moore and the firm is Moore & Danner, and do a general contracting business in connection with their mill business.

Since the organization of the first hardware firm there has been quite a number of others organized, and, after doing a good business for a number of years, for one reason or another have discontinued—George Hocker in the sixties, and later Bruner & Coate; Hutchings; Owen & Company, and others whose names are not remembered now. And so of the lumber business.

#### HEADING AND STAVE BUSINESS.

Prior to the discovery of natural gas in 1886, Lawrence Snider was probably the leading manufacturer of Kokomo, being in the heading and stave business. He purchased oak timber throughout Howard and adjoining counties and brought it to his factory at the north end of Kokomo and manufactured it into staves and heading, which he shipped to New York and Philadelphia. He began the business in 1878 and did ten thousand dollars' worth of work the first year and four years later increased it to seventy-five thousand dollars.

Of those engaging in manufacturing enterprises were W. H. Sumption and later W. H. Sumption & Son, who were engaged in the manufacture of buggies, carriages and spring wagons from 1870 to many years later. They employed a number of men and did good work and a good business.

#### MANUFACTURED BUGGIES.

Walter Hooper came to Kokomo in 1865 and erected a small blacksmith shop and began the manufacture of buggies. During his first year's business he sold one thousand, six hundred and sixty-



five dollars' worth of new work, and eight years later sold fourteen thousand five hundred and sixteen dollars' worth. He also made carriages, spring wagons and road wagons.

The oldest continuous dry goods store in Kokomo is the Bee Hive. This store was commenced in 1872 by Samuel Davis. The firm name was S. Davis & Sons and was one of the leading business firms of the city. By the withdrawal of Walter and the death of Samuel, Henry C. was left as sole proprietor. In the year 1901 Mr. Davis sold to William H. Turner, who has continued the business since.

Nearly thirty years ago Block & Thalman came to Kokomo and began merchandising on a diminutive scale, with a limited stock of notions and low-priced goods. By fair dealing and catering to the wants of the masses they rapidly built up a trade, and with the increasing trade they increased their stock in variety, quantity and quality until now they have probably the fullest stock and greatest variety of goods in the city.

The White House was built some eighteen years ago and has been extended across the alley since. The Kokomo Dry Goods Store is of considerably more recent date and does a fine business.

#### VARIOUS KINDS OF STORES.

Those whose memory goes back to the times immediately after the Civil war will recall the sign in front of the clothing store on the north side of the square and west of the alley which read, "D. Friday." Everybody then knew D. Friday and his obliging young clerk, King Kennedy. D. Friday's clothing store is the oldest in Kokomo today. D. Friday is no longer here to welcome his customers with a bland smile, and when he had put on a customer a coat two or three sizes too large for him, would take up the slack on



the back with his hand and declare that the coat was "shust a feat." King Kennedy has remained with the store and since the death of Mr. Friday has been the proprietor through the generosity of his friend.

The Finch-Pennington Company rank second as successors to Strickland & Company. Walter H. Davis ranks third in point of time.

In the fall of 1860 the industrial interest of Kokomo received a large accession in the coming of T. Jay and family, Rufus Dolman and family, and Ithamer Russell and family. Soon after coming to Kokomo they entered into partnership and began several lines of business.

They established a packing plant on the east side of town next to the P., C. & St. L. Railroad, buying hogs and slaughtering them and curing and shipping the meat and lard. They continued this business for perhaps ten years. They also established and carried on an extensive grocery store establishment. They also bought grain at the Lake Erie elevators, known then as the Jay & Dolman warehouse. They also established a private bank, known as the T. Jay & Company banking house, which was continued until after the First National Bank was established in 1865.

Mr. Jay was prominent in the industrial life of Kokomo until his death. After his death the business was continued under the firm name of Russell, Dolman & Company. Some of their earlier lines of business were discontinued. Buying and shipping of grain was their chief business. Mr. D. P. Davis was their gentlemanly foreman at the elevator and was a very expert grain inspector.

Members of the firm held considerable stock in the First National Bank and were connected with the bank as officers.

## MAKING BRICK.

The brick industry has been of more or less importance from very early times in the county. There has been an abundance of good clay in all parts of the county and in the earlier times cheap fuel everywhere—wood.

Captain Harry Stewart is the authority that his father, Henry C. Stewart, was the pioneer brick manufacturer of Kokomo. About the year 1847 he had a brickyard at the northeast corner of the intersection of High (Superior) and Buckeye streets. He obtained the clay for the bricks from Buckeye and Washington streets at the bluff of Wild Cat, the road supervisor allowing him to take the clay in making the cut for a roadway to the creek. The next year his brickyard was changed to the southwest corner of a six-acre tract of land lying just north of Walnut street, and whose western boundary was near Webster street. Wood was used for fuel. Mr. Stewart relates that instead of using the old-fashioned—as now known—mixing or tempering wheel, that oxen were used. They were driven round and round in the mud, tramping it until thoroughly mixed. The oxen would step in the steps made in former rounds and thus would work the mud into ridges and ruts. To overcome this the driver would reverse the direction of the oxen. The first brick masons in Kokomo were John Albright and Harles Ashley, and the first brick buildings were built in 1848; one a store building on the corner where the Darby block now stands, and the other a blacksmith shop.

The limestone industry has also been of considerable importance from very early times. John and Charles Morrow, brothers, began the quarrying of building stone nearly sixty years ago on Pete's branch, near the present Defenbaugh stone quarry, on a somewhat limited scale, but sufficient to supply the demand for several miles

around. A little later they also began burning lime to supply a demand for that article in plastering and stone and brick building. The first lime was burned on log heaps. Logs twelve to sixteen feet in length were cut and piled in heaps four or five feet high and to a length of fifteen or twenty feet, and upon the top of this heap several wagon loads of limestone were heaped and then the log heap was fired. When the heap was well fired and the mass of stone became hot the popping and exploding of the unbroken stone was like diminutive artillery. This was allowed to burn down and cool and made a fair article of lime. Somewhat later two kilns were erected for burning lime, and a far better quality of lime was burned with less fuel. In later years the demand for the stone for various building purposes consumed practically all the stone quarried, and, being more profitable than the lime business, the burning of lime was discontinued.

The Morrow brothers sold to George W. Defenbaugh in the early sixties and he operated and developed the quarries until his death in 1906, doing an extensive business in building and crushed stone.

#### FIRST MACADAM STREETS.

When Kokomo began building macadam streets the demand for broken stone increased amazingly and a stone quarry was opened on the east side of the L. E. & W. Railroad, about forty rods south of Wild Cat creek. A vast quantity of stone was taken out and hauled upon the streets and there broken by hand. After this was abandoned another quarry was opened on the west side of the railroad opposite the abandoned quarry. A power stone crusher was introduced and the manufacture of crushed stone was commenced. This plant has been operated on an extensive scale for several years by

J. M. Leach & Company. The demand has been heavy the present season for crushed stone for shipping and home use in building macadam roads.

In recent years the K., M. & W. traction line opened a stone quarry on West Markland avenue, just west of Courtland avenue, for crushed stone for their railroad tracks.

During the past year L. B. Hodgins and others have operated and expanded the business of the plant until they have been compelled to operate it day and night and are now arranging to expend ten thousand dollars for new machinery and improvements.

Kokomo crushed stone is not only exclusively used at home, but is also shipped in large quantities to various parts of the state.

Following Henry C. Stewart in the making of brick have been many. Chief of these have been William B. Morgan, on the north side, and John M. Leach, on the south side. Mr. Morgan died several years since and his business has been discontinued.

Soon after Kokomo began her rapid growth, because of the discovery of natural gas in her midst, John M. Leach & Company, foreseeing the demand and perhaps already realizing it for a far greater supply of brick, erected a brick plant on the L. E. & W. Railroad just south of the city and began the manufacture of brick on a large scale, and found a ready market for his entire output. Several years since he had used all the clay within the immediate neighborhood of the plant and the company was compelled to go back from the plant to buy clay and to ship it to the plant. For shipping purposes they operate a dummy railroad, having a small locomotive and a number of small railroad dump cars. For several years they used natural gas for fuel in burning bricks; a few years since they changed to coal.

The firm of J. M. Leach & Company do an ice business also. They began with the cutting of natural ice, first building an ice-

house above the city near the Ohio street bridge, and another at the north end of the stone quarry on the west side of the railroad. About fifteen years since they began the manufacture of artificial ice, using the natural ice to supplement the artificial in supplying the trade. Soon they were able to supply the demand with the artificial ice and they discontinued the storing of natural ice. Their original factory was on the south side of Wild Cat creek, near the east side of the Lake Erie Railroad. Their business had so increased that in the year 1903 they built a large, substantial brick building fronting on Main street and east of the original one for their ice factory. This is a modern, up-to-date ice factory.

In the manufacture of ice they use distilled water taken from a well drilled eighty-five feet into the limestone. The stratum of water at this level seems to be inexhaustible. A test, made in 1901, near the ice plant well, of two eight-inch wells in this water stratum, showed that, pumping at the rate of two million gallons of water every twenty-four hours, the water could not be lowered below a given level. This test was made to determine the location of a municipal waterworks plant.

#### WHEN KOKOMO WAS YOUNG.

Prior to the fall of 1886, Howard county was solely an agricultural community and Kokomo and the other towns of the county were trading points. Kokomo was a thrifty town of about four thousand people and was located wholly upon the north side of Wild Cat creek. There were no factories as Kokomo of today knows them. There were several small factories supplying local demands. The citizens were wideawake and progressive and doing well in a moderate way. About this time natural gas, which had been known in Pennsylvania and Canada for a number of years,



was being developed in Ohio in and about Findlay. No effort had as yet been made to learn if it underlaid Indiana territory. Some enterprising Howard county citizens determined to make a test. Accordingly a paper, which can hardly be called a subscription paper but rather a memorandum of an agreement, was drafted as follows:

"KOKOMO, INDIANA, March 22, 1886.

"The object of this paper is to ascertain if there are a sufficient number of persons in this city willing to subscribe one hundred dollars each for the purpose of boring for gas a distance of not less than two thousand (2,000) feet. The names of those willing to subscribe the above amount (\$100), provided the scheme is properly and satisfactorily organized, are as follows: A. G. Comstock, D. C. Spraker, J. C. Blacklidge, J. M. Leach, S. Davis & Sons, Armstrong-Landon Company, R. Q. Wilson, J. C. Dolman, John W. Slider, E. Quaintance, Russell Dolman & Company, J. O. Henderson, J. McLean Moulder, W. H. Sellers, J. W. Cooper, J. B. Michener, Henry Hunt, Dixon & Company, Bell & Purdum, W. A. Stuart, G. W. Defenbaugh, George Stidger."

This paper, with the signatures, has recently been presented to the Carnegie Library for public preservation.

A. Y. Comstock and D. C. Spraker did most of the work of circulating the paper and securing subscribers. Although the citizenship of Kokomo and vicinity were liberal and progressive, they did not fall over each other in their eager haste to sign this agreement to pay one hundred dollars for boring a deep hole into the ground. Probably none of them had ever seen a real for-sure gas well. Some of them remembered the attempt to make a hole near the old Cromwell mill, and that, after going down several hundred feet, the tools became fast and the project had to be abandoned.

Mr. Comstock had been instrumental in promoting other enterprises, notably the F. & K. Railroad, and so was a man of experience



in such matters, but found he was up against the real thing in securing the necessary signatures. The work of promoting this venture was commenced in March and it was mid-September before the necessary twenty-two subscribers were obtained and the preparations for boring the two-thousand-foot hole were completed and the actual drilling commenced.

After the work of circulating this paper had commenced, but during the long wait while the necessary twenty-two men were being hunted, the first producing natural gas well in Indiana was drilled in near Eaton, in Delaware county.

#### THE SEARCH FOR NATURAL GAS.

The contract for drilling the well was let and the first "rig" ever seen by citizens of Kokomo was put up on the south side of Wild Cat, in a cornfield belonging to A. F. Armstrong, near the southwest intersection of Armstrong avenue and Water street.

All that section of country lying south of Wild Cat creek and west of the Lake Erie Railroad was then farm land and few and far between were the farm houses.

On the 6th of October the drill penetrated Trenton rock and natural gas burst from its confinement and gas well No. 1 was a reality. The gas was cased in and a pipe elbowed off about twenty-five feet from the well and ignited. Thousands of people came from far and near to see the wonder. It was not a large producer; the flames did not shoot high in the air; neither did it roar so tremendously as did some of the mammoth wells drilled in later; but the well, such as it was, was easily worth going miles to see. It was not necessary to "bore two thousand feet." Gas was found in the Trenton rock at a depth of a little more than nine hundred feet. All the subsequent drillings discovered the gas deposits at

practically the same depth. Arrangements were soon made for drilling well No. 2 at a distance of about eighty rods southwest of No. 1. No arrangements had as yet been made for utilizing the find. The news, however, went out over the country like wild fire that gas had been found at Kokomo and people of various classes began flocking to Kokomo.

The earlier ones were men who were interested in exploiting gas wells, either in drilling gas wells or in leasing lands for gas wells and forming companies for piping and selling the gas. Another class of men were those who foresaw a rise in real estate because of the "find" and who rushed in to buy for the rise—the land speculator—and another class were the manufacturers, who were looking for a bonus and cheap fuel. Well No. 2, when drilled in, was a producing well and the belief was confirmed that Kokomo was in natural gas territory.

#### A BOOM IN REAL ESTATE.

In the spring of 1887 real estate was on a boom. Several syndicates from abroad had come in and invested in Kokomo and adjacent Howard county real estate. The John Sherman or Mansfield syndicate was the leader in the amount and character of its investment. The John M. Hamlin or Hamlin-Patterson syndicate was a close second. Several Kokomo people awoke to the fact that Kokomo real estate was a good thing to possess and the active competition rapidly advanced real estate. There was no less activity among natural gas men; lands were leased for gas, the lessor agreeing to pay so much per well annually so long as it produced gas in merchantable quantities, generally agreeing to drill a gas well for each forty acres of land within stated times, agreeing also to pay an annual rental of a certain price per acre until the wells

were drilled. Companies were organized to pipe the gas to points where it could be used and to sell it when so piped. The Kokomo Natural Gas & Oil Company was organized to furnish Kokomo with gas.

The first years of these natural gas companies they were very liberal in their terms of sale, giving all a flat rate of one dollar per month for cook stoves, and one dollar and fifty cents for first heater, one dollar for second heater and seventy-five cents for each additional heater per month for seven months each year; and the supply was not sparing, either.

About the same time factory men began to appear, seeking locations in the gas belt and free fuel and a bonus in cash or its equivalent as an incentive to come. Meanwhile several rigs were busy drilling wells, and practically all wells drilled east of a line extending southwest through the west line of Kokomo were producing wells, some of them being of mammoth proportions, notably one, known as the Shrader well, located on the Fred Schrader farm one and one-half miles southeast of Kokomo. This was probably the strongest producer in this gas field. When turned open and the gas ignited it sent up a great circular flame sixty to seventy-five feet in height, with a great roar that could be heard for miles. It lighted up the country for miles around and the farmers harvested wheat after nightfall by its light.

The Hon. Daniel W. Voorhees, who was at Kokomo engaged in a cause in court, soon after this well was drilled in was taken out one evening to see it. After witnessing the wonderful display of the burning well he declared it to be a sight worth a trip half across the continent to see. (People were very wasteful of the gas in the first years after the discovery. They acted as if there was an inexhaustible quantity. Strong wells were opened and fired and permitted to burn for weeks, serving no good purpose except

to light up the country. The writer recalls that the Byron Reed well south of town burned for several weeks, lighting up the country for miles around and rendering the roads fairly light for a distance of three or four miles out from town. In addition the farmers had large flambeaus burning throughout the night. Thus an immense quantity of this, the best of all fuels, was wasted. Practically all the factories were operated by this fuel for several years. In addition two large pipe lines were put in to convey the gas to Chicago. Another line carried it to Logansport, another to Frankfort and Lafayette and another to Peru. It appeared that everyone was making a heroic effort to exhaust the supply in the shortest possible time. And yet the suggestion at that time that the supply would be exhausted was scoffed at.

#### EXTENDING THE PIPE LINES.

The pipe lines that carried Howard county gas from home were: The Lafayette, which passed through Tipton county and into southeastern Howard. Murdock was at the head of this company; the Logansport line, which, passing to the west of Kokomo, entered the gas field on the Colonel Blanche farm and extended east on the south line of Center township and thence eastwardly almost to the east line of the county, with branches to the south reaching into Tipton county. Hon. S. P. Sheerin was at the head of this company and it drew away the gas for about eight years. Their leases provided that the landowner should have a well drilled within one year from the making of the lease; it provided for a well for each forty acres of land, the deferred wells to be drilled at intervals of one year each; that the company was to furnish the owner or his tenant free gas for domestic use and to pay two hundred dollars annually for each well so long as it produced gas in merchant-

able quantities and to pay a rental for the land not drilled on. This company leased nearly all lands on the south side. The Indiana Natural Gas Company had their pipe lines laid diagonally through Howard township to the pumping station west of Greentown, thence east into Grant county, and had the central and eastern parts of the county leased for. The Peru pipe line extended into the northeastern part of the county; the Kokomo Natural Gas Company covered the country adjacent to the city; the Plate Glass Company had a large pipe line reaching east from their factory several miles; the J. M. Leach Company went east from the brick plant into Grant county; and the manufacturers' line extended east from North street to Jackson township. These several pipe lines were busily engaged in draining away the gas supply. For several years the pressure has been diminishing and the supply is now largely exhausted.

The Indiana Natural Gas Company, to comply with a provision of the statute that the business of the natural gas companies should be to supply Indiana cities with gas before shipping to foreign points, laid a system of gas mains in Kokomo soon after going into the gas field, established an office here and sold gas in competition with the other company. Later, when the wells of the Kokomo company were exhausted, they supplied the Kokomo company's mains with gas and have been the chief source of the supply of gas for citizens of Kokomo since. For several years both companies furnished gas for the flat rate, but for the past six or seven years there has been a meter rate service of twenty-five cents per thousand feet. Not only has the rate been higher, but the service has been inadequate at times and the citizens of Kokomo are largely turning to coal for heating purposes.

The J. M. Leach Company has practically abandoned supply-



ing natural gas to factories and is now quite extensively engaged in furnishing gas for domestic use at a flat rate of three dollars for cook stoves and four dollars and fifty cents for heaters per month.

#### PUMPING STATIONS.

To transport the gas in pipe lines to Chicago and other distant points required additional pressure and thus pumping stations along the pipe line was necessary. The main pumping station on the Indiana Natural Gas Company's line (Chicago) was located on the north side of the Kokomo and Greentown gravel road, on the west side of Wild Cat creek, one and one-half miles west of Greentown. A large, well-built pumping plant was constructed and a town plat was laid off adjoining, and quite a number of neat homes were built for their employes. Pipe lines from the various parts of their gas field converged to this plant. Recently, because of the failing pressure in the gas field, pumps have been put in the wells and the wells are now sooner exhausted by the pumping process.

Now, after twenty-two years' use, the natural gas supply is largely exhausted. The reckless waste of the early years, the wholesale use of it in the factories and shipping it away in many pipe lines have done a perfect work and the people of Howard county are now almost deprived of the best fuel for domestic use Nature ever furnished.

1897 (The first factory to locate at Kokomo because of the finding of natural gas was the Kokomo Window Glass Company, Richard Heagany, president. This company was subsidized by the donation of a site at the northeast intersectoin of North street and the L. E. & W. Railroad, and a cash bonus paid by individual subscription. They used natural gas in the making of the glass and did a good



business for a few years, when a fire completely destroyed the buildings. The company did not rebuild but removed to Hartford City and established a window glass factory at that point.)

Those who had contributed to the cash bonus for locating the factory at Kokomo were very much disappointed at this action and discussed the advisability of taking legal steps to compel the return of the money thus paid out, as the company had acted in bad faith in taking the money and then moving away, presumably to get another cash bonus. The plant was built in 1887.

#### PAPER MILLS.

(Another plant located and built in 1887 was the Kokomo Strawboard plant. This plant was built by Seiberling & Williams, on a ten-acre tract of land on the New London gravel road about one mile southwest of the city.

This plant was subsidized by two thousand dollars by the Kokomo Improvement Company and was expended in the purchase of the ten acres of land from A. F. Armstrong. The plant consisted of several large brick buildings with all the necessary machinery for converting straw into paper board and apparently was a very permanent improvement.)

This factory used natural gas for fuel and for several years did a good business and used a vast quantity of straw, making a market for all of the straw for many miles around. For several years Mr. Thomas Bauer was a familiar figure among the farmers of the county in buying their straw. The old Cromwell millrace was utilized in filtering the water with the waste from the strawboard mill.

(Soon the farmers along Wild Cat below the mill began to complain of stream pollution, asserting that the poisonous chemicals

used in bleaching the straw and board and escaping in the refuse from the mill poisoned the waters of Wild Cat, rendering the water unfit and dangerous for stock to drink, and that the refuse killed the fish in the stream.) Finally suit was brought to prevent the allowing of the refuse to go into the stream. Damage suits were threatened. This uprising extended almost to the west limits of the county. (Meanwhile the American Strawboard Company had been formed for taking over into one great corporation all the strawboard plants, and the Kokomo plant had thus been absorbed. Because of this opposition the Kokomo plant was closed and has since remained closed, except for a short time it was operated as a boxboard factory. It is not at all likely that the factory will ever again be operated.) The silent walls only remain of this once active industry.

In the succeeding year two other paper mills were located south of the strawboard mill, on Kokomo creek. The first to locate was the woodpulp mill, with G. P. Wood as president. This mill converts quaking asp, second growth cottonwood and buckeye timber into wood pulp for the manufacture of paper. For several years after the location of this factory large quantities of buckeye and cottonwood timbers were purchased of the farmers of the county.

Very little quaking asp timber is grown in the county. The spruce timber used in the mill was shipped from northern Michigan, two large shiploads or cargoes being used each year.

The Newman Paper Company building was built adjoining the woodpulp mill and after a short time Mr. Newman sold out to Wood & Miller and the combined factory became known as the Kokomo Paper Company and the Kokomo Woodpulp Company, with I. N. Miller, president; G. P. Wood, secretary; and C. L. Wood, treasurer. The two plants, including buildings and grounds occupied by the business, covers three acres. They manufacture

wood fibre, board, barrel and box layers and have a market all over the country.

In the year 1888 William C. Smith, from Rockford, Illinois, came to Kokomo seeking a location for a bit factory in the gas belt. He was then engaged in operating a factory of this kind at Rockford. Upon arriving at Kokomo he fell in with J. R. Hall, Wick Russell and Garah Markland, innocent-appearing men but hustlers, who, providing a good conveyance, took him out past and beyond the extensive farm lands of A. F. Armstrong, on the south side, through Markland and Russell's farm lanes beyond Pete's branch and almost to the bluffs of Kokomo creek, so far out that all that was visible of Kokomo was the top of the court house tower, and here in a beautiful woods pasture these gentlemen assured Mr. Smith would be an ideal location for a bit factory. It was at a point where the three farms owned by these gentlemen touched each other. Mr. Hall told Mr. Smith that if he would locate on his side he would donate six acres, including a part of a clover field; Messrs. Russell and Markland said they would each give three acres more, and actually talked this shrewd business man into locating there. Be it remembered that this location was away out in the country and in the interior of three farms, more than a quarter of a mile from any street or highway. When the writer of this expostulated with Hall, while surveying the site, and asked him how he could do such an act, he replied: "I intend to make this one of the most beautiful parts of Kokomo."

#### THE BIT WORKS.

(The Rockford Bit Works was built that same year and commenced a prosperous career that has continued to the present.) The plant is a large, permanent brick structure. W. C. Smith was presi-

dent for many years, and Millard F. Brand was superintendent till 1894, and George J. Costello succeeded him.

In 1892 Henry C. Davis and his son, Henry C., Jr., bought an interest in the factory. In 1893 they and H. A. Bruner bought in all outstanding stock. They manufacture augurs, augur bits and carpenter chisels. The present floor space is about 25,000 square feet. In 1892 the number of men employed was from thirty to forty. In 1908 the number is one hundred and fifty to one hundred and sixty, and the pay-roll is eighty thousand to one hundred thousand dollars per year. The capital stock is seventy-five thousand dollars. The officers are: H. C. Davis, president; H. A. Bruner, vice-president; H. C. Davis, Jr., treasurer; George L. Davis, secretary; George J. Costello, superintendent.

#### INDIANA TUMBLER AND GOBLET COMPANY.

(The Indiana Tumbler and Goblet Company came to Kokomo from Greentown in 1900 and became known as the Kokomo Glass Manufacturing Company, after having burned out at Greentown.) This plant was organized at Greentown in 1894 by D. C. Jenkins, who had many years' experience in the glass manufacturing business, and knows the business from all sides. The Kokomo Glass Manufacturing Company's plant was burned out in June, 1905. The plant was not rebuilt at once, as the company debated the rebuilding proposition at great length. Many of the skilled operatives moved away to other towns having similar factories. At last, by the citizens of Kokomo offering them a liberal bonus, they resolved to rebuild under a reorganization known as the D. C. Jenkins Glass Company. They accordingly rebuilt in 1906.

The factory employs one hundred and fifty men and has a monthly pay-roll of eight thousand dollars.

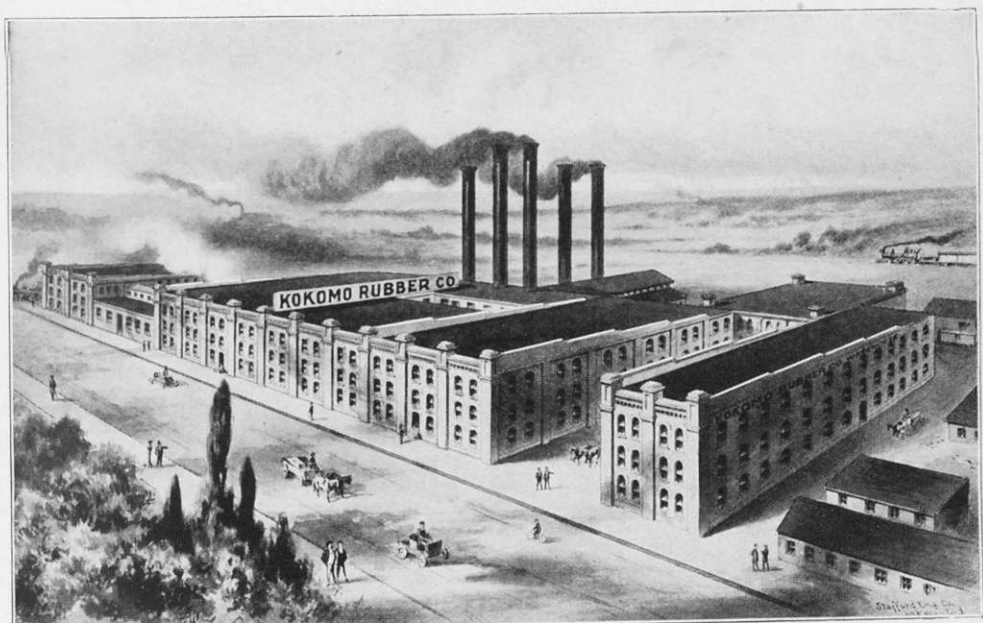
The output is a full line of glass table ware, milk bottles, fish globes and a general line of machine-made goods. They have two to three men on the road selling to jobbers. Seventy-five per cent. of their output is sold in carload lots. The officers are: D. C. Jenkins, president; Addison Jenkins, secretary and treasurer.

The Kokomo Wood Enameling Company was organized and the building erected about the year 1890. Thomas Bauer, the hustling straw buyer of the Kokomo Strawboard Company, was the leading spirit in this enterprise. This industry was located on the southernmost of the factory sites platted in Hamlin's Highland addition. Its output was the various kinds of enameled wooden ware made from hardwood lumber, as knobs, handles, etc. It was claimed by the managers of this concern that they used five hundred thousand feet of hardwood lumber annually. They bought great numbers of beech and sugar tree logs and thus made a considerable market for a class of timber that had not heretofore sold for lumber. While the plant was operated as an enameling industry, the kilns were visited with two or three disastrous fires. It was capitalized at fifty thousand dollars and employed one hundred men.

With the exhaustion of hardwood lumber it was changed to the Kokomo Nail and Brad Company.

#### KOKOMO RUBBER COMPANY.

The Kokomo Rubber Company was organized and incorporated in 1895 and put up the first building forty by one hundred feet, two stories and basement, and began the manufacture of bicycle tires January 1, 1896. Each year afterward an equal floor space was added for seven years. Now the floor space is one hundred thousand square feet and employs two hundred and twenty-five men. It is incorporated for two hundred thousand dollars.



KOKOMO RUBBER WORKS.





The pay-roll is one hundred thousand dollars annually. D. C. Spraker is president and manager, Milton Krouse is vice-president, George W. Loudon is secretary, D. L. Spraker is treasurer. The manufactures are bicycle tires, automobile tires and a specialty is made of solid vehicle tires for buggies. The product is known as Kokomo tires the world over. Shipments are made not only to all parts of the United States, but to foreign countries as well. This plant is located on the Lake Erie & Western railroad, just south of Markland avenue and fronts on Main street.

The Great Western Pottery Company was established in 1893 on West Morgan street by the present owners, the two Conrad brothers and Coxon, who is superintendent. The original size was four kilns. It now operates ten places. The buildings cover ninety thousand square feet of floor surface. When the factory was first built it was the only one west of Pittsburg. Nine years ago this company secured the same kind of a factory at Tiffin, Ohio, which has seven kilns, and has practically the same output.

The Kokomo plant employs one hundred and fifty men, ninety per cent. of whom are skilled workmen. The pay-roll is about ten thousand dollars per month. Their output is sanitary pottery ware and their shipments are in carload lots.

The Globe Stove and Range Works was organized in 1898. The plant is located on the P., C. & St. L. railroad and their grounds extend from the railroad to Market street and south from Broadway. The company began in a modest way, but have continuously grown and expanded until the plant now consists of six large and substantial fireproof brick buildings. The buildings are all practically new, steam heated, electrically lighted and well ventilated. The growth of this industry has been constant and is a credit to the management and the city and county as well.

## TOMATO GROWING.

Twenty years ago the Charles Brothers came to Kokomo preaching the gospel of tomato growing. Mr. A. A. Charles was especially enthusiastic in telling Howard county farmers what possibilities were in store for them in growing tomatoes on their fertile acres and recounted what had been done in Jersey and incidentally stated that he stood ready to help them by starting a canning factory.

The promoters of the Brookside addition proffered these gentlemen a site for a factory and as a further encouragement made a donation of some choice lots. A considerable number of farmers agreed to grow acres of tomatoes at so much per ton, where they had heretofore been content with a single plant, and the canning industry had a beginning in Howard county. During these twenty years it has been a profitable business both for the grower and the packer. The Charles Bros. operated the Brookside Canning Factory for several years with eminent success, canning sweet corn and peas as well as tomatoes.

## CANNING FACTORIES.

W. A. Bowlin and others operated a canning factory on the New London pike at the north end of Courtland avenue for several years, canning peas, corn and tomatoes. John Gennebeck and others started a third plant near the strawboard mill, which later passed into the possession of parties who have organized the Kokomo Canning Company and has been enlarged and improved until it is one of the best plants in the State.

The Kokomo Canning Company was incorporated in 1904, having been started by Josiah Kelly, who operated it until his death

two years later. Upon the death of Mr. Kelly W. A. Bowlin took charge of the property for a season and subsequently it was operated under the trusteeship of the Kokomo National Bank until the present company was formed in February, 1904, with a capital stock of twenty-five thousand dollars, the members of which were: T. C. McReynolds, L. J. Kirkpatrick, W. W. Barnes, J. W. Barnes, J. W. Learner, E. L. Danner, F. C. Falk and C. W. McReynolds. The plant was then located at the corner of Water street and Courtland avenue. In March, 1906, the company doubled its capital stock and bought out Grafton Johnson, owner of the Brookside and Howard County canning factories, the Kelly plant for the most part being removed to the grounds of the Howard County plant, which had in the start been the property of John Gennebeck. In the end Mr. Gennebeck had ceased the active ownership of this industry and G. W. Landon, W. F. Ruddell and Grafton Johnson took it in charge. It was during this period that the Howard County and the old Charles, or Brookside, canning industries were consolidated. Grafton Johnson operated the two consolidated properties, which he soon acquired, for some time, when the three plants were consolidated, as stated, in 1906. The grounds include six and one-half acres, about three acres of which is covered with buildings. The plant represents an investment of one hundred thousand dollars, and has never paid less than ten per cent., and sometimes double, on the capital stock. The active manager, who began the operation under combined discouragements, is C. W. McReynolds, recently elected president of the State Cannery Association.

It has facilities for packing a hundred thousand cans of vegetables in a day without touching the ingredients with the hands. All is done by machinery.

The machinery and equipment are the most improved. The company packed more than three million cans the present season.

The company is capitalized at fifty thousand dollars and was incorporated in 1904. C. W. McReynolds is secretary and manager.

Homer Sailors and W. J. Dixon began a fourth packing plant in 1907 on the L. E. & W. railroad in the Park View addition. The canning industry in Howard county has proven to be as good as its most sanguine promoters promised.

In 1888 the Opalescent Glass Factory was located upon one of the factory sites platted by Mr. R. E. Patterson in the Hamlin Highland addition. A Mr. Henry, with a Frenchman skilled in the art, secured this site in donation and proceeded to erect buildings and began the manufacture of this glass. After a short time he sold out to local men, who secured the skilled services of Mr. Francois. This is not a large concern, but is a good business and very profitable. The capital stock is twenty thousand dollars and employs twenty men and has a monthly pay-roll of eight hundred dollars.

#### AUTOMOBILES.

Of the various manufacturing industries that have located in Kokomo probably none have obtained so wide celebrity as the automobiles. Kokomo is widely known as the Automobile City. This fame has resulted from the two automobile factories located here.

The first was located here ten years ago, in 1898, just south of the rubber works. Like the rubber works, it had a modest beginning, but grew rapidly and is now a leading industry. It is said to be the oldest automobile factory in the United States. It is also said that Mr. Edwood Haynes is the pioneer automobile inventor of this country. In the beginning the Apperson Bros. were members of this automobile firm and it was known as the Haynes-Apperson Company. Somewhat later the Appersons withdrew and began the manufacture of automobiles independently. The Haynes cars have

been entered in many races in competition with machines made in the best factories of this and foreign countries and have always given a good account of themselves, especially along endurance lines.

The Apperson Automobile Company is located on South Main street on the south side of Wildcat, where the Riverside Machine Works were located. The Apperson Bros. were the proprietors of this machine shop and when they decided to embark in the automobile business independently they converted the works into an automobile industry and erected a large three-story brick building and began the manufacture of automobiles on a large scale. Their machines are noted for power and speed. Their business is increasing rapidly and steps have been taken recently to greatly enlarge the factory.

#### PITTSBURG PLATE GLASS COMPANY.

Probably the most important of Kokomo's industrial concerns has been the Pittsburg Plate Glass Company plant because of its size, the long time it has been here and the amount of business done. This company was organized in 1888 and located on the east side of the P., C. & St. L. railroad and south of Vaile avenue.

The founders and promoters of this enterprise were individual capitalists, of whom Monroe Seiberling was chief. Conger and others helped, but Seiberling came here and made this city his home for years and did much in various ways for the material uplift of the city. He also associated some of the business men of this city with the company in building this plant. It has at all times been a large employer of labor, employing about five hundred and fifty men, and having a monthly pay-roll of thirty thousand dollars. This factory was an early and heavy user of natural gas and had its own natural



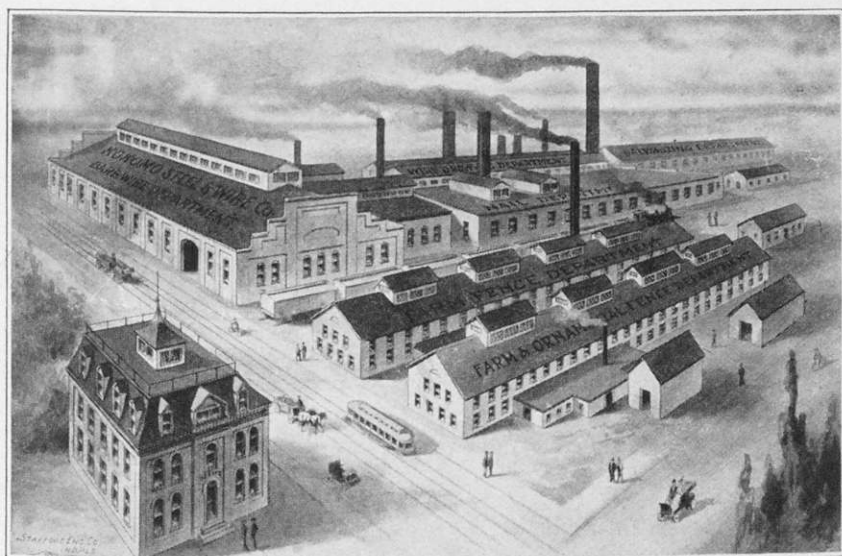
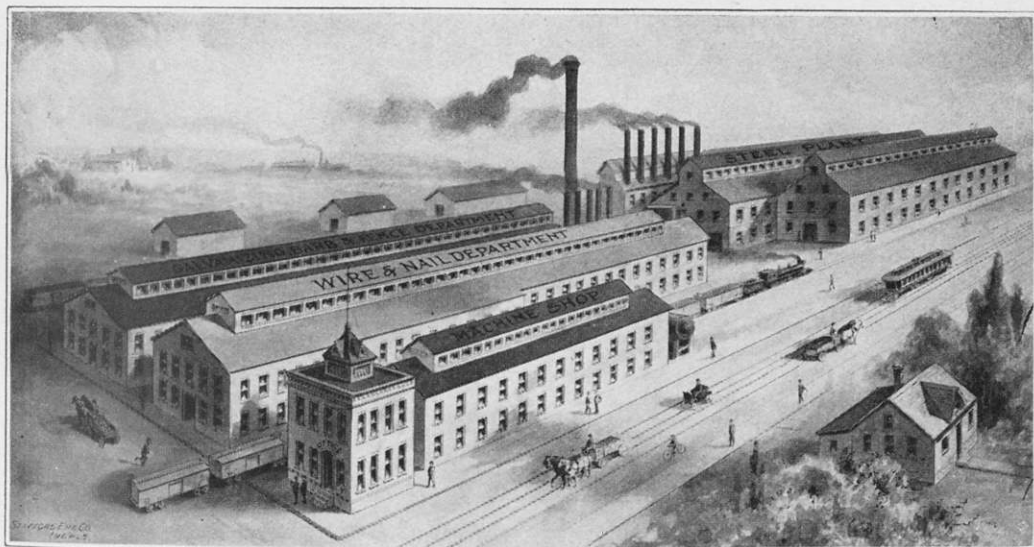
gas plant, pipe lines and wells, reaching far out into the gas territory.

Several years after the founding of this company the Pittsburgh Plate Glass Company, a corporation formed for the purpose of combining all plate glass companies under one management, bought the stock of this company and made it a part of the Pittsburgh Plate Glass system. Kokomo has been fortunate in that the plant has been operated almost continuously since its absorption in this system. The plant is now being rebuilt and otherwise improved, bringing it up to date and giving assurance to Kokomo that it will still continue to be a live plant and furnish employment for the men of the plate glass district.

#### MAKING WOVEN WIRE.

About fifteen years since some young men came to Kokomo from Ridgeville looking for a good business location for the manufacture and sale of the Whitney woven wire fence machine and of the wire for weaving the fence in place. They also planned to weave the fence in their factory and sell it in rolls to fence builders. They located their factory at North and Union streets and soon were doing a fine business in the sale of machines and in building and selling different styles of fence, including many beautiful designs of ornamental fence.

A few years since a number of the business men and manufacturers of the city decided that it would be a profitable and wise thing to greatly enlarge this business by building a plant to make the wire used in the fence business and to greatly enlarge the fence building department, and thus the Kokomo Steel and Wire Company was formed. The stock is very largely held by Kokomo and former Kokomo citizens. It is an independent company and is handicapped



KOKOMO STEEL & WIRE CO.



by being compelled to buy billets from the steel trust. The company has two plants, the fence plant on North street and the mill proper on West Markland avenue. They manufacture plain and galvanized fencing wire, wire rods, barbed wire, market wire, wire nails, staples, wire fencing, etc. They ship their goods to all parts of the United States, Canada and Mexico. Both plants give employment to a large number of men. A. A. Charles is president; A. V. Conradt, vice-president; George W. Charles, treasurer, and J. E. Fredrick, secretary.

J. B. Michener established the Star Machine Works on North Main street in 1874 and did a general repair business for various kinds of machinery, employing twelve men and doing a business of twenty-five thousand dollars per annum. After his death the business and plant passed into the control of the Standard Motor Company. This company continued the repair business and manufactured small gasoline engines and saw swedges. In 1904 the K., M. & W. Traction Company purchased the plant for a repair shop and car barns. In 1906 the Superior Machine Tool Company occupied the building used for the repair of machinery, being a building thirty by three hundred feet. The company is engaged in the manufacture of upright drills. They are in position to do all kinds of repair work and the building of special machinery.

Ford & Donnelly, at the corner of North and Buckeye streets, have been operating a machine and repair shop for many years. These machine and repair shops are very useful industries to the people of Howard county.

The Knerr Board and Paper Company's plant is located north of North street on the L. E. & W. Railroad, and is one of two like mills owned and operated by Cincinnati parties. The manufactures of the company are folding paper box boards, binders and trunk boards and double board used for bookbinders' and shipping cases. The plant employs seventy-five hands.

## KOKOMO BALE TIE COMPANY.

The Kokomo Bale Tie Company, formerly known as the Schild Fence Company, is located on North street between the L. E. & W. and the P., C., C. & St. L. railroads and manufactures the Schild fence, bale ties for baling hay and straw and farm gates, and is prepared to furnish standard makes of telephone and telegraph wires and wires for cement posts. The company handles plain and galvanized fence wire, barbed wire, nails and staples and high carbon coil spring wire. Fifteen men are employed.

Of the many industries not already mentioned and contributing to the industrial life and growth of Kokomo and to the prosperity of Howard county may be mentioned the Columbia Pottery and Manufacturing Company, north of Morgan street, on the L. E. & W. Railroad; the Kokomo Brass Works, on North Smith street, the Kokomo Box Company, located on North Smith street, occupying the Petroleum Hoop Company's former plant; the Kokomo Hoop and Lumber Company, at west end of Mulberry street; the National Mitten Works, East High street; the Ulrich Manufacturing Company, Wall street; the Colonial Brick Company, East High street; the Kokomo Cash Lumber Company, West Elm, adjoining the L. E. & W. Railroad; the Pinnell-Stroup Lumber Company, Buckeye street between Elm and Broadway streets.

It is claimed that the manufacture of the Hoosier Standard grain measures is the oldest manufacturing business of the county. This was commenced at Greentown in 1853 by Joseph M. Loop and removed to Kokomo in 1877 and continued by John N. Loop, the son.

## FLORICULTURE.

In recent years there has sprung up a new industry in our midst. In 1891 W. W. Coles came to Kokomo from the vicinity



of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, and engaged in floriculture on East Jefferson street in a modest way. His business met a popular demand and grew rapidly until now he has seventy thousand square feet under glass, all fragrant with blooms of all kinds. Mr. Coles does a large and profitable business. Mr. Coles is an active competitor at the state fairs for premiums in his department and wins a large share of the first premiums. Coles, the rose man of Kokomo, is giving the city a good name abroad. His place is known as the Maple Hill Rose Farm. Since Mr. Coles introduced the business into this community three other greenhouse plants have sprung up. Fred Kelly, on East Sycamore street; Tom L. Knipe, on East Markland avenue, and W. A. Bitler, South Buckeye street.

That this business is doing a good work among the people of the city and surrounding country is evidenced by the many homes that are rendered beautiful and attractive throughout the growing season by the many cultivated blooming plants surrounding the home and in the winter season by indoor blooming plants.

#### THE TRACTION COMPANY.

The Kokomo, Marion & Western Traction Company is the successor of the Kokomo Railway and Light Company and was organized in 1902 and besides furnishing interurban traffic operates the city street car system, lights the streets of Kokomo and provides electric lights for the homes of her citizens. The street car track mileage of Kokomo is ten miles and six street cars are run upon these lines for the regular service. There are fifty miles of electric light wires in the city and fourteen hundred consumers of electricity for light and power, where five years ago there were but three hundred and fifty. The power house is a large brick structure along the L. E. & W. Railroad, rendering it easily accessible with fuel.



The whole system, including the interurban service, uses one hundred and ten men.

The artificial gas plant was constructed for a city of four thousand people and is wholly inadequate for the present city of Kokomo.

The city is amply provided with a water works system taking water from a series of deep wells in a seemingly inexhaustible supply of good water.

Kokomo and Howard county possess more of the material advantages of life and fewer of its disadvantages than almost any other like community. As has already been noted, its lands and improvements are of the very best; the city of Kokomo has a very large number of very busy factories of the very best kinds, affording steady employment to thousands of workmen. While the greater number of her factories were built for the consumption of natural gas for fuel when the gas began to fail they were changed to burn coal and practically all are now fitted for burning coal.

Some eighteen years ago a belt railroad was built from the P., C. & St. L. Railroad around the south side of the city, reaching nearly all of the factories on the south side and providing them with convenient railroad facilities. The other factories of the city have been provided with railroad switches, spurs and side tracks until nearly all Kokomo factories are reached by railroad cars and can have coal direct from the cars. Rates have been made at the coal mines and with the railroads until the factories are able to have cheap fuel.

The facilities for shipping coal to the factories here are good now, but promise to be better in the near future. The city in a little more than twenty years has quadrupled in population. All that country south of Wild Cat, which was farm land when the bit factory was located, is now improved city properties, with paved streets, city water and city lights and the bit factory itself, which was then

far out in the country, is now well within the city. The future is bright with promise.

Howard county and Kokomo in their prosperous career have experienced very few disappointments. Two or three will here be referred to.

#### TRouble OVER RAILROAD BONDS.

A matter over which there seems to have been considerable dissatisfaction at the time, grew out of the building of the Indianapolis & Peru Railroad. It appears that the company lacked fifty thousand dollars of having money enough to finish the road to Peru and were unable to sell their bonds. The company therefore decided to ask the counties through which the road was being built to aid by loaning the credit of the counties, that is, while the railroad bonds could not be sold, the bonds of the counties could be sold. The company therefore proposed that if the counties would issue bonds and loan the money thus raised the company would reimburse the counties as soon as possible for the loan. In accordance with this plan, on the 21st of August, 1851, C. D. Murray and William J. Holman, representing the company, came before the commissioners and asked them, for the county, to issue bonds to the amount of ten thousand dollars and take railroad stock to that amount on condition that the other counties raise the balance. The board took the matter under consideration until the next day, when they agreed to do so, provided the county could be indemnified against loss by any failure of the company.

To meet this condition the following persons entered into a written obligation to indemnify the county against loss in the ratio of the respective amounts subscribed by each, on condition that if they had to pay the losses the stock should be theirs:

William J. Holman, \$4,000; C. Richmond, \$500; John Bohan,

\$1,000; Austin North, \$500; William Brown, \$500; George Deffenbaugh, \$500; John Dale, \$500; J. D. Sharp, \$1,000; F. S. Price, \$1,000; J. M. Skein, \$500.

Whereupon the board ordered the auditor to subscribe for four hundred shares of stock at twenty-five dollars each, and that county bonds bearing ten per cent. interest and to run for ten years be issued to the amount of ten thousand dollars. The bonds were subsequently issued and were signed by Tence Lindley, Richard Nixon and John Knight. Certificates of stock were issued on delivery of the bonds.

At the December term, 1853, C. D. Murray, agent of the Peru & Indianapolis Railroad Company, came before the board and represented that the Peru & Indianapolis Railroad and the Indianapolis & Madison Railroad companies had consolidated their interests, that this consolidation was a sufficient guarantee for the payment of the bonds and interests due the county and therefore moved that the certificates of stock be canceled and the guarantors be released. The commissioners made an order in accordance with the motion; the certificates were surrendered as collateral and the guarantors were released as securities.

The company for a time continued to pay the interest and partial payments on the principal. But the road was being operated in a new and sparsely settled region, which at best could furnish but a limited amount of business. Their business was not sufficient to pay a large operating expense and to pay ten per cent. interest on a large debt besides. The company therefore was forced into bankruptcy and the road was sold. The failure of the railroad company caused the county to lose the balance unpaid of the ten thousand dollars originally advanced to the company, which was about six thousand dollars, principal and interest. There was considerable criticism of the board for releasing the guarantors.

This criticism by those pioneers throws a strong side light upon them. They have appeared heretofore as men of great generosity and broad sympathy for each other, that the privations of the new country had developed a spirit of broad friendship and unselfishness that rendered them incapable of taking advantage of another's generosity. It has been repeatedly asserted that they freely left their own work to help another without any thought of pay or help in return; but here we have an instance of certain public-spirited citizens of the community, pledging large amounts for an enterprise that will help the entire community all alike, and which will be worth many times its cost, being held responsible for this debt by their fellow citizens and the commissioners, who released them criticized for doing so.

It manifestly would have been unfair to have held these few men responsible, who were no more benefitted than others, for this debt when it was of vast general benefit to the whole county.

This instead of being reckoned a misfortune to the county, was probably the best investment ever made. It was the pioneer railroad and gave the county an early direct line to the business center of the state.

#### THE DOXEY FACTORY.

Another matter over which there was much dissatisfaction was the Doxey factory matter. In the spring of 1874 C. T. Doxey, of Anderson, came before the city council and represented that he was looking for a location for a large factory and that if Kokomo wanted it she could have it by offering proper inducement. After returning home he sent the following letter which more fully explains his scheme:

"Anderson, Indiana.

"To the Mayor and Honorable Council of the City of Kokomo, Indiana:

"Gentlemen—Enclosed please find a plan of heading, stave and bent factory, which I have now arranged to put up at this place. The building will be brick, iron roof. Will be the largest and best arranged of any in the state and perhaps the best in the United States. Propose to make circled heading from beech and red oak; lead keg staves and heading and oil barrel staves and heading. The above machinery will all be placed on first floor. The second story propose to use for bent work. My engine is from eighty to one hundred horse power; will use two large boilers. The machinery to be all new or good as new. The factory will employ from forty to eighty hands besides those who may be engaged in cutting and hauling timber. It makes a market for your elm, red oak and beech timber; and as have built three factories of this kind and have had four years' experience, and have had perhaps the largest trade in cooper business of any one in the state, think it would be safe in saying, 'It will be a success.'

"Have a good location here and in locating at your city will be a loss in many ways. Would respectfully make the following proposition: If your city will donate five thousand dollars, one-half to be paid when building is completed and one-half when it is in operation, will locate at Kokomo. It may require from forty to sixty thousand dollars to carry on the business. Will bind myself to have said factory in operation by the 1st of September this year. Would come at once. What action on the above proposition you choose to take, please do so tonight, as I have part of the machinery purchased and want to commence the building at once. Very respectfully yours.

C. T. Doxley."

This was read to the council May 15, 1874, and a committee



was appointed to look after the matter. It is supposed to have acted favorably on the proposition, as we find this record, September 4, 1874:

COMMITTEE'S REPORT ON DOXEY FACTORY.

"Gentlemen—Your committee which was appointed to examine the stave and heading factory of C. T. Doxey would respectfully report that said factory is now in operation according to the terms of Mr. Doxey's contract. Signed by committee.

"Mr. Davis moved the report be concurred in and that an order for five thousand dollars be drawn in favor of C. T. Doxey.

"This motion prevailed with one dissenting vote."

There was not a little opposition to making this donation by some of the most substantial citizens, who asserted that it was illegal and bad policy to hire factories to locate here with money from the city treasury. The other party contended that property would be benefited by locating factories here and that the only real fair way to subsidize them was by taxation. As there was an overwhelming sentiment for locating factories at Kokomo, and thus to increase industrial activity, the donation prevailed and Doxey's factory got the five thousand dollars.

The factory operated for a few years and then from some cause stopped. The machinery was moved away and for several years the silent buildings bore mute testimony to where Doxey's factory had been. The proprietors of Kirkpatrick & Scott's addition to Kokomo had made a liberal land donation to the factory expecting the operation of the factory would cause that part of Kokomo to build up. The closing of the factory stopped business in that part of town and there was no more market for lots. The closing of this factory was the sorest disappointment Kokomo has experienced.



In the abundant prosperity of the past twenty years and in the location of many much more important factories than Doxey's ever was she had well-nigh forgotten this experience. The historian now consigns it to a place with the window glass company and the straw-board company and is glad that these are all.

---

## EARLY FINANCIAL HISTORY.

BY MILTON GARRIGUS.

Like all other states of equal age, Indiana has tinkered with many kinds of currency and learned by bitter experience. An interesting and intelligent review seems to require starting with colonial times and tracing theories, trade, banking laws and panics in nation and state to 1861.

Great Britain required its American Colonies to trade exclusively with the mother country and to import manufactured articles in English ships, levied duties and required them to be paid in specie, forbade them to start banks, coin money, manufacture clothing, hats, iron or paper; to sell lands to any but British subjects, and to export only in English vessels. But the enterprising inhabitants built vessels and carried on a circuitous trade with the West Indies, thus obtaining Spanish gold and silver for use, and bartering exports for necessary supplies. This was the chief dependence of the colonies for turning their industries to account. England, in 1764, to raise revenue, laid a heavy tax on this West India trade. This led to a clandestine trade and, with other impositions, finally to the Revolutionary war.

It was a very unequal struggle. Thirteen colonies with no

ships or navy. A coast more than a thousand miles long to defend; not a fort or fortification; not a bank; no money or treasury; no army or military supplies, and without credit, pitted against the wealth and prestige of England, the greatest naval power of the world. And we were also handicapped by a wilderness in the rear of our scattered settlements filled with murderous savages, ever ready to burn and massacre the settlers. We had no strong central government, only a loose confederation of independent governments. Congress was nearly powerless, a sort of advisory board rather than a legislature. The states were jealous of Congress and of each other. The most necessary and excellent measures could not be enforced. In war money is indispensable. Congress issued paper money, treasury notes, continental currency, as it had no constitutional power to raise money by taxation, and had no commerce. During the first year of the war six million dollars of paper were put in circulation; in 1776, nineteen million dollars more; in 1777, thirteen million dollars more; in 1778, sixty-three million, five hundred thousand dollars; in 1779, one hundred and forty million dollars; making a total of two hundred and forty-one million dollars.

To this volume was added the notes issued by the states. An inevitable increase in prices followed, with a depreciation of the value of paper money. In 1779 a dollar in paper currency was worth only twelve cents in specie, and a year later only three cents. All specie disappeared from circulation. Congress had pledged the faith of the nation to redeem this flood of paper. It repudiated its pledge and passed a resolution to redeem all bills of credit at one-fortieth of their face value.

The first parties were Whigs, who favored our independence, and the Tories, or Loyalists, who stood for British rule.

In 1781 Robert Morris was by Congress made Superintendent of Finance and placed at the head of the Continental treasury. He

was an opponent of paper money. He established the Bank of North America at Philadelphia with a capital of four hundred thousand dollars, which was of great service to Congress. The army was on the verge of starvation and nearly naked for lack of shoes and clothes.

Nearly eight million dollars were borrowed in specie in Europe. Of this \$6,352,000 was from France; \$1,304,000 in Holland; \$174,000 in Spain, and nearly \$12,000,000 at home. Nearly \$6,000,000 were collected by states, and nearly \$3,000,000 miscellaneous. Altogether the war cost about \$100,000,000.

#### CONVENTION OF DELEGATES.

The Confederation, without general authority and with the conflicting interests and theories of independent states, was seen to be a failure. So a convention of delegates was called to revise the Articles of Confederation. It assembled at Philadelphia, with Washington as its President. It was found to be utterly impracticable to amend them, and the delegates formed a constitution, to be in force when ratified by nine states. At once two political parties were formed. Those who favored ratification were called Federalists, those opposed, Anti-Federalists. The leaders of the Federalists were Washington, Hamilton, Madison, Franklin, Harry Lee, Randolph, John Marshall and Jay. The Anti-Federalists were led by Patrick Henry, Richard Henry Lee, Samuel Adams, Jefferson, Elbridge Gerry, George Clinton, James Monroe and George Mason.

Dissensions and irreconcilable theories of government existed between these parties. Hamilton advocated a strong government, a national bank, a protective tariff—in short, a nation with one supreme head. Jefferson contended for state's rights, or state sover-

eignty, a tariff for revenue only, and local sovereignty, including monetary affairs.

Hamilton was made Secretary of the Treasury in President Washington's Cabinet.

Hamilton at once proposed that the government should assume the war debts of the states, and proceed to fund the same, and to establish the national credit. He advocated a national bank of the United States. Congress adopted his views, including a protective tariff. Daniel Webster said of Hamilton: "He smote the rock of the national resources and abundant streams of revenue burst forth. The fabled birth of Minerva from the brain of Jupiter was hardly more sudden than the financial system of the United States as it burst from the conception of Alexander Hamilton." He declared we should legislate for American interests, and so raised funds for the treasury by customs duties on imports. The national bank was established by Congress in 1791 with a capital of ten million dollars, the charter to run twenty years, and the government to own one-fifth of the stock. The conflict between the two schools, or parties, made a theoretical and practical war, which exists with some modifications to the present time. The Separatists, or State's Rights party, brought the Union to the verge of destruction by civil war. The national school which Washington and Hamilton founded has triumphed and the national principle is now supreme.

#### A NATIONAL MINT.

A national mint was established in 1792 at Philadelphia for the creation of a uniform metallic currency, which had not theretofore existed, and the lack of which had caused great inconvenience. The metallic currency in common use in the United States consisted of a variety of English, French and Spanish coins—shillings, crowns,

dollars, moidores, joes, half joes, pistareens, picayunes and small Spanish coins of six and one-fourth, twelve and one-half, eighteen and three-fourths and twenty-five cents, respectively, which came handy for odd change. The paper currency consisted of thirteen kinds of notes, issued by as many different states. The system of coinage by the mint was the first monetary system of the United States. It was decimal, with the dollar as the unit. Both gold and silver were legal tender. The standard was double. The gold dollar contained 24.75 grains of pure gold, stamped in pieces of ten dollars, five dollars and two and one-half dollars, denominated, respectively, eagles, half-eagles and quarter-eagles. The silver dollar contained 371.25 grains of pure silver. The ratio was 15 to 1, that is, the weight of the silver coins was fifteen times that of the corresponding gold coins of the same denominations that being the then market price, the mint price was made to correspond with it. Since that time the ratio has changed often, as the market price of the two metals shifted until the last few years.

When the charter of the national bank expired, in 1811, the Virginia school of politicians prevented its renewal. The bank had been a great success, but they contended that it was unconstitutional. The want of such an institution was severely felt during the War of 1812. The excellent currency which it had supplied to the country was withdrawn and its place taken by a currency issued by state banks, which quickly sprang into existence in large numbers. From 1811 to 1816 state banks increased from eighty-eight to two hundred and forty. The flood of paper which they issued could not be redeemed in specie. There was no penalty for refusal to redeem, nor any real check to prevent the issue of bills far beyond the legal limit, and most of the banks were compelled to suspend specie payments.

In April, 1816, the United States Bank was rechartered with a



capital of thirty-five millions, instead of ten millions, and the government was to hold seven millions of the stock and to appoint one-fifth of the twenty-five directors thereof.

The government funds were to be deposited in this bank, as they were before.

The Federalists opposed rechartering the bank, while the "Anti's," then called the Republicans, heartily supported it—the two political parties having thus completely changed sides on this proposition. The bank was chartered for twenty years. The public moneys deposited in its vaults averaged six or seven millions, its circulation twelve millions and its discounts more than forty millions a year. Its annual profits were more than three millions annually.

The parent bank was at Philadelphia. It had twenty-five branches and more than five hundred employes, and they disbursed the entire revenues of the nation. Its stock often sold at forty per cent. premium. In every county of the Union and in every country on the globe were its stockholders. One-fifth of the stock was owned by foreigners, and one-fourth was held by women, orphans and by trustees of charity funds. So high and unquestioned was its credit, its bank notes were good as gold in every part of the country. A man could travel and pass these notes in London, Paris and in every place in the world without discount, and could sell them at a premium at the remotest commercial points.

The state banks were forced to resume specie payments in February, 1817.

The state of Maryland attempted to tax the circulation of the national bank, but the Supreme Court of the United States, in the case of *McCullough vs. Maryland*, in an opinion written by Chief Justice Marshall, denied the authority of a state to pass such tax laws, and upheld the constitutionality of the bank and its charter.



and thus limited the authority of the states and exalted the power of the general government, greatly to the disgust of the State's Rights Republicans, who had rechartered the bank, and to the satisfaction of the Federalists, who had originally chartered a United States bank.

#### EARLY BANKS IN INDIANA.

Indiana had no distinctive currency of its own. But in 1814 the territorial legislature chartered two banking institutions, one at Vincennes, which was to have a capital stock of five hundred thousand dollars, and one at Madison, with a capital of seven hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Their bills were soon put in circulation and added to the flood of currency that had been coming into the territory from the general government. When the war with Great Britain ended, the large disbursements by the government ceased, and financial distress followed. During the war specie payments had been suspended by the banks, which had issued far more paper currency than they could redeem. The general government had disbursed in this territory a large amount, most of it in bills of Ohio banks.

The constitutional convention in Indiana met and inserted a provision in the organic law for a state bank with branches, including the banks heretofore established at Vincennes and Madison, and making the bank of Vincennes the State Bank on January 1, 1817, which was by act of the state legislature, with an additional capital of one million dollars, with enlarged powers. Of the ten thousand shares of new stock, three thousand seven hundred and fifty were reserved for the state. Branches were established at Vevay, Brookville and Corydon. The bank was badly managed and for its reckless proceedings the legislature, in 1821, by suit, canceled its charter, for the reasons that it contracted debts double the amount of its deposits and issued, with a fraudulent purpose,

more paper than it had the means of redeeming, and that it declared and paid large dividends to the stockholders while it was refusing to pay specie for its notes. This crash came while the state was still suffering from the great depression following the end of the war with Great Britain. Every kind of business was prostrated. It was estimated that during the years 1821, '22 and '23 at least one-fourth of the population died or removed from the state. Prior to that time the price of government land had been two dollars per acre, and Congress, thinking to stay the tide of disaster, reduced the price to one dollar and a quarter per acre, which only added to the ruin, for it reduced, in the same proportion, all the land in the state held by individuals. In 1832 the state began its system of internal improvement. It borrowed several million dollars in the East, employed large numbers of men, started another artificial era of prosperity, and speculation ran rife again. Michigan had a very liberal banking law, and her banks issued bills in large numbers, while most of those banks had nothing to redeem the notes they issued.

#### HOW LABORERS WERE PAID.

The contractors on the canals and other public works in this state secured this cheap Michigan money and used it nearly altogether in paying their laborers. Thousands of dollars of this currency were paid out weekly by the contractors, and soon nothing else was afloat in Indiana. The merchants were compelled to take it, but did so at a heavy discount, the laborers who earned it always getting the worst of the bargain. The merchants had to have it to pay their debts. Then merchants, millers and others issued bills, or "shin-plasters," only redeemable in merchandise at the store or mill of the issuer. These were of no value only in the neighborhood. Most of the millers and merchants became bank-

rupt, leaving thousands of dollars of their currency unredeemed.

In 1834 the legislature chartered the State Bank of Indiana to run twenty-five years. It was modeled somewhat after the United States National Bank. It was a complete monopoly, for during its existence no other bank could operate in the state. It was to have a capital of one million six hundred thousand dollars in shares of fifty dollars each, and the state agreed to take one-half of the entire capital stock.

The state was to borrow the sum of one million three hundred thousand dollars. Of that amount eight hundred thousand dollars were to be used to pay the state's share of the capital stock, and the remaining five hundred thousand dollars were to be loaned out at six per cent. interest to individual subscribers to the stock, to assist them in paying for the same. The bank was required to hold the dividends on this stock and pay the same to the state in discharge of the interest accruing, and to reimburse the state for the loan. The bank was not at any time to suspend specie payment. The branches were to be mutually responsible for the redemption of all bills issued, but each branch was to have its own profits. No notes of a less denomination than five dollars were to be issued. The state was to elect the president and one-half of the directors, the stockholders to elect the remaining directors. The only tax that could be levied on the bank or its stock was provided for in its charter. This tax amounted to twenty-five cents annually on each one hundred dollars of the stock, and was to be deducted from the dividends and retained in the bank. If the bank failed to make money no tax was paid! The panic of 1837 struck the country soon after the bank got into operation, and it was compelled to suspend specie payments, but its credit remained good and its bills were taken everywhere at their face value. The panic was a bad one, and business in all parts of the country was wrecked.

One who swung the cradle in wheat harvest received thirty-seven and one-half cents a day, or a bushel of wheat, at his option. In 1842 the legislature ordered the bank to resume specie payment, and from that date it was ready to meet all demands for the redemption of its notes.

#### A NATIONAL ROAD.

In President Monroe's administration Congress passed a bill appropriating the means necessary for the construction of a National Road across the Alleghanies from Cumberland to Wheeling, and the state of New York took the lead in internal improvements by constructing a splendid canal from Buffalo to Albany, a distance of three hundred and sixty-three miles, at a cost of seven and a half million dollars, taking eight years to complete it. There was a great financial crisis in 1819, which disturbed and distressed the country.

In his first annual message President Jackson took strong grounds against rechartering the Bank of the United States. He thought it inexpedient and unconstitutional, and recommended that the old charter should be allowed to expire by its own limitation in 1836. The partisan elements of the country, which for some years had been whirling about in a chaotic condition, was resolved into two great factions of Whig and Democratic. The old Federalist party, under whose auspices the government was organized, had lost control of national affairs when John Adams retired from the Presidency, but it lingered along for some years. On the other side, the line of political descent had begun with the anti-Federalists, who, after opposing the national constitution and the administrative policy of Washington and Adams, became, under the lead of Jefferson, the "Republican" party, but soon exchanged that name for Democrats. The arbitrary measures of President Jackson

alarmed the country and consolidated all opposition elements into a compact phalanx, known as Whigs, under the leadership of Clay and Webster.

#### SURPLUS FUND DISTRIBUTED.

The national debt having been paid, in October, 1833, President Jackson ordered the surplus accumulated fund of the United States Bank, amounting to about ten million dollars, to be distributed among thirty-five pet state banks, to be so distributed in four quarterly installments, reserving about five millions for government use; and it was so distributed between the states, i. e., the first three installments. The fourth was never distributed, as the government ran short of funds and had to issue and sell bonds to raise money to pay the expenses of the government.

The new state depositories were instructed by the secretary of the treasury to loan the money freely, and having millions to dispose of, which was easily borrowed, speculation spread with a furore; and with a hope of getting deposits of government funds, many banks were established in the various states. In 1830 there were only three hundred and thirty state banks in the country. By 1837 they had increased to six hundred and thirty-four, and the capital had expanded from sixty-one million dollars in 1830 to nearly two hundred and ninety-one million dollars in 1837. These were all banks of issue of paper currency which, in 1837, amounted to one hundred and forty-nine million dollars. Behind this vast amount of paper money there was, in 1837, only thirty-eight million dollars of specie. The banks had loaned in proportion to their issue of paper. In 1830 their loans were two hundred million dollars, and in 1837 five hundred and twenty-five million dollars. The deposits of funds had been made among the states in proportion to their representation in Congress by President Jackson. The general idea



seemed to be that the way to get rich and prosperous was for the country to establish banks, issue currency and loan money. The inflation of the currency, prices and debt-making went hand in hand. Everybody bought government land as the most promising investment, and paid for the land with bank notes. Again and again these bank notes went from the land office to the deposit banks as government funds, and were loaned out again to the speculators to buy more land. It was a perpetual circle. In 1832 the receipts from the sale of lands were two million six hundred and twenty-three thousand dollars; in 1834 they were four million eight hundred and fifty-seven thousand dollars; in 1835, fourteen million seven hundred and fifty-seven thousand dollars; and in 1836, twenty-four million eight hundred and seventy-seven thousand dollars. Importation of foreign merchandise increased in the same enormous proportions. It was a universal carnival. In this way, on January 1, 1837, the surplus for distribution to the states was thirty-seven million four hundred and sixty-eight thousand eight hundred and fifty-nine dollars. Nominally it was in the banks, but really it was in the hands of borrowers. The government took this surplus from the deposit banks to distribute it to the several states. The banks had to collect it, and a general collapse followed. Fortunes disappeared over night. The whole South was bankrupt. Tens of thousands of workmen lost their employment. Everybody was in debt.

#### GREAT DEMAND FOR SPECIE.

The President sought to stop the exchange of public lands into "inconvertible paper." He ordered that nothing but specie should be received for public lands. This order created an extraordinary demand for specie, drew it from the great centers of commerce, where it was needed to uphold the credit of the banks, and this



specie circular was the last straw on the back of the banks and commerce, and under it they went down. Indiana and all the other states suffered. The bills of the State Bank were the only good paper money. The state had borrowed large sums of money in the East to carry on its schemes of internal improvement. Specie was scarce and the state full of depreciated currency. Neither the people nor the state could get money. As a measure of temporary relief the legislature, in 1839, authorized the issue of state scrip to the amount of a million and a half dollars, to bear six per cent. interest and to be receivable for taxes.

This "scrip" was issued in bills of five and fifty dollars, had a dog's head engraved thereon and was printed on red paper, and was known as "Red Dog" currency.

At first this scrip was well received, but as it had no redeemer in prospect it soon was worth only forty or fifty cents on the dollar. The issue of scrip by the state led to further inflation of the currency. Merchants, millers, contractors on public works and plank road companies all went into the business of making paper money. The scrip was issued in bills as low as twenty-five cents, the highest being for three dollars. It was mostly printed on blue paper and was styled "Blue Pup" to distinguish it from the "Red Dog" of the state. Business men went down in the crash, and as most of the merchants were large purchasers of farm products, and owed large sums to farmers, their failures pulled down the farmers and the court calendars were mainly taken up with mortgage foreclosures. The most active men were the sheriffs, endeavoring to find buyers for property under foreclosures.

The United States constructed the National Road from Baltimore to Wheeling and a similar turnpike from Washington to Wheeling, via Cumberland; thence through Zanesville, Ohio, and Indianapolis to St. Louis. It had been agreed by the federal gov-

ernment that two per cent. of the proceeds of sales of land should be applied to the making of roads in Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Missouri, Alabama and Mississippi. The Michigan road was surveyed in 1828 from New Albany to Michigan City. One mile wide along the same, of the public lands, was set aside by the government to pay the cost of making this road, and the sale was held in October, 1831. The construction was begun, under the authority of the state, in 1830, and it was cut out two hundred feet wide. Ten alternate sections of land were granted by the general government along its route for the construction of the Wabash and Erie Canal, March 20, 1827, and its construction was begun in 1832. The sale of land was held at Logansport in October, 1830. The terms of sale were one-fourth cash, the balance on seventeen years' time, with six per cent. interest. The long time granted prevented the canal commissioners from realizing much with which to then go on with the work. The Indiana legislature passed a bill February 9, 1832, pledging the faith and credit of the state to raise funds to complete the canal.

A further grant of public lands was made by the government, seven miles in width, off of the west side of the Miami Reserve, to aid in the completion of the canal. This grant was made to the state. The state issued scrip, or wildcat money, on white paper, called "White Dog," from the figure and color of the paper. The state agreed to receive such paper in payment for said land, which was sold to individuals to be paid for in installments, with interest. This land was rapidly settled up.

The contractors on the canal used this "White Dog" currency to pay the laborers and it was treated as legal tender all around.

#### INDIANA NEAR BANKRUPTCY.

In 1847 the state of Indiana was practically bankrupt. She had burdened herself with a large debt for the purpose of carrying

out a great scheme of internal improvements, and for several years had defaulted the interest upon her bonds. By this course her credit had been destroyed and the prosperity of the state seriously checked. Most of the bonds were held in Europe and the holders were clamorous for the payment of the interest, and the state was out of funds. The legislature passed an act for the settlement of the bonds on a new basis. J. F. D. Lanier, a noted banker, was selected to proceed to Europe and lay the proposition before the bondholders. His mission was successful and the load of debt was lifted.

In 1837, when the government called for the transfer of a large per cent. of the government funds, then held by the banks, to Washington. Mr. Lanier was the selected agent of the State Bank to take eighty thousand dollars in gold to Washington. He went by steamer to Wheeling, and from there across the mountains alone in a stage-coach chartered for the purpose.

Under the authority of the constitution of 1852 the legislature, in 1853, passed a free bank law, and, in 1855, a charter was given to the Bank of the State of Indiana. Governor Wright vetoed both of these bills, but they were passed over his veto. The panic of 1857 occurred throughout the country. Within a very few years after this new bank law passed many banks were started in Indiana, one of which, "The Indian Reserve Bank," was located in Kokomo, at the southeast corner of the public square. David Foster was president and Harles Ashley was cashier. It was supposed to have been robbed one night, and it ceased to exist. Banks sprung up everywhere, and the state was fairly deluged with a flood of practically worthless currency issued under this general banking law. Many of them had no banking house or actual place of business. They made no pretense to being banks of deposit, their only mission being to issue and float bills. A few men would get together,

purchase a few thousand dollars' worth of the depreciated bonds of some far-away municipality, deposit them with the auditor of state and receive authority to manufacture paper money. They would issue bills to an amount two or three times greater than the value of the securities deposited, put them in circulation, and these bank officers and directors would disappear, leaving the holder of the notes to mourn their disappearance. The discount of the notes changed almost daily, so that the bill worth eighty cents today might bring only sixty cents tomorrow. This money was called "Wildcat." This flood of money caused reckless speculation. Every merchant or business man had to keep for ready reference a periodical known as a "Detector and Bank Note Reporter," in which the rates of discount on the bills on the various banks were daily given.

Many thousands of dollars were lost by the people who had accepted these "shin-plasters" as money. Merchants, millers and other traders issued them. The banks failed one after another, and as their notes and other worthless currency had driven all the good currency out of the state the result was very disastrous. Business was checked at once, all building stopped, new enterprises were smothered and old ones crippled. Nobody would take the "free bank" money, and as there was no other in circulation in the state, nobody could pay debts.

Thus it was until the Civil war broke out and the government had to issue "greenbacks" and small paper currency for change.

The people of the United States are, or should be, so happy and thankful that the country has finally escaped from the ocean of troubled finance and stands today on the solid ground—the "gold standard"—and all our currency as good as gold the world over.

We are a Nation, not a Confederacy of sovereign states. The school of experience has been a costly one, and all our people should profit by it.

## BANKS.

As stated in Mr. Garrigus' article, the Indian Reserve Bank was the first bank organized in Howard county. The exact date of its organization and the date of its closing are not known, but appear to have been in the years just previous to the breaking out of the Civil war. Rumor says that one night while one of the bank officials was asleep in the bank building, some one stole in and took fifteen thousand dollars' bank funds; that Howard county had funds on deposit there and lost.

From this bank failure until the organization of the private bank of T. Jay & Company there was no bank in the county.

## NO BANKING FACILITIES.

The bank of Thomas Jay & Company was organized early in the year 1861, and was the direct outgrowth of the coming to Kokomo of Thomas Jay, Rufus Dolman and Ithamer Russell, business men who associated themselves together as a firm for carrying on several lines of business. The town was without banking facilities and to meet this urgent need they began a private bank and continued it for several years, until after the organization of the First National Bank of Kokomo. These men contributed very largely toward the industrial development of Kokomo for many years. Thomas Jay was perhaps the leading man of the firm, and was not only active in promoting the several business lines in which the firm was engaged but actively assisted in public affairs, contributing liberally of money and assisting in various ways to help Howard county do her full share in the war of the Rebellion, and later as a member of the common council of the city of Kokomo worked for her interests. Ithamer Russell was pre-eminently the



banking man of the firm; a quiet, unostentatious man, always at his post, kindly and accommodating.

Rufus Dolman, not so pronounced a hustler as Mr. Jay, nor so familiar a figure in the banking houses of Kokomo, was a man in whose word and judgment the citizens of Kokomo and Howard county had great confidence. Rufe Dolman commanded the respect of the community to a marked degree. The several qualities of these men have been transmitted to their sons in marked degree.

The First National Bank of Kokomo was organized in 1865. This was the first bank organized in Kokomo under the government banking laws, with which a later generation has become so familiar as to consider the system a necessity and to regard it a matter of wonder how the people had a banking system without it. The charter was for twenty years, and at the expiration of the charter the stockholders, not wishing to continue the business, it went into voluntary liquidation and closed out a successful business career. This bank was located much, if not all of its time, in the southwest corner room of now the St. Francis Hotel. Mr. Russell, with his long, flowing beard, was a familiar figure at the cashier's desk.

The Howard National Bank was organized in 1879 with a capital stock of one hundred thousand dollars. The most active and influential men in organizing this bank were Richard Nixon, Samuel Davis, Nathan Pickett and A. F. Armstrong.

Nathan Pickett, except for a few months, in which Richard Nixon served as president, has been president since its organization. Richard Nixon, who took an active interest in its organization, except for the few months referred to above, held no other official position than that of one of its directors. Mr. Nixon was one of the county's earliest and most influential pioneers and was prominently connected with the county's commercial life, first engaging in business at New London and later in Kokomo. He also took an



active interest in the churches and schools of the city and was in every way a worthy citizen. William P. Vaile was the earliest cashier. He resigned and went West and was succeeded by John A. Jay, who served in that position many years. After Mr. Jay's promotion to the vice-presidency Ernest George was chosen as cashier.

The bank was located for many years in the Armstrong block, on the south side of the square. It was removed to a home of its own when the building at the northeast corner of the square was completed. The first charter expired in 1899 and was renewed, the capital stock remaining the same. In the first years of its history much of the capital stock was held abroad. This stock has since been bought by local parties and the stock is now held at home. In 1907 the surplus having increased to one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, one hundred thousand dollars of it was used in increasing the capital stock to two hundred thousand dollars. This bank is also a United States depository.

#### CITIZENS' NATIONAL BANK.

The Citizens' National Bank of Kokomo was organized October 8, 1889, with a capital stock of one hundred thousand dollars, and in December, 1907, was increased to two hundred thousand dollars. This bank is a United States depository.

The organizers were Jacob R. Bruner, Richard Ruddell, George W. Landon, J. C. Blacklidge, and others.

The stock is owned entirely by Kokomo parties. Handsome dividends have been paid regularly. In eighteen years the surplus had grown to one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, and on the 1st of June, 1908, after increasing the capital stock one hundred thousand dollars, there remained fifty-four thousand dollars surplus.

Their bank building is at the southwest corner of Main and Mulberry streets. Richard Ruddell has been president of this bank since its organization. Mr. Ruddell had been a citizen of Kokomo and an active business man several years before becoming president of this bank. Formerly he had been a member of the Ruddell Brothers' Dry Goods Store Company at the northeast corner of the public square.

The officers now are: Richard Ruddell, president; George W. Landon, vice-president; Frank McCarty, cashier; R. F. Scherer, assistant cashier.

The Kokomo National Bank was organized July 15, 1902, with a capital stock of one hundred thousand dollars, divided in the beginning among about five hundred stockholders widely scattered over the city and county. This bank was promoted by George E. Bruner and John W. Barnes. George E. Bruner was the first president; John W. Barnes, cashier; and Lex J. Kirkpatrick, vice-president. January 1, 1904, E. E. Springer succeeded Bruner as president. The year before Barnes had retired as cashier and E. E. Sanders chosen as his successor. W. A. Marsh was elected cashier and became Sanders' successor March 14, 1905. The stock has been considerably consolidated but is still largely held by residents of the county. One block only is held outside of the county and but three stockholders live outside of the county. The bank is in a prosperous condition, is excellently located and is finely equipped. E. E. Springer and W. A. Marsh are president and cashier respectively. W. A. Marsh is a recent acquisition to the citizenship of the county, coming from Bluffton in 1905. E. E. Springer has been a resident of the county since childhood. He moved to Kokomo in 1884 and engaged in the real estate business and was very successful. He has been recognized as one of the most upright and solid business men of Kokomo for years.

## OTHER BANKS.

In 1873 the private bank of Walker, Welsh & Company was organized with a capital of thirty thousand dollars. A. B. Walker was a well-known and highly respected citizen of the county. Mr. I. N. Welsh was a business man of good reputation of Eaton, Ohio. They did a good deposit and loaning business. They were not permitted by law to issue notes. During the panic of 1873 and following years, the bank's funds became tied up in real estate in such a manner that they could not be realized upon to meet the demands of depositors and the bank made an assignment, naming J. F. Elliott as assignee in the year 1878, who settled its affairs and closed out its business.

The Kokomo Trust Company was organized December 3, 1902, with a capital stock of thirty-five thousand dollars, and on April 1, 1906, was increased to fifty thousand dollars. It has a surplus fund of thirty-eight thousand four hundred and forty-two dollars after paying dividends. The departments of this company are the savings bank department, where money is received on deposit in three different ways: on certificates of deposit, on savings account and on checking account, on which interest is paid, but no commercial or active business account will be taken; second, the loan department, where money is lent on first mortgage security or good collateral, and where bonds, mortgages, and so forth, are bought and sold; third, the insurance department, where fire, accident, plate glass, employers' liability, surety bond, and so forth, are written carefully and in the best companies; fourth, the real estate department, where they buy and sell real estate on commission and where their officers may be consulted freely as to values; fifth, the trust department, which manages all kinds of business of a trust nature, such as administrator or executor of estates, guardian, trustee,

receiver, commissioner, agent, and so forth, the services of which will be found much more desirable and the cost of service much more reasonable than that of an individual in this capacity; sixth, the renting department, where the company will take entire care of the renting of property, paying taxes, making repairs, and so forth, for nominal charges. The company is located on the west side of the square, opposite the courthouse. James D. Johnson is president; W. E. Blacklidge, vice-president; Fred. L. Trees, secretary-treasurer. The directors are William C. Purdum, C. A. Dolman, William H. Turner and Ed. S. Moore.

The First National Bank of Russiaville was opened as a private bank in 1898 by John H. Cox, R. C. Kincaid, T. L. Harris, Sheridan, Indiana, and John H. Collett, Indianapolis, with capital of seventeen thousand dollars. It was organized as a national bank in 1900, with capital of twenty-five thousand dollars, and had lately fourteen thousand dollars surplus and undivided profits, with one hundred and two thousand dollars deposits. It owns and built its own banking house in 1900. The stock is now practically held by Russiaville citizens. R. C. Kincaid is president and H. M. Brubaker is cashier.

#### STRONG FINANCIAL INSTITUTIONS.

Kokomo and Howard county are certainly fortunate in having in their midst such carefully managed and safe financial institutions, where their citizens can deposit money and be sure that it is safe and can be had again for the asking; places where they can go when in need of money and upon giving reasonable security can be accommodated. These banks all receive deposits subject to check or certificates of deposit and issue letters of credit on foreign banks and do a general banking business, such as making loans and dis-

counting gilt-edged paper, etc. They have passed through the periods of panic without loss to anyone. While the stress of the money famine of October, 1907, was on, the banks and trust company organized a clearing house association and issued certificates guaranteed by all. The association was protected by the deposit of gilt-edged securities from the several members of the association. The certificates, while not currency in the fullest sense, were local currency; that is, the local business concerns accepted them in payment of bills and factories used them in payment of wages and redeemed them as soon as their money was released from the large banks in Indianapolis, Chicago and New York.

During this period, while many depositors were nervous to the extreme lest they should lose their earnings, the Kokomo Trust Company called three disinterested citizens of Howard county to carefully audit their books and report to the depositors the actual financial condition of the company. They did so and found, and so reported, that the surplus was as large and all the securities were gilt-edged and that the affairs of the company were such that nothing short of a calamitous shrinkage of values would endanger the deposits of anyone. A like examination of any one of the banks would doubtless have shown a like state of affairs. It is but simple justice to say that the financial houses of Kokomo and Howard county are first class.

---

## CRIMES AND CASUALTIES.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

Peter Cornstalk, a prominent Indian chieftain, died in 1838, just north of Burlington, and the body was hauled by William Smith to Pete's run, Ervin township, where it was buried. It was con-



veyed in a wagon, and the men had to cut their way through the forest. Cornstalk's son, Pete, following the trail to this city—"Cocomo"—and to the place of burial, discovered "Doc Bill," "Captain Bill" and Sam Loon disinterring the remains to rob the grave of the ornaments with which the corpse had been buried. The Indian killed "Captain Bill" on the spot, and the other men escaped. March, 1840, Pete treated Loon from his bottle, got him drunk at Joshua Barnett's grocery, and then conducted him to his brother, "Doc Bill," who was sick under a tree. The next morning he jerked Loon from the side of his brother, "Doc Bill," jumped upon his breast and sank a dagger in his heart. "Doc Bill" was not molested and died of his sickness. Pleasant Walker was given five dollars to bury Loon's brother.

Jacob F. Myers, a hunter, was frozen to death, February 14, 1843, in Ervin township. He had left the grocery of John Harrison for his home in Cass county. While he had been drinking, was not drunk. When his dog came home half starved, a searching party was formed. The body was found lying flat upon the back, the handkerchief that had covered the face having blown away. Myers's gun was leaning against a bush. From the tracks in the snow, which crossed and recrossed, it looked as if he had become lost and traveled about forty miles. Although he carried steel, flint and punk, Indian fashion, to start a fire, he evidently had not attempted to make one. The searching party, which had a horse, harness, ax, and an augur, made a "jumper" and hauled the body home.

The New London Pioneer of the date of December 13, 1848, says: "One day last week, a man by the name of Kelly, living at Kokomo, in attempting to swim his horse across Wildcat creek, the stream being very high from the effects of the recent rains, was thrown from his horse and drowned. It is said that he was in a



drunken frolic and was forcing the poor horse through the raging flood for the third time. After disappearing he raised to the surface and exclaimed, 'Hurrah for old Tan,' his horse, and sank to rise no more."

February 14, 1849, the Pioneer also records: "A man by the name of Love, in the neighborhood of Kokomo, one of the coldest days of the present week, in a drunken frolic drove his family from his cabin, setting fire to it, entirely consuming the house and furniture."

The only authentic account extant of the killing of Jonas Brewer was that related by Daniel Rarey, one of the most reputable of Howard county's pioneers, a short time before his death. Mr. Rarey's only connection with the case was being arrested as a suspect. But he was released without trial, as it was clear that in the deed itself he had no participation. Although many persons of prominence and substantial means were concerned in the affair, every one left the country, and few living, if any are yet alive, have never since been heard from. The disappearance and supposed death of Brewer was in 1849. "Brewer was a handsome, finely built man, who came to Howard county, some said from Kentucky, others, from Logansport, Indiana. He was popular and fascinating. He kept company with a Miss Garinger, although her father made strenuous opposition to Brewer's attentions. Mr. Brewer had a rival, Elijah Tyre, the latter a man of pronounced personality, and of Scotch extraction, and seen generally wearing a shawl.

"Brewer left his pretty sweetheart one day and promised soon to return to her. A few months elapsed and he did not appear, nor had a word been received from him. Tyre had been very devoted in Brewer's absence and pressed his claims constantly. His suit was warmly urged by the girl's father. If the girl felt the sting of Brewer's neglect she never mentioned the fact to any one, and final-

ly she yielded her consent of marriage, if not her heart, to Tyre, and was married to him, to her father's great joy. But the newly founded home was darkened by a shadow that pained the young wife's heart and brought the blush to her cheeks. The tiny stranger was not a welcome guest.

#### THE ASSASSINATION OF JAMES BREWER.

"One day the word went round that Brewer had returned. The husband was morose and went about his work sullenly. One evening he went to his home and found it deserted. There was an abandoned cabin that stood on the bank of Wildcat creek, near Hopewell church. It was here that a mob gathered and formed its plans. When Brewer was found he was torn away from the young woman's embrace. She pleaded for his life, but to no avail. He was dragged to the church site and tied to a small beech tree. His back was stripped and the man was whipped as hard as lusty arms could apply the lash. The mob had blackened their faces and looked like a gang of negroes. Brewer recognized his assailants, despite their disguise, however, and hurled curses at them, and vowed to kill any and all of them, if his life was spared.

"Men in the mob said that the injured husband, wrought to a frenzy of excitement, rage and fear, whipped out a knife, to the horror of all the mob, who had not intended his death, and plunged it into Brewer's heart. Brewer strained against his bonds and died with an unuttered curse upon his lips. Tyre always denied the guilt of the fatal blow, even on his deathbed, although those of the mob laid the crime to him.

"Next morning broken and bloody switches were found, but not the body of Brewer. A woman was seen running across a field one afternoon, and by farmers working nearby was heard to

shout to her brothers, who were working in the woods, 'They have found the body under the bridge.' The men cut the harness off their horses in a second, and leaping astride dashed away, never to return. Near the bridge was a bog. Here search had been made and apparently traces of a body found. If ever there, it had evidently been removed shortly after this alarm. Where it was removed has never been known. Some said it was secreted in a gully on the James Miller farm, others said that the skeleton turned up by ditchers several years later in the old Purdum farm, just east of the city, was that of the murdered man.

"The next night after the killing warrants were sworn out by Oliver Tyre before Justice Jonathan Fisher and Constables Howell and Tence Lindley began serving them. Mr. Rarey was awakened from his sleep by the barking of dogs and a babel of voices. Going outside of the house in the dark night, he saw lanterns swaying and supposed that hunters had lost their way. He soon learned his mistake, and to his astonishment was placed under arrest. As Mr. Rarey was able to show that he was several miles away in the hay harvest at the time of the killing he was never tried. The circumstance that led to his arrest was that parties suspected of belonging to the mob had called at his home the afternoon before the tragedy to solicit him to help in the enterprise."

"On the day of our August election," says the Pioneer, Howard county's first newspaper, in its issue of Wednesday, August 7, 1850, in "Harrison township, the most horrible and heart-rending affray took place, that we have ever been called upon to witness. There appears to have been an old grudge and dispute between the parties for some length of time, and the encounter was designed and premeditated. The assailants, Brohard and Lane, retired at an early hour, selected their ground, and after some parleying, a ring was formed, into which the parties stepped, and commenced a

fearful onset, encouraged by their friends, respectively. After dealing each other some half dozen or more blows with the fist, the brother of Lane interfered by violently pushing Brohard aside from his opponent. Lane instantly tottered and fell dead upon the ground. His friends soon removed him to a neighboring brook, and two physicians were promptly called, and all means used that could be to resuscitate the dead man, but to no effect." Dr. Lewis Kern, a pioneer of Harrison township, who was at the election when the difficulty between John Brohard and Jesse Lane occurred, described it picturesquely :

"Lane approached Brohard, who, by the way, was a large, raw-boned man, and apparently much stronger than Lane. But the Lanes boasted of being of fighting stock. After applying various vile epithets to Brohard, Lane dared him to fight, and Brohard said, 'Jesse, I do not want to have any fight with you here. I am willing to acknowledge that you are a better man than I am and let us make friends.'

"When Aaron Lane, Jesse's brother, drew a ring on the ground and remarked that 'If he was not a d—d coward he would enter the ring, and his brother would whip him.' Brohard replied, 'To show you that I am no coward, I will enter the ring,' which he did in a perfectly cool manner, while Lane had his coat off and a belt fastened around his waist, foaming with rage. He sprang at Brohard. The first lick Brohard knocked off and dealt Lane a blow in the region of the heart. Lane fell over muttering a curse and died."

Brohard was arrested for the affray and first taken before James T. McCrary, justice of the peace, and his bond fixed at two hundred dollars. His sureties were James and Barnett Brohard. J. F. Fanchier filed the affidavit August 5, 1850. September 14, 1850, Brohard's bond was raised before Henry B. Havens, justice

of the peace, to eight hundred dollars, and the charge raised to manslaughter. In November, the same year, Brohard was tried by jury in the circuit court and fined three dollars for the affray.

In 1856 the law authorized a jury in coroner cases. That year "Scott" Mitchell committed suicide. Thomas A. Armstrong was coroner, and the jury empaneled comprised Hiram Newlin, Len Mills, John W. Travis, J. K. Will, C. Stafford, R. H. Porter, Samuel T. Mills, Daniel M. Centine, R. H. Birt, O. B. Todd, H. B. Havens and Henry Ulrich. Mitchell was found dead one morning at eleven o'clock, at his home, which stood upon what is now the Congregational church corner. Mr. Mills broke through a window and opened the front door for the entrance of the citizens. Mitchell was stretched upon the floor. He had securely shut up the house, and dressing himself in his best clothes, he had laid down upon the floor, holding a shotgun against his body. He pulled the trigger with his foot. His family were all away from home. The reason of his act was never known. Strange as it may seem, he had begged earnestly of his friend Mills to go hunting with him early that morning. It was supposed that he had purposed killing Mills and shooting himself.

In 1860, a six-year-old daughter of Levi Sizelove, living in the eastern part of the county, was killed by a tree the father chopped down, he not knowing that she was there. The same year Joseph W. Davis, of Fairfield, killed his father by striking him over the head with a stick of wood, as the sequel of a quarrel. Davis received a sentence of two years.

#### HANGED BY A MOB.

John Thrall, on May 27, 1863, shot to death Nelson J. Cooper and fatally wounded the Rev. John W. Lowe, who died the next day. Thrall was a horse thief and while attempting to resist arrest

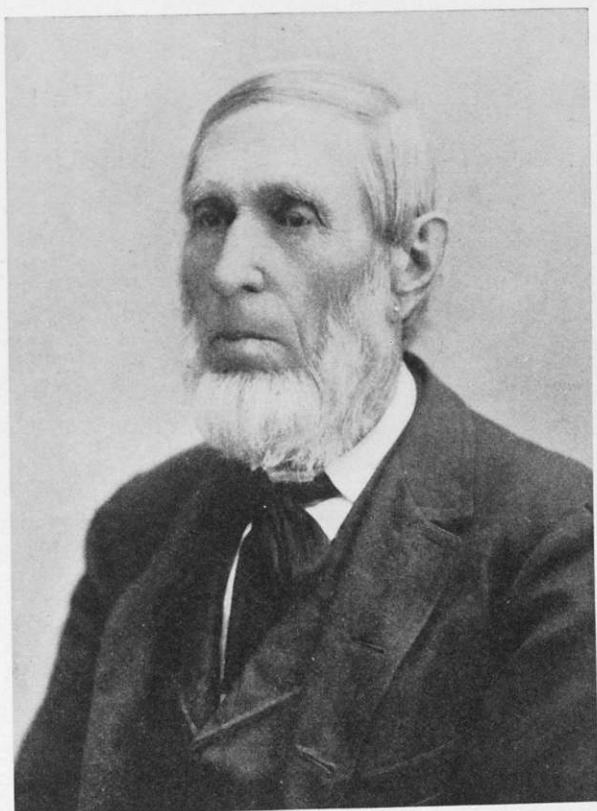


perpetrated the crimes, for which he was hanged by a mob. Captain H. H. Stewart was deputy sheriff under N. B. Brown, and had received word to be on the lookout for horses stolen at Anderson. When Thrall and his companion, whose name has not been officially preserved, arrived at the Nelson Cooper barn on the north side of the court house square with the horses word was sent to Captain Stewart, who, with a party of friends, was dancing a quadrille, a few squares removed from the livery stable. Stewart at once left for the livery stable, where he found the men mounted upon the stolen horses. He examined the animals and was soon satisfied that they were the horses described in a letter received by the sheriff. The men started to ride away, whereupon Stewart ordered Mr. Cooper to assist in their arrest. As Mr. Cooper reached toward the bridle, Thrall whipped out his revolver and sent a bullet into his brain, which bullet entered at the side of Cooper's nose, and he was instantly dead. Then Thrall opened fire upon Stewart, who was shot in the hand. The missile peeled the flesh back, and this same bullet sped toward the Rev. Lowe, whom it struck in the side wounding him fatally. To escape the next shot Stewart threw himself beneath the horse. Fearing his further safety Thrall started from the stable on a gallop, his companion having already fled, proffering Thrall no assistance. Proceeding west on Walnut street, Thrall was about to reach the railroad tracks, when confronted by Justice of the Peace Thomas Auter, a doughty character, who, inspired by the excitement of the moment, without knowing its cause, but hearing the cries to stop Thrall, picked up a brickbat, which he hurled with a lusty arm at Thrall's head. The horse thief, to escape the missile, swung to one side, whereupon the saddle turned with him. Henry B. Steward, a son of Coroner John Steward, and an expert shot, just returned from the army on a furlough, was standing upon the Dennison corner and brought Thrall down by



a shot which shattered his leg. He had said upon the instant that he would not kill Thrall, but he would wound and disable him, as he did. Thrall lay wounded in the street when Coroner John Steward advanced upon him to demand his arrest. Thrall yet held in his hand the weapon which had caused Cooper's death and mortally wounded the Rev. Lowe, but he made no attempt to use it on the coroner. He submitted to arrest peacefully and for safety was taken to the third story of the old Henderson hotel. The owner,—not the man after whom the hotel was named—appeared in a frenzy of excitement, brandishing an ax, exclaiming that he didn't propose to have any murderer in his house, and declaring that he would kill Thrall. Coroner Steward, with Thrall's weapon, commanded the landlord to immediately go below, which he lost no time in doing. Coroner Steward then conducted his prisoner to jail.

Meantime a searching party pursued Thrall's companion, who was followed to a swamp northeast of the city, but who managed to escape detection by hiding under a log over which his pursuers passed. At night he escaped, and while it has been reported that he was subsequently apprehended and sent to the penitentiary, this appears a mistake, as Captain Stewart says that he made a thorough investigation, even at the penitentiaries, and that Thrall's companion was never apprehended and convicted. Thrall was very bitter toward his companion. He said that as they had approached Kokomo they had stopped at the Washington street ford of Wildcat creek and pledged themselves to escape or die together, as they "swigged a slug of whiskey." Instead the companion deserted Thrall the moment trouble introduced itself. Thrall was happy in the death of Mr. Cooper, but regretted that of Mr. Lowe, and was sorry that he had not hit Captain Stewart. Public excitement reached its height on the night following the Rev. Lowe's death and a mob formed to execute summary justice to Thrall. He had



JOHN STEWARD.



expected something of the kind. His need of being in fear of the event had been shouted to him through the bars of his cell, from outside of the windows. He noted these warnings mentally, but did not condescend to answer concerning them. But that he was impressed with the fate before him was evident in his sending for Coroner Steward. To that official he made a remarkable confession. He said his name was not Thrall at all. He revealed to the coroner his real name, under pledge that it never be revealed. Forty years Coroner Steward kept that secret in his breast and he carried it with him, as he had promised, to his grave. Thrall—for that must be the name by which he is to be known—confided the information that he was from the southland, and that he was a member of a prominent family, and that his situation had once been an honorable and prosperous one. To save his aged mother and family from the shame of a knowledge of the true circumstances of his death he would keep forever his identity a secret. He said that he had been a merchant, but a Union man in a southern state. Every attempt had been made to induce him to recant his sentiments and to impress him into the Confederate service, but without avail. His business was wrecked, he said, by a mob of southern sympathizers, and his property destroyed. Thrall saved five hundred dollars out of the wreck, bid his family "good bye," promising to return if all went well, and fled to the North. He landed in Indianapolis, Indiana, and worked a while in a tannery, but soon fell into dissipation and bad habits. Losing his situation as the result of a jealous quarrel with his foreman, he became a peddler of fruits upon the streets of Indianapolis, but finally, attracted by the high prices horses were bringing, if sold for the use of the Union Army, he entered upon horse stealing upon a wholesale plan. He gave his watch to Sheriff Brown and his ring to Coroner Steward. That night the blows upon the iron doors of the jail resounded throughout the city, but no man

was calmer through all the excitement than Thrall. No man ever faced a mob more bravely. Roughly handled, despite his wound, he hobbled to the court house yard without a murmur. He stood upon a box and faced the seekers of his life defiantly. Examining the noose which hung above his head, he found that it was too long, and with his own hand adjusted it to his neck. He whipped out a handkerchief and tied it around his body to symbolize his innocence over the guilt of the mob, which he defied to do its worst. While he was yet speaking he was swung off. Those popularly supposed to be connected with the mob never prospered afterward and suffered a great deal in consequence of it, leaving the locality ultimately and ever afterward expressing regret at the part they had taken in Thrall's death. His body was cut down, but refused burial in the old cemetery. He was buried beneath a tree upon the east, just outside. It was even difficult to secure burial of the remains, feeling ran so high. While Thrall was buried it was always the claim that his body had not a long repose, and it was the general belief that the skeleton beneath the stairway of a prominent drug store of Kokomo, which rested there for years, was that of Thrall. The body of his victim, Nelson Cooper, was removed from the old cemetery to Crown Point cemetery, forty years after the burial, and was laid not far from the Rev. John Lowe, the second of Thrall's victims.

#### JEALOUSY LEADS TO A CRIME.

Inflamed with jealousy, Dr. Henry C. Cole shot dead, October, 1866, Chambers Allen, as Allen was leaving the postoffice, then on Buckeye street, near Walnut street. Dr. Cole and his first wife, Nellie Cole, a beautiful woman, had many domestic disagreements. Upon one occasion, returning to Kokomo after an extended absence, Dr. Cole found a sale of his household goods in progress, which he

declared unauthorized, and to which procedure he put an abrupt end. Despite their disagreements, he was greatly in love with her. He did everything in his power to maintain the harmony of their domestic relations and did not divorce her until after he had shot Allen. Dr. Cole, in the shooting, acted upon the belief that Allen had invaded his home. He had warned Allen to keep away from Kokomo; it is said he even wrote Allen a letter, warning him to remain away from Kokomo, plainly informing him that he would meet death if he ventured a return. It was generally known in Kokomo, in that day, that Cole had threatened Allen's life. The first sight of Allen was enough to inspire Cole with a frenzy, and he fired three shots into Allen. Cole was arrested and at first denied bail, being confined within the Washington street jail, but later was released upon ten thousand dollars bond. He took a change of venue December, 1866, to Tipton county, where he was tried for murder and acquitted upon a plea of emotional insanity, his defense in chief being conducted by Senator D. W. Voorhees. Dr. Cole was one of Kokomo's most picturesque personalities, and himself was the victim of a violent death. Dr. Cole was of a tall and graceful build, with lustrous eyes, and had a magnificent beard, which was with him a matter of great pride. He always dressed faultlessly in his day, the best tailor-made clothes gracing his figure. He wore an appropriate ornamentation of jewelry, and had delicate, small hands and feet, and was a man of fascination among women. His father, Jesse Cole, a Kentuckian, moving to Ripley county, where Dr. Cole was born, was noted through life as impulsive, self-willed, and a thoroughly determined man, and such was his son, Dr. Cole, who was a determined and admittedly desperate man. He would shoot, if he so decided, and this trait known, he was greatly feared. He inspired the most devoted, loyal and undying friendships, and enmities as bitter as could be imagined. He had been an army



surgeon and had gained a wide reputation in his day as a physician of great skill and a surgeon of rare ability. For a friend, especially a poor man, he would drive any distance, and upon the most inclement night, with the certain knowledge that he would not receive a cent's pay. He has been known to threaten to throw downstairs a poor patient offering to pay him a bill, remarking that he "would charge the amount up to some rich patient." He inspired the love of children. But an enemy he hated with all the hatred of his soul. Dr. Cole's name has been connected with many daring and elaborate schemes of revenge, and with unlawful things, but no proof against him ever appeared. Guilty or innocent, no man's name was ever more freely used in connection with transactions, proof of his direct connection with which would have landed him behind the bars, if not sentenced him to the gallows. Yet proof of such connections were never even attempted. He vehemently denounced his enemies as the authors of "these vile slanders" one and all. He had enemies, and scores of them, and they hated him as cordially as he hated them. Yet in private life he was as kind and mild-mannered as a man could be. A candidate for mayor, Dr. Cole's enmities grew to white heat. He gave no compromise and expected none. It was while holding this office that he met death, breathing his last upon the same night that Garfield died. The roar of shot guns was plainly heard throughout the city before midnight. The people rushed toward the spring mills, hearing the report that Dr. Cole had been shot, and his body lay upon the commons to the west of the mill, cold in death. The explanation was that Dr. Cole had planned the burning of the mill, and that he had purposed its robbery with the intention of secreting the flour upon the premises of an enemy, but, anticipated by a sheriff's posse, was shot to death while attempting to flee the place. He was said to have been betrayed by an accomplice in his purposed act. A post mortem of the body

was held. His nose was broken, which was said to have been caused by his running against a wood pile in the attempt to escape. He was also shot in the knee, the claim being that this was the first wound, received as he ventured up to the mill window to enter, to join his confederate in carrying out flour. In his heart was found a small bird shot, pronounced the cause of death, and received, it was said, while in flight, and refusing to submit to arrest. A coroner's investigation before Dr. J. C. Wright, of Russiaville, was held. The state of facts presented were testified to by those participating in the capture and death of Cole. His friends refused to believe that he had attempted a theft and claimed that his death was consummated elsewhere, but no such proof was ever adduced and the explanations of the posse stands unimpeached until this day. In the removal of Dr. Cole, Kokomo lost a picturesque and forceful personality, of whom friends speak in kindness and of whom those who disliked him speak in harshest terms, economizing no word to his disparagement.

The prosecution of Jonathan Binns for the murder of his wife, Rachel Binns, January 31, 1870, was one of the most notable in the criminal annals of Howard county. At the time the killing took place there was a suit pending in the Cass circuit court by Mrs. Binns against her husband for a divorce, in which she charged Binns with various things, among them consorting with bad women. Mrs. Binns was shot while at her home at Russiaville, at night, between 8 and 10 o'clock, through a window. When dying she stated that her husband had shot her. She stated that he had said that he could and would shoot her if she did not sign certain papers concerning some money. Binns attempted to prove that he was at Kokomo, ten or twelve miles distant, at the time the crime was committed. Twice convicted, Binns secured a reversal of the case in the supreme court, first upon the ground that he had been wrong-

fully deprived of a continuance of his case, for which he had asked, and to which he was entitled under the law. He succeeded in his second appeal upon the ground that his wife's declarations of his guilt of her death were wrongfully admitted in evidence, in that she had not seen him before receiving the fatal shot, but had merely expressed the opinion that it was he because of their past differences and his threats against her. The state was able to show the presence of Binns near the residence of his wife a short time before her death.

In August, 1877, Michael Gillooley killed Thomas W. Lannon at the junction and was prosecuted for murder in the first degree. Lannon was a policeman and had once arrested Gillooley for frequenting a house of ill fame. The state showed that Gillooley had threatened to kill Lannon in consequence. Gillooley was convicted of murder in the first degree. The leading witness against him was Rev. Father Francis Lordeman, who had admonished Gillooley against carrying out his threats. Gillooley took an appeal to the supreme court, claiming that the testimony of Father Lordeman was violating the confidence of the church, but this plea was overruled and the conviction affirmed in November, 1877, by the supreme court. As the death penalty had been imposed, the gallows were building when a public agitation for the prisoner was started. The matter was carried to "Blue Jeans" Williams, then governor, who commuted the sentence to imprisonment for life. Gillooley was pardoned a short time before his death. He had threatened the death of the trial judge, but ended his days quietly.

#### HANGED FROM A BRIDGE.

Richard Long was hanged by a mob upon the Main street bridge Monday night, April 3, 1882. The iron structure then standing had a support above. Long was accused of having outraged

the little daughter of Ed Pritchard. He was arrested and placed in the Washington street jail. The Sunday preceding his execution an excited throng faced the jail, throwing a rope over the fence at frequent intervals and breathing threats. But this was not the agency of Long's death. The unorganized throng was merely the froth of public feeling. Later a mob was deliberately organized in the Haskett grove, and it chose a leader, who was such in name and in fact. Monday night the mob tore Long from the jail. He was conducted along High street in his stocking feet, pale with excitement, but not yet seriously impressed with the belief that he was actually to be hanged. He made no appeals, but walked bravely forward. Arrived at the bridge, Long was lifted upon a box and the rope put around his neck. It was found too short to reach over the girder above and one of the mob climbed to the height and fastened it to a beam above the box. At this juncture the Rev. Robert McCune, pastor of the First Congregational church, and Hon. J. Fred Vaile, later of western and national fame as a lawyer, arrived and pleaded in vain with the mob for the life of Long. Vaile even called upon the men to aid him in rescuing the condemned man, but to no purpose. No one responded. Long was asked if he had anything to say. He requested the privilege of singing "See That My Grave Is Kept Green," and the strain was interrupted with the exclamation, "Shove a hot potato in his mouth." When the last words faded from Long's lips the box was kicked from beneath him and he swung to his death. The body was cut down next morning and exhibited in the north corridor of the court house. His body was supposed to have been buried in the old cemetery, and for a season his grave was covered with a bunch of flowers, planted by unknown hands, which attention ceased finally altogether. Some said his body was never buried, but be that as it may, a coffin was at least. Long denied to the last his guilt of outrage, and it seems

that the proof of that point has never been clearly established and remains to this day a matter of grave doubt. Long confessed to horse stealing, and admitted that he had served in the Michigan City penitentiary, but denied the rape, evidences of which it was asserted were established by the condition of his clothing.

During the administration of J. F. Elliott, prosecutor of Howard and Tipton counties, occurred one of the celebrated trials of this locality. William Dougherty was tried for homicide in the alleged felonious killing of Joseph VanHorn, in the saloon of the Howard House. The shooting grew out of alleged offensive remarks made by VanHorn imputed against the chastity of Dougherty's sister. Dougherty was tried at Tipton and acquitted.

During the administration of A. B. Kirkpatrick as prosecutor William Malosh received a sentence of nine years in the penitentiary for burning the Union block. The trial was had in 1887.

In the same year Ollie Hawkins was convicted of the killing of Richard Hacse through jealousy and was defended by Senator D. W. Voorhees. Hawkins received a seven-year sentence, but was pardoned.

December, 1888, John E. Fleming, an escape from the Marion, Indiana, jail, shot Robert L. Jones, sheriff of Grant county, in a house in Jerome, Indiana, where the sheriff was trying to effect Fleming's arrest. Fleming was captured and convicted, but escaped even from the penitentiary, but was apprehended. His sentence was for life.

In 1891 George Tykle received a sentence of two years in the penitentiary for criminal negligence in boiling a man named Clark to death. Tykle conducted a bathing establishment and it was shown that Clark was a helpless paralytic and, placed in a bath tub, was left alone, and while in this situation the natural gas in the burner either came up or was turned up by third parties, with the



result that Clark was literally boiled alive, the flesh from his bones floating about the tub when his body was discovered and removed. The fact is that Tykle, who was a well-read and well-educated man, but had his own theories about things, was grieved to death over the misfortune, as Clark was his best friend and a sincere believer in the water cure theories of Tykle.

#### THE MOLIHAN GANG.

During the seventies the Molihan gang flourished in the Junction district. All manner of crimes were laid at the doors of this reputed gang, but if guilty its members were never ascertained, apprehended and brought to justice. It was claimed that its ramifications extended so far that justice was nullified and detection rendered out of the case, and that it perpetrated crime with impunity and after a studied plan. A wholesale robbery of farm houses and city residences of silverware was one plan supposed to be backed by the gang, and several bodies cut to pieces upon the railroad tracks at the junction were said to have been men murdered and then placed there by this gang, the booty of which, it was claimed, was sold in Chicago by those whose names, if revealed, would have caused surprise. At any rate the terror of the gang caused deep apprehension in the minds and hearts of the Kokomo public, and when the Molihan saloon passed away and the reputed gang melted away the public breathed a sigh of relief.

September 4, 1901, Jacob Dotterer was killed at his home in Howard township, near Vermont. The aged man was attacked by four men, two of whom were masked, this fact leading the authorities to believe that they were Howard county men, while the unmasked men were strangers. The report seems to have got abroad that Mr. Dotterer was to receive, on the night that he was



fatally shot, the purchase price of his farm, and his assailants planned to rob him of his money. Two of the men were seen to cross the fields from Vermont station and lie in wait for the appearance of the purchaser of the farm, who, later, came to the Dotterer home, where he remained about half an hour. Soon a knock was heard at the front door of Mr. Dotterer's home, which summons he answered in person, lamp in hand. He was confronted by the two masked men, who commanded him to surrender. He hastily set the lamp upon a stand and gave battle to the strangers, knocking both down and worsting the rest of the party as they advanced upon him. Although a man of sixty-five years of age, he proved a "genuine surprise party" for his assailants. He was worsting them all, when one cried out, "Well, I guess we will have to kill the old man." With that a shot rang out and a bullet plowed through the old man's stomach, entering from the side. Dotterer fell and with a dying strength reached into his pocket, and drawing out two hundred and forty-two dollars he had there, hurled it up a stairway, where it fell unnoticed into a recess in which it was not discovered by the robbers. The old man being shot, the robbers compelled Mrs. Dotterer to open the safe, after she had fought one of the number and torn his shirt off, while they held Mrs. Roll Dotterer at bay. In the safe was found sixty-five cents. A search of the house discovered fifteen dollars more, which the robbers took away, but this was all they secured. For while the deeds to the farm had been made the money was not turned over on the tragic night. The amount would have been several thousand dollars, and the robbers expected a large haul. When they left the Dotterer home they told the women that if they gave the alarm to the neighbors they would shoot them upon sight. It was some time therefore before the alarm was given. The authorities had parties under suspicion, but as they were about to get evidence to warrant arrests the suspects left the city.

## THE SUTTON-YAGER MYSTERY.

What is commonly spoken of as the Sutton-Yager mystery is one which has never been solved, if mystery it was, in fact. While the death of Francis Sutton, April 27, 1903, and that of Lewis Yager, May 11, 1903, are both claimed to have been suicides, these deaths, succeeding each other so closely, happening in the same locality, and bearing so many evidences of similarity, roused the entire county to the belief that the young men had been murdered. The best detective skill of the country was employed to no avail, working upon the theory of murder and with the intent of bringing the guilty parties—if any—to justice. All the great metropolitan dailies sent representatives to the locality to seek to clear up the mystery, but all these efforts came to naught. Francis Sutton was found lying near his horse and buggy, close to the gate at the Peter's home, not far from Hemlock. Sutton had called the night before (Sunday night) upon Miss Stella Peters, and left her home. He never got farther than the gate at the end of the lane, which opened into the public road. Here he is supposed to have taken his own life, or to have been killed. A large hole had been pawed into the ground by the horse, indicating that it had stood at the gate a long time impatiently. A short distance to one side was found the body of Sutton, which had evidently been spilled out of the buggy when the horse left the gate, proceeding toward a woods on that side. In the buggy was found a revolver, that of Sutton, with one chamber empty, and his body disclosed that death had come from a single shot.

Two weeks later the body of Lewis Yager was found sitting bolt upright in his buggy, which the horse had drawn to the lane gate at the D. S. Yager home, near Oakford. Yager, too, had called upon a young lady the evening before, but had left her home

early and proceeded elsewhere. There was some evidence that he had been at Sharpsville. The buggy wheel was stained with blood, and his toes were jammed under the front rod of the buggy bed. The blood had oozed from a wound in Yager's temple. While suicide was claimed, the position of Yager's feet led to the suspicion and belief that he had been shot and his body wedged into the buggy so it would not fall out, and the horse started homeward. Other circumstances alleged were that the horse he was driving was a high-spirited one and would not stand fire, in the case Yager fired a bullet into his own brain, but would have run away, perhaps wrecking the buggy and leaving the body anywhere along the road. The theory was that Yager had been with several parties, and there was evidence that he had been drinking, as the laprobe smelled of the fumes of liquor, yet it was recognized that this might have been poured on the robe as a misleading circumstance. The elaborate theory was builded that both Sutton and Yager had been victims of a feud of the neighborhood and that both had been murdered. The finding of a revolver in the road near the supposed scene of Yager's death later heightened the belief of foul play, and it was argued that perhaps Sutton had been shot with a revolver not his own, but that his revolver had been discharged once and thrown into the buggy bed to establish the appearance of a premeditated death. It was surmised that both young men had been halted and shot to death while in their buggies. A bogus detective ran off with the revolver and no practical results ever came of the investigations upon the murder theory, but nevertheless it may have been the true one, and time may vindicate it, but the conclusion was accepted by the public that both young men had committed suicide and that the most striking coincident was that they should take their lives within so short a time, one after the other.

Amos Jackson, whose body was rescued from Wildcat creek,

March 28, 1906, was supposed to have been pushed off the Carter street levee by design, but if so the fact was never established.

Attorney I. C. Hoopes, prominent at the Howard county bar, in a fit of mental aberration stole into the parlor of his West Taylor street home, December 28, 1907, sending a bullet through his brain, death resulting instantly.

Fairy McClain was shot to death at the home of her aunt, Mrs. Mattie Nay, North Lafontaine street, April 7, 1908. Knocking at her bed room door, which opened off a hall through which he easily entered, the street door being unlocked, Jesse Worley Osborn, her jealous and maddened lover, forced himself into her bed room, as soon as Miss McClain opened the door to see who was there. She being in her night clothes, fled to her bed, and the aunt and her little son fled to the home of a neighbor to summon the police. Osborn demanded that Miss McClain arise and talk with him and that she kiss him. She declined to comply with any of his requests, and defied his threats, which, previously made against her, he renewed upon this occasion. Osborn, who had been drinking, whipped out his revolver with the exclamation, "Fairy, you provoke me," and shot her twice in the head. She fell out of bed in a heap. Osborn fled the scene, although the night was stormy and the rain was falling heavily. A search was instituted for him, but without avail, for some days. He had gone as far as Canada, but homesick, he ventured to return as far as Logansport. Here he was apprehended in the Pan Handle railroad yards by the company's detectives, while riding the bumpers of a freight train. Osborn made no resistance against arrest and was brought to Kokomo, his captors obtaining a reward of five hundred dollars offered by the county commissioners. Osborn entered a plea of guilty and was sentenced to the penitentiary for life. He had, it developed, kept company with Miss McClain for several years, and she finally decided to get rid of him. A

few weeks before the killing they had quarreled and he had struck the young woman, for which offense he was given a jail sentence. While the young woman chose to bear her maiden name and did so, she was the wife of Levi Miller, but with whom she did not live.

Charles Thresher and William Lindley lost their lives as the result of drink, September 28, 1908. On that date their bodies, stiff in death, were found in the gravel pit near Greentown. Sunday preceding they were seen to leave Greentown, jug in hand, which vessel contained whisky, and they remarked to one they passed that they were "going out to celebrate the county local option law," which had just been passed by the special session of the legislature. They remained at the gravel pit throughout Sunday, drinking and eating paw-paws. The jug was replenished at least twice. Finally Charles Lindley, who was with them, staggered away from the place and tried to get his companions to follow him, without success. When he returned next day he found them cold in death, one body submerged in the water and the other staring with glassy eyes towards the starry heavens. The bodies were taken to the Fulwider undertaking establishment at Greentown, where, under the direction of the Rev. Hall, they were viewed by school children who passed by, single file, as an object lesson in temperance.

---

## NEWSPAPERS.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

THE HOWARD TRIBUNE.

The outfit of the Pioneer office (the Pioneer was the first paper published in the history of the county) was brought from New London to Kokomo early in the fifties. The equipment was installed in



the west side of a double frame building, on the north side of High street, just east of Main street. The name of the paper was changed to that of The Howard Tribune, with C. D. Murray as editor. On the east side of the building occupied by the Tribune office lived the parents of Daniel G. Wilkins. "Uncle" Dan, as Mr. Wilkins has been known for years, became a printer by natural associations. He frequented the Tribune office just across the hallway from his home, and soon picked up a knowledge of the business. James Beard, the real owner of the printing equipment, and who had come with it from New London, pulled the press—a Washington hand press—and "Uncle" Dan ran the roller. Mr. Wilkins was also given the employment of passing the papers, the circulation of the Tribune being at that time about three hundred. "Uncle" Dan, who, as a boy, had carried the mail from Delphi to Marion, relinquished this employment. Such trips made upon horseback consumed four days in going and coming. "Uncle" Dan settled down in earnest to learn the printer's trade, and soon had mastered the boxes.

In those days type was set by hand instead of by machinery, and each type was picked from a box and placed in a composing stick. "Uncle" Dan soon learned all the technicalities of the office and was not long in mastering the names of the type used, as the office was possessed of but few fonts of type at best. Mr. Beard was a very agreeable man under whom to work and took a great fancy to Mr. Wilkins, who acquired from him the thorough mastery of the printer's art, which distinguished him throughout life. Mr. Wilkins became an expert and passed almost half a century in the practice of his craft, a certain testimonial to his efficiency, the entire time being with the office with which he had started, he remaining in its service throughout successive ownerships. The Tribune office was finally moved from High street to the north side of the public square, occupying the second story of the building in which was



situated below the Robert Birt tin shop, later owned by G. W. Hocker. Mr. Murray retired as editor of the paper, which was purchased by Clinton Boliver Hensley, of Logansport. Mr. Hensley was an unique newspaper men, but preferred the pleasure of hunting to the drudgery of the office much of the time. But the interests of the paper did not suffer. An unknown but brainy contributor was Dr. L. D. Waterman, who later moved to Indianapolis. T. C. Phillips purchased the paper of Mr. Hensley and changed the name to The Kokomo Tribune, dropping the word Howard. Mr. Phillips was a notable editor of Indiana, and his fame extended even into other states. He was an able, trenchant editorial writer, absolutely fearless and aggressive. He was equally devoid of physical fear, and the indignant man who came around to settle scores for an article to which he objected usually decided to abandon the attack. Mr. Phillips was a strictly party man, being an uncompromising Republican, the only tangent upon which he ever left his strictly orthodox Republicanism being when he, with Judge Lindsay and a number of other leading Republicans, "swung around the circle" with President Andrew Johnson. But it was not long until he had returned to his party fold and his paper and personality were a tower of strength for the political cause which he espoused. His editorials were widely quoted and he expended his best energies in making his paper the leading one of Indiana.

The office was gradually improved and finally moved to the east side of the court house square, occupying two different locations in that district. It was while the office was in this part of the city that a cyclone blew down the building in which the office was situated. Mr. Philips declined to accept contributions to make good his losses, but consented to re-establish his paper upon condition that a certain number of citizens would take his paper for a year. With these subscriptions, and with borrowed money, he erected the Tribune

building, at the corner of Buckeye and Mulberry streets, and equipped the office with a cylinder press and a first-class typographical equipment, including a job office. A tireless worker, he soon made the paper a distinctive one in surrounding states. All this time he clung by "Uncle" Dan Wilkins, in whose untiring labors for the success of the paper and excellent judgment he had implicit reliance and faith. Mr. Wilkins's service was interrupted long enough for a service in the Civil war, and a few months' application to house painting, but when he returned to the office at the earnest solicitation of Mr. Philips it was to remain through the ownership of Mr. Philips's sons, and that of strangers as well, and terminating from the disabilities of old age in 1904.

At the death of T. C. Philips, The Tribune was taken in charge by his sons, Charles Philips and A. F. Philips. Charles Philips was possessed of fine literary ability and is spoken of by those who knew him best to have been the real one of the family gifted as a writer. The paper was now converted into a literary publication, all but losing its character as a newspaper. It invited and paid well for contributions from the noted writers of the day, containing contributions from Riley, Nye, Brady and others of great note. But as a financial undertaking this publication did not pay, the proprietors being unable to secure a wide enough circulation. Upon the death of Charles Philips, and under the management of A. F. Philips, The Tribune resumed its individuality as a newspaper and dropped much of its foreign contributions. Seymour T. Montgomery was prominently connected with The Tribune, and for the time that Philips was a "political heretic" essayed the editorial management and responsibility. Montgomery finally ran off, leaving the city mysteriously and suddenly.

#### THE KOKOMO INDEPENDENT.

Dan H. Bennett established in 1869 the Kokomo Independent. It was a paper which reflected the brilliancy of his intellect and power

of brain. It was not, however, long lived. During the period of its establishment and for several years succeeding Mr. Bennett engaged in the active practice of the law, and with success. It was not until 1872 that Mr. Bennett engaged in newspaper work on an elaborate scale. In that year a joint stock company was formed and a printing outfit purchased. The Howard County Republican was launched. While The Independent, Mr. Bennett's first paper, was printed from The Tribune office, The Republican had an equipment of its own, and asked favors of no one. Mr. Bennett was a tower of intellectual strength, and his paper reflected his personality. He was the only man feared by T. C. Philips, and he gave blow for blow in a manner which counted. Bennett had both the ability and the courage, and he feared neither man nor devil. The publisher of the paper was Will Siddall. When Mr. Bennett left Kokomo it was to go to Logansport, where he took charge of The Logansport Sun. This paper attracted wide attention, as did any paper of which Dan Bennett was the head. But while at Logansport Mr. Bennett fell a victim of an apoplectic stroke and died afterwards from its effects. The Kokomo Democrat once said of Mr. Bennett: "We have met no cleverer gentleman than D. H. Bennett. He has figured largely in the politics of the county and the district. When he said that he would speak out his sentiments, boldly and unflinchingly, in matters of politics, we did not say it unwisely, as we have since learned. In the congressional canvass he was the friend of Dr. Henderson. Dr. Henderson has run up between five hundred and a thousand in advance of his ticket in the district, and it is due to the brave, bold, outspoken words of such men as Bennett that he has done so." The Republican, while in the hands of Mr. Siddall, sustained a misfortune from which it never recovered. A fire started in the office and was subdued with difficulty. The flames suppressed, it was found that material damage had been done. Mr. Siddall was

not enamored of Kokomo newspaper work and left soon after for Indianapolis, making the best disposition possible of the printing outfit of *The Republican*.

The *Kokomo Journal*—first of that name in Kokomo—expired in 1871, while under the ownership of L. J. Templin. In the conduct of this paper M. W. Pershing and S. T. Montgomery had been identified. Mr. Templin met every obligation, making arrangements with the *Kokomo Democrat* to care for subscriptions he had received since the *Journal* had been revived. He said that in doing this he did not endorse the policies of the Democratic party, but desired merely to furnish his patrons with a good country newspaper. Mr. Templin returned to the conduct of a nursery which he had owned upon assuming the direction of *The Journal*. The *Journal* started in 1870, ended its existence in February, 1871.

#### THE RADICAL DEMOCRAT.

The first issue of *The Radical Democrat*, of Kokomo, appeared Wednesday, May 18, 1870. The editor was W. J. Turpin, "Jap." Mr. Turpin was known as the "Tipton Slasher," and was a man of exceptional newspaper ability. After his work in Kokomo he did valuable feature work for the Indianapolis newspapers. "Jap" Turpin is a familiar name in Kokomo newspaperdom, and he created an impression not soon to be forgotten by the older residents. His office was situated in the upstairs of the Dennison building, corner of Walnut and Buckeye streets. The furniture consisted of two chairs, and two tables. A board reached from the head of a flour barrel to the top of a bottomless chair, and upon this board C. H. Havens folded the first issues of the paper. He was the newsboy, having what was known as the public square route. *The Radical Democrat*

was published from the Tribune office. It was but a short time until the word "Radical" was dropped from the title page of the publication. While Mr. Turpin was yet in control of the paper John W. Kern was a contributor to its columns. J. M. Goar succeeded Mr. Turpin as editor of the Democrat. In October, 1870, Dr. John F. Henderson was a candidate for congress, and in this aspiration the Democrat supported him loyally. The fierceness with which the opposition of newspapers was conducted in that day is illustrated in an editorial appearing in the Democrat of the issue of Thursday, October 20, 1870. For instance, the Journal says: "Philips is a malicious liar and an unmitigated scoundrel, and a bald-headed old gambler." Whereupon Philips reminds them that the Journal is a "bastard sheet, with neither paternity nor maternity, and that the editors thereof are thieves, murderers and scoundrels." R. G. Smith, a prominent contributor to the Democrat, said in the issue of that paper November 10, 1870: "Mr. Turpin started a Democratic paper in Kokomo, having neither press nor type, and I know it was often said, by both Democrats and Republicans, that the paper would soon play out, but Mr. Turpin kept the paper a running, and finally sold his interest to Mr. John M. Goar, whom our citizens soon knew as a sharp writer, and who made the Democrat as sharp as lightning." The Democrat in its issue of November 17, 1870, says: "Dr. Henderson, the founder of two hotels at Kokomo, and whose native modesty would not permit him to name one after himself, has assumed the heavy responsibility of the editor of the Kokomo Democrat. The doctor is a robustly constructed, smug and compact chap of the best possible inclinations. Dan Bennet has been engaged and will sling ink in his best style and do up the fashion dispatches. Ed Freeman will contribute half a neck of items a week if necessary, and Walker will attend to the heavy market and banking conditions, and occasionally give his views upon hog cholera." John W. Kern



did work on *The Democrat*. In the issue of March 2, 1871, the announcement appears: "Dr. Henderson went to Baltimore and Philadelphia this week, leaving *The Democrat* to my care. Inexperience and greenness in the business will account for the many inaccuracies and blunders."

Dr. Henderson was an able and courageous writer, and he made a formidable competitor of *The Tribune* in the *Democrat*. In time he was assisted by his sons, J. O. and H. E. Henderson, and later turned the property over to them absolutely upon their return from college. They are today the proprietors of the paper. C. H. Havens, who occupies the editorial desk of the *Kokomo Daily Dispatch*, by which the paper became known years ago, is the dean of the Kokomo newspaper circles. He worked for a time with Dan Bennett as roller boy, and then entered into the employment of Dr. Henderson. Mr. Havens left Kokomo in 1874, returning in 1882 and taking a place at the typographical case. Here he revealed the peculiar ability of which he is possessed. His contributions to the columns of the paper under a nom de plume excited a state reading, being quoted throughout the exchanges of the commonwealth, and were notable for a philosophy and a pathos that created a deep impression in the mind of the reading public. Mr. Havens used no manuscript, "setting the matter out of his head as well as his case." His ability demonstrated, he took editorial charge upon Mr. J. O. Henderson being appointed to fill the office of revenue collector in this district in 1884, and has been in charge since that time. His forceful personality, aggressiveness and brilliancy as a special writer and sound appreciation of news values have given the paper an individual standing among its contemporaries. Yet in the harness, Mr. Havens is desirous of no eulogy, and that will be a topic for the future writer after Mr. Havens shall have closed his newspaper days, but when that time comes his relation to Kokomo newspaperdom will be found to have been one of unusual importance.



## THE KOKOMO GAZETTE.

The Kokomo Gazette was founded by E. E. Russell and William Gause, the office being located upon the West side of the court house square. The office was little more than a job outfit, although provided with an army proof press, upon which the publication was printed. The partnership did not long continue and in a comparatively short space of time the paper became the property of Omer Maris, then of Russiaville, a brilliant writer, who afterwards achieved fame as a contributor to the Chicago Record, while prospecting in the Klondike. Mr. Maris eventually entered into a partnership with Ed Pritchard, subsequently retiring, Mr. L. C. Hoss taking an interest in the paper, and being for a time a partner of Mr. Pritchard. Upon the latter disposing of his partnership holding to John M. Runk, the firm continued as Hoss & Runk, the former finally securing entire control and ownership of the paper. Mr. Hoss engaged A. B. Kirkpatrick as editorial writer, and they conducted an aggressive, bold, independent Republican paper, its circulation soon assuming formidable and somewhat amazing proportions. Mr. Hoss utilized a steam press and greatly added to the typographical equipment of the office. In September, 1883, he established the Daily Gazette. While the Kokomo Herald was the first daily appearing on the streets of Kokomo, many years preceding the Gazette, the later paper was the first daily to stick, and never missed an issue from the first day it was offered to the public. In the spring of 1884 the Gazette and the Kokomo Tribune affected a consolidation, under the name of the Kokomo Gazette-Tribune, L. C. Hoss and A. F. Philips being the editors and proprietors. The name Gazette was carried several years and finally dropped. The daily issue continued under the new ownership and is known today as the Kokomo Daily Tribune. F. M. Gideon was in an early day editor and part owner of the Gazette.

At the time of the consolidation of the Gazette and Tribune William H. Turpin entered upon the scene of newspaper activity in Kokomo, he being one of the most picturesque and striking personalities known in the circles of Kokomo newspaperdom. A correspondent at New London, his humor and quaint style attracted a wide reading and favorable attention. He was offered a position as reporter upon the new daily, and as he once said himself, was appalled with the weight of the new responsibility and was doubtful if he could give satisfaction. But as a news gatherer he had few equals. He had a mysterious way of "getting next" to the most carefully guarded secrets which he gave to the public which made him dreaded. He was skillful and shrewd in building up a large circle of loyal friends, who aided him in many directions. It became a maxim that "Turpin is always next." At an advanced age he was active, alert and divining, so much so that no new men in the field constituted formidable competition. They came and went, but he remained at his post without fear of displacement. His style was not of classical cast, but bubbled over with good humor, and he delighted to "touch them up," as he put it. No man in the Kokomo field could produce the number of personals that he did. They seemed to pour in a stream from his pencil point, and few were able to escape his observation, if desirous of slipping quietly out of the city. With those he knew liked a special mention he gave a special treatment and made many friends among those fond of newspaper mention. When George Gibbs and a party of friends made a trip from the city Turpin wrote: "The special mission of George Gibbs will be to eat two-thirds of the dumplings and all the chicken gizzards, together with the gobble of the rooster, if it is possible to get at it. The proverbial part that gets through the fence last is also a choice morsel that George sets great store upon. It is his purpose to beat a lively tattoo with the drum sticks, and also to try his fortune

by yanking the pulley bone." Turpin was an indefatigable worker, arising at five o'clock in the morning, and was soon thereafter at his desk. He worked through the day, and then long after the supper hour. He wrote all his matter with a pencil, and the enormous amount of copy he produced was a marvel to his younger associates. Had he had an early education he would have made his mark in the higher fields of journalism.

One of the humorous personals he published in *The Tribune* was copied in *The New York Sun* because of its rich flavor of humor. Turpin's early life had been that of an orphan, he finally being cared for by the Shakers, of Ohio, and learned the trade of a broom maker. He naturally held many of the beliefs of the people by whom he was raised, but never gave expression of his heartfelt sentiments save to intimate friends. While with this people he learned much about herbs and flowers and their medicinal values. This knowledge helped him greatly in his newspaper work. Turpin was an optimist of the first order. The financial side of his life was filled with discouragements and trials, but he educated his family and lived well. Regardless if half an hour before he had met with a serious reverse his whistle resounded through the corridors of the court house as he went in quest of news and in the streets as he passed along them. Asked once how he could be so jolly in the midst of what would depress other men he said: "Well, it can't be helped, and what is the use to be thinking about it all the time? There will be another day dawn." An enthusiastic baseball fan, and a polo enthusiast, his enjoyment of a game coming his way was a sight worth while to see, but his disgust was savage if the home team played "rotten." His reports of sporting events were characteristic of his unique personality. His friends were legion, he was "foxy," and few men have been more keenly missed than he from his paper and his old haunts, where his friends saved him choice tips

and good jokes. Turpin, after having worked twenty-two years as a broom maker in all the principal cities of the west, settled in New London, Howard county, in 1868, where he married. He was coroner of Howard county six years, street commissioner of Kokomo nine years, and engrossing clerk of the lower house of the Legislature in 1887. His service with The Gazette began in 1883, and terminated with the consolidation in 1884, when he went to Richmond to become writer on The Richmond Palladium. He was well known over the state as a local writer, and was connected with the Chicago Tribune and Inter-Ocean and other city newspapers as correspondent. Turpin was also engaged in newspaper work at Tipton and Elwood, and returning to Kokomo worked on the Kokomo News-Dispatch, and lastly Tribune, in which later service he was employed when his death occurred in 1907.

Mr. L. C. Hoss was finally associated with his father, P. E. Hoss, in the ownership and control of The Tribune, the elder Hoss purchasing the interest of A. F. Philips, who left the city to engage in newspaper labors in foreign fields. In the departure of Mr. Philips, the last of the noted pioneer family departed, and the name was henceforth known historically only. The Hosses sold the paper to Mr. B. B. Johnson, once county treasurer, and later of the Richmond Item. He operated the paper for several months, selling to J. A. Kautz and H. E. McMonigal, of Wabash. Mr. McMonigal retired and the Tribune has become one of the most valuable plants of its size in the state under the management of Mr. Kautz, and has reached a wide influence.

#### THE KOKOMO MORNING TIMES.

In 1893 S. E. Nicholson, who had been editor and owner of the Russiaville Observer, came to Kokomo and established The Ko-

komo Morning Times, a daily paper. The outfit of the Industrial Union was purchased and installed in the Sharp room, south side of the court house square. In a few months the paper reached a high water mark in subscriptions, and, encouraged by this prosperity, the owner moved the plant into the old Tribune corner. The paper assumed an important place in the municipal election, and its influence did a great deal for the election of A. B. Kirkpatrick as mayor and Harry Bennett for marshal, upon a strict law enforcement platform. Mr. Nicholson was an ardent temperance man and the town was soon "tight," as the word is used in liberal circles. The ambition to become a member of the general assembly of Indiana soon seized Mr. Nicholson, and this ambition was realized, he working for the temperance enactment bearing his name. The actual life of his paper was little short of a year. He struggled bravely against the panic of 1893 and was reduced to pathetic and sore straits in the hope of weathering the storm, but was finally forced to give up the struggle.

#### THE GREENTOWN GEM.

The Russiaville Observer was founded a number of years ago, and is a permanent addition to the county newspapers, to all appearances. The Greentown Gem is a bright and prosperous publication representing the interests of eastern Howard county, being published at Greentown.

#### THE WATER CURE ERA.

One of the earliest of magazine publications devoted to special interests was The Water Cure Era, published at New London in the forties. It was a monthly paper of sixteen pages, devoted to an explanation of the doctrines of the water cure, being edited by Drs.



T. P. Albertson and A. V. Talbert, and was issued from the Pioneer office. A similar publication was, for several years, published in Kokomo at the Invalids' Home by Dr. T. V. Gifford. Aaron Walker published the Christian Foundation, devoted to the doctrines of the Disciples' church.

#### THE VOLAPUCK.

A newspaper intentionally short lived was that published by W. S. Armstrong, called The Volapuck, appealing to the Kokomo public against the Indiana Natural Gas and Oil Company, and for the municipal ownership of a water works plant. During the Roosevelt campaign Mr. Armstrong published The Protest, in which he urged the defeat of Judge Parker for the presidency.

#### THE KOKOMO NEWS.

The Kokomo News, a daily publication, was established in 1896, occupying the old Tribune corner, at the intersection of Mulberry and Buckeye streets. The proprietors and editors of this paper were W. H. Staley and son, E. T. Staley, who came here from Frankfort. The property finally fell in to the hands of W. J. Spruce, and later into the ownership of a syndicate of which R. L. Williamson was the responsible head. The Kokomo News company was finally formed, an organization composed chiefly of Kokomo capital, and the property was taken over by the new organization. L. R. Naftzger was placed in editorial charge, and The News took on an extensive growth and a wide importance. W. L. Austell was business manager. In time the company passed into a receivership, the management falling to W. B. Westlake, of Marion, Ind. When the paper was legally sold it came into the management of Trowbridge & Harris, Mr. Trowbridge finally succeeding to sole



direction and ostensible ownership. He ran the paper for several months, finally disposing of it to The Kokomo Dispatch. In the death of The News, 1908, perished the last of the third paper enterprises of Kokomo. Many have floated upon the sea of newspaperdom and all failed in turn.

Freeman Cooper, who had published a paper at Russiaville, founded The Kokomo Journal, and, after he relinquished that publication, Milton Garrigus took charge of it. The plant was well equipped typographically, but the actual printing was done at The Dispatch office. Mr. Garrigus sold the plant to a company interested in propagating the Populist doctrines. The paper was called the Industrial Union. In the end the paper ceased publication and the outfit was bought by S. E. Nicholsan, who had conducted the Russiaville Observer, and who decided to establish a daily paper in Kokomo.

---

### EARLY DAYS OF KOKOMO.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

"The present site of Kokomo," says an authority," was covered with immense trees and a thicket of underbrush, through which a bird could scarcely fly. There was no improvement here then, but Foster's log house, log barn and a small patch of clearing around them. Where the Frances hotel stands, upon the site of the old Clinton hotel, was once a swamp and fish were caught a few yards north of it. Justice Henry L. Moreland saw a team drawing a load of wood stall upon Main street."

Choice lots in an early day were along High street. They sold for five dollars and seven dollars each. The Howard National Bank and Frances hotel corners could have been bought for a few skins. The Nordyke (or R. G. Smith) quarter section, near the city, was worth three hundred and twenty dollars.

When the original survey of the Foster donation was made, a mistake of one chain was made, and as a result Mr. Foster's yard was encroached upon. On this account the commissioners refused to accept Mr. Foster's deed. The discrepancy was rectified, one of the chief witnesses being John Moulder, one of the locating commissioners of the county seat. Several lot owners were awarded damages.

The original survey of Foster's donation was bounded by Taylor, Union, High and Washington streets. The tier of lots on the north side of Taylor street, on the west side of Washington street and on the south side of High street were afterwards laid off. The cost of the survey has been preserved by the county records. To Austin C. Sheets, county surveyor, was made the following allowances at the December term, 1844: Surveying donation, \$1.50; plat of same, 50 cents; survey of public square, \$1; plat of town, 50 cents; thirty-two lots at 25 cents each, \$8.50; total, \$11.50.

George Gay and Silas Fawcett, chainmen, for cutting off the public square, were allowed \$6.12½ each. Christopher Cromer, marker, was allowed \$4.37½. March, 1845, the record contains an allowance as follows: Surveying donation, \$1.50; plat of same, 50 cents; sixty-eight lots at 25 cents each, \$17; plat of town, \$1; total, \$20.

David Foster was one of the most conspicuous characters in the life of Kokomo for many years. He generally wore a fur cap, a blue army coat and carried a basket. When he spoke he had a peculiar way of lifting his right hand to the level of his head and whistling, and then uttering whatever he had to say. His financial acumen was ever uppermost.

Having one afternoon bartered with S. C. Moore, a pioneer lumber dealer and sawmill man of Kokomo, for the sale of a cow, he returned by Moore's lumber yard, at the foot of what is now

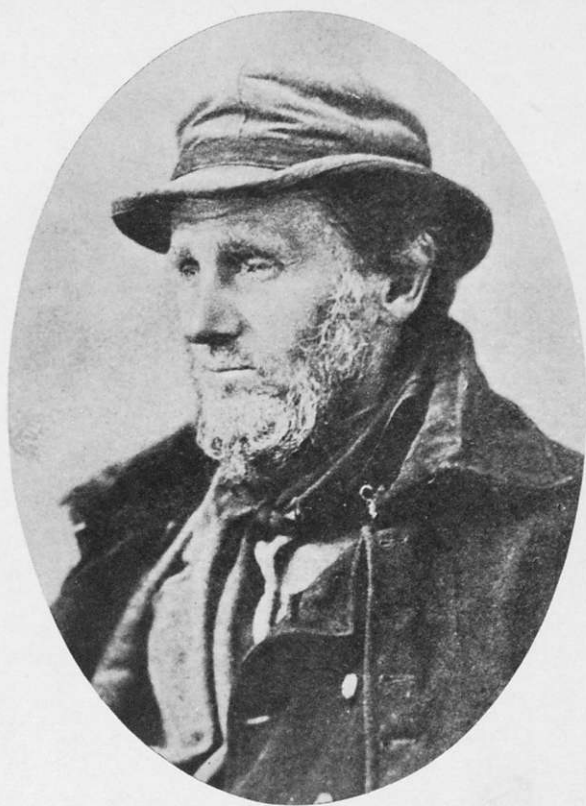
South Union street, at the north creek bank, after his evening meal, and was informed that "Fort Sumpter had been fired upon and civil war was imminent." Foster threw up his hand and whistled. "Ah! Ah! Trying to get my cow cheaper?" He disbelieved the truth of the report. Learning that a friend had sold his farm, and was purchasing many things for his children, Foster observed: "Going! Going! A gold watch! A set of furs! This and that! Going! Going!"

The growth of the town he had seen develop from his log cabin finally drove his family from the double frame house he had occupied for years and which stood originally in what is now Main street. The notable structure was moved to the west of the newly laid-out street and finally given over to other occupancy until torn down.

In his day Foster was a heavy landowner, being proprietor of five hundred and fifty-two acres in the reserve section in 1846, on which he had improvements assessed at one thousand five hundred and fifteen dollars. The land was returned for taxation at two thousand seven hundred and sixty dollars. He owned sixty-seven lots, most of which were returned at ten dollars each, but which aggregated one thousand and three dollars. He had seven hundred and eighty-six dollars' worth of personal property. His total assessment was six thousand and sixty-four dollars. His total tax was fifty-three dollars and twenty cents, which he was not able to pay at once, handing over to the treasurer twenty-one dollars and twenty cents as the first payment.

#### EARLY CITY AND TOWNSHIP LIFE.

There was not much to mark the difference between the city and farm life surrounding Kokomo in that pioneer day. The snow



DAVID FOSTER,  
Founder of Kokomo.









CORYDON RICHMOND, M. D.

was knee deep when Dr. Lewis Kern reached the home of George Snodgrass, on the banks of Little Wildcat creek, Harrison township, April 18, 1846, in company with his brother, Jacob Kern. The doctor was then fourteen years of age. Here and there a patch of ground had been cleared. The country was one wild sweep of woods. The next morning he was awakened by Mr. Snodgrass calling his son: "Newton! Have you fed the cattle yet, Newton?" "No," answered Newton. "You had better feed them," came the response. The son shouldered his ax and advanced into the depths of the forest. He fed the cattle by cutting off the limbs of trees and the cattle ate of the tender part of the branches, "browsed" or "budded." The inhabitants of the county in the winter time lived mainly upon cornbread, venison, wild turkey and various game.

The cabin of Judge N. R. Linsday, the first resident lawyer of the county, and the cabin of Dr. Corydon Richmond, then a practicing physician, in 1845, faced each other on Union street, between Sycamore and High streets. In clearing the woods for gardens the men threw the brush in front of the cabins, and for the families to be neighborly the women had to travel a long way around to reach either home. Wildcat creek, a short distance south, was then a clear, clean stream, with a swift current. In the deed of the Miami reserve the "rapids of Wildcat creek" were mentioned. Alas! what changes.

#### MALARIA.

Malaria was the bane of the city and county. To stay its ravages a tea was made of roots of rhubarb, as bitter a decoction as ever passed human lips. After Judge Linsday moved onto the W. B. Smith farm on West Sycamore street, his oldest son, James Linsday, and daughter, Mrs. L. E. Harrison, were critically ill with malarial fever, the son dying. In that day they had strange ideas

about medical treatment. In cases of measles the cabin was to be shut up as nearly airtight as possible, and it is now to be seen that the construction of the cabins, which was so that the air was not entirely excluded, is what saved many a sick person's life. In fevers the patients were denied water to drink. When Mrs. Harrison was so sick with the malaria, she piteously begged the hired woman to get her some water, and employed every expedient to secure it, but without success. Watching a favorable opportunity when not herself observed, she left her bed and staggered to the spring on the side of the hill, where she drank all the water she desired. There chanced to be a tub of warm rinse water near the house, and prompted by an impulse she enjoyed a bath. Finally seen by the hired woman, the servant's piercing screams set the whole household into a state of perfect terror. Mrs. Harrison was hustled to bed and it was a solemn and agitated family that tearfully gathered about her bedside. The sick young lady's death was expected at any moment, but her experience was her life salvation. She perspired as never since her illness and recovery at once began.

Mosquitoes were very bad in an early day in Kokomo, as they were in the year 1908—history repeating itself—but the pioneers triumphed. A Swiss dress was often serviceable at night to enable people to sleep. They had no mosquito bars, and even if they had these might have proved as unsuccessful as those of 1908.

#### EARLY SOCIAL GATHERINGS.

Upon social occasions, which consisted for the most part of husking bees, the pioneers gathered in to help a farmer husk his corn. Cabin and barn raisings were stellar events, as were log-rollings, when city and town folk mingled to perform the necessary labors of the forest. Oxen were used in preference to horses by the

pioneers. They were more patient to plow through the deep mud and horses were easily snagged by the fallen timber. Going to church was a social treat and the arrival of Methodist circuit riders always welcomed.

At the pioneer parties in Kokomo partners were selected in a peculiar manner. Some person was seated on a chair with a girl and the guests approached singing:

"Here we come, three frogs are we,  
Courting your daughter, so rare so fair.  
Can we have lodging here, oh! here?  
Can we have lodging here, oh! here?"

"This is my daughter, sitting upon my knee;  
Neither of you there, can have lodging here, oh! here.  
Neither of you there, can have lodging here, oh! here."

The seekers then sang a retort:

"We will go farther, and find fairer than you,  
We will go farther, and find fairer than you."

On the next round the daughter was given to one of the three named by the donor, and so on until the entire company was given partners.

The women did not have the conveniences of gas and electricity with which to cook. The pioneer women cooked in the fireplace, which was equipped with a crane, and had skillets with legs and covers, the hot coals being placed upon top of the covers to assist the fire below in cooking. Preparing the meals in this manner meant red faces in winter and physical suffering in August, although out-

side ovens and fires were often used with more convenience and comfort. Judge Linsday was the aristocrat of the place. Before coming to Kokomo he drove with a load of wheat from Pendleton, where he lived, to Cincinnati, sold it, and bought not only a law library, but his wife a cooking stove, the first in Kokomo, and the envy of all the town.

#### FIRST APPLES IN KOKOMO.

The first load of apples ever brought to Kokomo—in fact, Howard county—was hauled here by Colonel T. J. Harrison, son-in-law of Judge N. R. Linsday, the first being brought from the home of Colonel Harrison's father in southern Indiana. Fruit was scarce and none grown in this locality in the first settlement of the country, in the nature of the case. Colonel Harrison was studying law with Judge Linsday and desiring to pay his old home a visit, he agreed to with Judge Linsday to bring him a load of apples if the Judge would lend him a team and wagon in which to haul the load. Had Colonel Harrison driven with a wagon bed of gold into the yard of Judge Linsday, he would not have been half as welcome as he was when he crossed the premises with the luscious and mellow fruit. The wagon bed was loaded to the very top, first with a layer of straw and then a depth of apples in turn, so it was difficult to see how Colonel Harrison had any seat upon which to make the return trip. Aaron Linsday clambered upon the wagon wheels and passed around the treasures to mouths which fairly watered. With his pockets filled and munching a golden specimen of orchard fruit, he started with rapid strides to invite the Bohans and the Fosters to take all they wanted. The news of the arrival of the apples spread, and they were divided among farmers in all parts of the county.

## FIRST DEBATING SOCIETY

The first literary and debating society in the history of the county and in which Kokomo citizens were the leading spirits, was known as the Richardville County Lyceum. Its initiation fee was twelve cents, and two-thirds of those present, at any meeting, could admit a new member. The same vote was required to levy a tax. Every member was to be heard in his defense before fined by the president, and an appeal from the chair to the house was allowed. Any one could retire from membership by paying all the "pecuniary arrears." Leading members were John Bohan, afterwards county auditor and for years a justice of the peace in Kokomo; H. C. Stewart, Dr. Corydon, Richmond, who died at an advanced age at his home in Kokomo; A. North, J. M. Harlin, W. C. Johns, G. W. Poisal, N. R. Lindsay, N. Harding, Thomas Lamborn, J. S. Thompson, D. Foster, J. L. Jones, A. C. Sheets, J. T. McClintock, C. J. Allison and D. Bates. The jolly and joking crew of Kokomo were Dr. Richmond, David Foster, Charles D. Murray, Harles Ashley and John Bohan. In getting off jokes, telling side-splitting stories, and in provoking his listeners with laughter, lawyer Murray was an expert with few equals, and no superiors. A notice appearing in the New London Pioneer, July 11, 1849, for a camp meeting to be held at Kokomo, August 17, 1849, discloses the extent of Kokomo's growth, in a large measure. The notice read: "The ground is selected within a quarter of a mile of this town, Kokomo. We have two taverns and one grocery, hence no huckstering."

The early day roads leading to and from Kokomo, with few exceptions, had no direction in particular. In many months of the year their condition was uniformly bad. The president judges, accompanied generally by several lawyers, journeyed from county to county to attend court. As late as the sixties wild flags grew upon



the public square two feet high. In the earliest days of the town the inhabitable portion was almost entirely included within the public square. The houses were constructed of rough hewn logs. Stores were few in number. Merchants were compelled to secure licenses to sell their commodities. The license to sell clocks was fixed by the board of commissioners, 1849, at twenty dollars. David Foster obtained the first merchant's license by the payment of five dollars, and was to sell his wares in Kokomo. Charles Warren and Phillip Ramsayer, in March, 1845, obtained licenses as merchants in the city, while permission was granted Jonathan Haworth to sell in Monroe township. Mr. Foster's license was granted at the December term of the commissioners, 1844. The county abounded in deer about Kokomo. A dense forest surrounded the whole of Kokomo. The first two-story frame building in the county was hewn out of the logs of the surrounding forest, and occupied by Justice Bohan, in this city, with a store. It was here that pioneer lawyers and others assembled to exchange experiences and discuss various topics.

In December, 1851, a meeting of the qualified voters was held at the court house for the purpose of incorporating the town, with Levi Birt as chairman and H. B. Havens as secretary. These two persons afterwards divided Kokomo into five districts. An election was subsequently held and the following persons selected trustees:

First district, C. D. Murray; second district, L. M. Harland; third district, Levi Birt; fourth district, C. Richmond; fifth district, Adkins James.

#### INCORPORATING THE TOWN.

At the June term of the board of county commissioners, 1855. Henry A. Brouse presented a petition for the incorporation of the town of Kokomo. He showed that a proper survey had been made and that the map, as required by law, had been filed with the treas-

urer, for the inspection of the public. An election was ordered and held at the office of the city clerk of Kokomo on the twenty-second day of the same month. Perhaps the notice was too short. But be that as it may, the election was not held, a showing to that effect being made to the commissioners subsequently by Attorney J. W. Robinson, who pleaded for another chance. This was afforded. The election was held October 1, 1855, as ordered. There were sixty-two votes for incorporation and three opposed. Thereupon the incorporation was duly and legally ordered.

A writer says: "The infant city grew very slowly for several years. The heavy timber and underbrush, and the swampy condition of the soil, combined to retard the growth and prosperity of the town. When the timber was cut down, so that the sunlight could penetrate to the earth, vegetation became very profuse and luxuriant. This decaying vegetable matter created chills and fever, ague and incidental diseases. For many years quinine was an article as staple as flour. It was no uncommon thing for all the members of a family to be confined to bed at the same time. Many moved away because of sickness, and other feared to come for the same cause. In 1852, the number of inhabitants of the town was only one hundred and fifty-two, after eight years of existence." The ague was terrible, and Drs. C. Richmond and his brother, Orse-mus Richmond, were truly heroes, compelled to travel about on foot, of nights, being unable oft times to travel even horse back. The shakings and chills of ague were a positive terror to the pioneer residents of the town and country.

#### THE BANK.

Kokomo's first bank—the Indian Reserve Bank—was organized April 1, 1854, and the articles of incorporation were acknowl-

edged before C. D. Murray, March 27, 1854. Its existence was to continue until April 1, 1874, but, after a few years, it ceased business. The institution was located on the Darby corner. A robbery was perpetrated and the bank never recovered from the shock. The capital stock was for three hundred thousand dollars, and there were three stockholders, David Foster, John Bohan and Harles Ashley. Foster's private fortune was impaired by the break.

Late in the forties, and early in the fifties, the constant cry of public agitation was the fact that the city had voted to take ten thousand dollars stock in the Indianapolis & Peru railroad company, and that nothing in return was obtained, and so far as known nothing has ever to this late date been received directly upon the stock, lost under foreclosure proceedings. But the early residents of Kokomo took an imperfect view of the situation. The gift was more than repaid in the inestimable benefits derived to the city from the building of the road, which forged the new county seat to the foremost rank. In later years the policy was entered upon of giving donations to factories by the citizens to secure the location of industries, and the method was the means of making the city what it has become. But in the location of the railroad a peculiar view was taken by the business men. They turned heaven and earth to have it located along Buckeye street, thinking it would be a peculiar benefit to the property in front of which it passed, and that freight bills and drayage bills could be saved by having the tracks pass along in front of the business establishments. These hopes proved erroneous, and no mistake was greater than locating the road where it is, and for its removal the city and the public would be thankful beyond measure. Finally the Kokomo public entered upon the aid of railroad building with less legal question and with a more prodigal hand. A subsidy was voted for the construction of a railroad line from Frankfort to Kokomo, and from Marion to Kokomo, but in this dual form

the donation was set aside by the supreme court. The sequel was the donation of twenty-four thousand dollars to the Kokomo-Frankfort line. These two roads were builded separately and as standard guage lines, but eventually were consolidated and converted into a narrow gauge system, reaching to Toledo on the east and St. Louis on the west. The road was destined to another change, and became a part of the Cloverleaf system, being returned to a standard guage system.

January 9, 1864, the Jay & Dolman grain elevators, situated just above the depot of the Peru & Indianapolis depot, burned. This was an exciting time in the history of the town of Kokomo. The intense heat of the burning structure was minimized when the wheat, released from the bins in which it was confined, smothered the flames. The problem was to save the S. Rosenthal storage rooms and the Howard flouring mills, removed but a short distance from the elevator, but this object was accomplished. However, on the Monday following, an explosion destroyed the plant of the flouring mill. The boiler gave way. Two men were killed as the result of the explosion, William Leas, a nephew of the proprietor, Worley Leas and M. Weddle, the miller. So violent was the explosion that a thousand-pound piece landed in the yard of the residence of Dr. Corydon, Richmond, cutting off a fence post, close to the ground. Mr. Lease was injured, but not seriously. The loss of Mr. Leas approached ten thousand dollars, as did that of Jay & Dolman. The milling, as well as the elevator properties, were subsequently rebuilt and constituted the chief commercial distinctions of the city for a number of years.

#### EXPLORING FOR OIL.

Kokomo, in the latter part of the sixties, might have realized the glories that she did, resulting from the discovery of natural

gas, in the eighties. A company was organized to explore for oil in 1869, and, as subsequent events proved, the drill, in quest of oil, was within a short distance of gas when the project was abandoned from the fact that the drill became fast, and the well thus started, and so near success, was abandoned.

An election was held March 31, 1865, to determine whether the town of Kokomo should have a city organization, which proposition carried. The ballots voted were not printed, nor of the elaborate description known in late years, under the Australian ballot system, but were merely slips of common fool'scap paper, upon which "No" was written by those opposed to incorporation, and "Yes" by those favoring the step. The affirmative vote carried by a material majority. The official records of the election were recorded with the names of the voters upon common writing paper. The first city government was organized with the following officers: Mayor, Nelson Purdum; clerk, J. A. Coffin; treasurer, P. B. Kennedy; city attorney, Clark N. Pollard. In that day the city attorney was elected by the people, whereas, in 1908, that officer is chosen by a majority of the common council, as the law has directed for several years past.

#### SOME EARLY CALAMITIES.

In the year 1862 there was a tragic event in the history of Kokomo town. A stiff and furious blowing northeaster was responsible for it all. Philip Kemp and companions felt a jar. They were alarmed, but could not tell why. Instinctively they swung themselves from the second story of a low building, on the Darby corner. Then came a crash, a volume of dust, and a mountain of debris arose. T. C. Philip's Tribune was an undistinguishable wreck and a hardware store had passed out of existence. The James-Armstrong firm was erecting a three-story building. It was



to be the building of the town. It was just ready for the roof when a miniature cyclone carried it down upon its humble neighbor. A public calamity had been sustained and a town meeting was called. Despair was written upon every countenance. Volunteers were called for. Mr. John W. Cooper, attorney, among many citizens, pushed a wheelbarrow and loaded brick for three days. At the end of that time the citizens had the ground cleared for the builders. A second structure, in the course of time, mounted skyward, and another building replaced that driven into the earth at the Darby corner.

In the spring of 1870 the entire west side of the court house square was destroyed by fire. The structures were of frame and burned like tinder, and the wind was high, carrying the sparks and burning fragments throughout the village, to its eminent peril. The citizens wore anxious faces and fought to save their homes. Fortunately the fire was confined to the district in which it started through mysterious origin. Mrs. Nicholas Trobaugh was carried out of a burning building and her life saved. The destruction of so much business property was a blow to the town's prosperity, but it rallied in due time, and on the site of the burned district arose the old opera house, started in 1872, which was a big structure for its day and upon the stage of which appeared in succeeding years the foremost play folks of the country and the most eminent lecturers. The fire of the burning structures, exclusively frame, were carried over the town, and it was the fight of every man to save his home and family. J. M. Mader worked like a hero for others, forgetting two fat hogs, which burned to a crisp, and a spring wagon, on his own premises. The bucket brigade was a corps of honor.

#### COMMERCIAL DEVELOPMENT.

Important epochs in the commercial development of the city were the periods when an artificial gas plant was installed. The



city was lighted by the street corner gas lamps, turned out at full moon, even though that did not in fact exist, predicted, however, by the almanac, which governed. Succeeding natural gas as a city illuminant was electricity. Another important municipal auxiliary was the water works plant. Its installation was conscientiously opposed upon the ground that the city was too small to demand so important an improvement at the time and too poor to bear the financial burden of its installation, but no one anticipated the growth of the city, due to natural gas. What might have proven a calamity, according to the honest predictions of its opponents, proved a blessing, when the city grew to proportions surpassing the wildest dreams. In time the volunteer fire department, which included the leading citizens of the city, gave way to a paid fire department. But the old volunteer department, of which D. L. Duke and H. M. Cooper were conspicuous members, with a score of other devoted citizens, deserves a prominent place in the memory of posterity. A letter written by M. M. Pomeroy, of La Crosse, Wis., May 27, 1871, and appearing in the Kokomo Democrat June 29, gives a good idea of Kokomo in that period. His letter is abbreviated:

—“There is but one saloon, or place where intoxicating liquors are sold. \* \* \* But little demand for officers, jails and poor houses. \* \* \* The county jail is not much of an affair, nor is it well patronized. \* \* \* Prominent among her educational institutions stands Howard College, whose able and popular president, M. B. Hopkins, has ever been a bright example, and earnest worker, in the thankless field of education and imparting knowledge. Besides the college named, are several fine schools, with four new school houses soon to be built.

“The finest church in the place is the edifice belonging to the Methodist Episcopal Society, which society is the largest and most prosperous in Kokomo. Next in order comes the Christian Society,

the Presbyterian, Congregational, the Friends, or Quakers, and the Catholics—six societies in all. The spiritualists have a society here and hold Sunday picnic meetings in the grove, near the fair grounds, just out of the city, where their religious exercises are noted for social enjoyment and liberality of belief and expression.

“The Howard county fair grounds are better than the average, and enclose a very fine half-mile trotting track, whereon fast horses compete with each other, for agricultural premiums.

“The principal water course here is Wildcat creek, a reckless, meandering stream, almost large enough to be called a river. It is too shallow for navigation and too even tenored to be dammed much, so it is not used for manufacturing to any extent. The stream is good for fishing.

“The streets of Kokomo are being rapidly macadamized. Some years ago T. C. Philips and friends hired laborers, and, searching for stone, finally discovered a quarry near the city. The great staple is black walnut timber. The wealth from this commodity exceeds that derived from the sale of all the grain. The lumber is sent to eastern cities, bringing from forty to fifty dollars a thousand feet.

“Land sells from fifty dollars up.

“There are six large dry goods stores, twenty-one grocery stores, six boot and shoe stores, five drug stores, three stove and tin stores, three good hardware stores, five millinery establishments and numerous smaller stores. There is a good foundry and four wood planing establishments.

“The ladies here dress in good taste and with more display than is usually found in places the size of Kokomo.”

#### ARREST OF COUNTERFEITERS.

In July, 1871, the city was thunderstruck by the arrest of James Lang, Frank Lang and Isaac Lang, citizens of this place, with Har-

ry Homer, Sam Rivers and Ed Wilson, citizens wherever their hats were off, by an United States secret service officer, upon the charge of counterfeiting. The Lang homestead was about two miles southeast of the city and had been a regular headquarters for these congenial spirits. A detective giving the name of Baker arrived in Kokomo a few months before the arrest of the Lang gang was consummated. He entered into the confidence of the Kokomo city officials, and then hired out to the Langs, ostensibly as a farm hand. His real identity was never suspicioned and he entered into various night enterprises with them, and soon gained their complete confidence. His assistant, in an important sense, was Charles Bechtel, town marshal of Kokomo, who was shrewd in his manoeuvres. Baker finally decoyed Frank Lang to Cleveland, Ohio, where they were to undertake a safe blowing expedition, Baker representing that he knew an expert safe blower in that city. Both Lang and the detective were placed under arrest, but of course, Baker was soon released. About eight thousand dollars, all bogus money, was secured from the gang. Some three hundred or four hundred dollars counterfeit money was found secreted about the premises. In a tin can was two hundred dollars of the "queer" and thirty rings dug up on Sunday from the garden of the Lang home by Mr. Bechtel. The detective discovered one hundred and twenty dollars of bogus money hidden beneath the shingles of the roof of the house. One hundred dollars of counterfeit money of denomination of ten dollars was found on the person of Frank Lang when arrested. James Lang, father of the Lang boys, sickened and died soon after his arrest, and was never brought to trial, but the Lang brothers served penitentiary sentences. The exposure of the gang brought forth from the Democrat an editorial which reflects the excited state of mind of the Kokomo public at that time: "Since

the arrests many foolish remarks have been made, and much foolish gossip has been indulged in. Reports to the effect that quite a number more are to be arrested; that thirty, or forty were implicated in this city and county; that this prominent professional man and that prominent business man was implicated, etc., is all wrong, all foolish, all incorrect, and we fear much of its wicked and malicious insinuations, mean hints and dirty intimations, are too frequent on and against the fair fame and good name of some of our most prominent citizens. The end of all this will be the putting on of a head or two. We know of what we write, and now advise those interested to take due notice of the same. If the detectives suspicioned any one else they are certainly too smart to give intimation of it to any one. And the retail gossipers of this city will do well to look to their own cases, and cease to cast vile suspicions on their neighbors. Every good citizen desires to see all evil doers brought to justice, but no good and much evil will result from the vile aspersions cast against prominent men and ladies in this city. A hint to the wise, etc."

The Mohlan gang, the Lang gang, are but memories. Kokomo is now a leading commercial center of Indiana, characterized by a policy of law and order, a sound moral order and commercial progress.

---

## NEW LONDON.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

The history of New London is the history in chief of Howard county during the forties. The county was then known as Richardville, being named after a prominent member of the Miami tribe of Indians.

New London was the chief seat of commercial importance, and of intellectual progress to be found within the confines of what later became known as Howard county. It was the center of the free soil movement, supported the first newspaper printed in Howard county, and its people were fully abreast of the times. As a commercial point it was promising. It had varied industries, operated with profit, and as a trading center was in the first class. The original plat of the town was laid off by John Lamb, March 13, 1845, the survey being made by Austin C. Sheets, surveyor of Richardville county, consisting of twelve lots, sixty-six by one hundred and thirty-two feet, bounded by Main street upon the west, High street upon the North, Market street on the east, and below Mill street. Mr. Lamb also had lots.

His example in town building was emulated by others, and on June 25, 1845, Reuben Edgerton submitted a plat of lots, west of the original plat of Mr. Lamb. These lots started west of Main street, were bounded on the west by Peru street, and the north and south boundaries followed on the same general boundaries as the original plat, an intersecting street being Church street. The third and fourth additions to the town were by Mr. Edgerton, who laid off his second addition, May 13, 1846, and Isaac W. Johnson, who added thirty lots to the town, December 22, 1848.

The most pretentious addition to New London was that made by Dr. Moses R. Wickersham, February 8, 1849. The most of it lay east of Main street, which is today the dividing line of the town. Dr. Wickersham was one of those who had implicit faith in New London becoming the county seat of Howard county, an expectation destined to be disappointed. Dr. Wickersham laid off a public square, one hundred and thirty-two by one hundred and thirty-two feet, occupied today by an Adventist church, and a seminary square one hundred and two by one hundred and four feet. In announc-



ing the opening of his addition in the Pioneer Dr. Wickersham said: "There is located in the center of the plat a public square, or park, on a delightful and elevated eminence, entirely surrounded by streets and avenues. Also a large area of ground situated in a beautiful grove, adjoining said lots, enclosed by an avenue of forty feet intersected by streets, from the four quarters of the compass, upon which there is to be built the coming season, a public seminary, the building to be forty feet by thirty-six feet, two stories high, completely finished off, for the accomodation of a high school. There will be commenced in the spring, a large four-story merchant mill, adjoining the town. The water power in and adjoining the village is inexhaustible, the second to none in the state. No section of the West offers stronger inducements to mechanics of all trades than New London."

On November 29, 1848, the Pioneer said editorially: "Three years and a half ago, the plat upon which the village of New London now stands was an unbroken forest. Now there are four large dry goods stores, blacksmiths, cabinet joiners, shoemakers, two tanneries, tailors, etc., seven or eight saw and grist mills in the immediate neighborhood of the town. There are woolen factories, turning lathes, all propelled by water power and a fair prospect of a larger amount of improvement next season than of any previous one. We counted nearly fifty good houses now commenced."

#### THE RAILROAD.

New London was a chief center in the Miami reserve rapidly being settled. The Indiana State Sentinel said on November 29, 1848, of the reserve: "Mostly in consequences of the location of the Indianapolis & Peru Railroad, now under contract from Indianapolis to Noblesville, which passes directly through the center of the



reserve, both Tipton and Kokomo being points, and also the near approach of the Indianapolis & Bellefontaine Railroad to the eastern part of the reserve, a part of which road, commencing at Indianapolis, is also under contract, lands are being sold rapidly in the Miami reserve. The Miami Indians for many years held on to these lands as with a dying grasp, and until the balance of the country had been sold out, and settled all around them. They are now sold at two dollars per acre. But very little of the reserve has been sold upon speculation, and the pre-emption law under which a large portion of the reserve was sold to actual settlers makes a large part of it already a thickly settled country. The largest bodies of vacant lands are nearest to the two railroad routes above mentioned. The receiver of public monies at Indianapolis said that for the present month the sale averaged nearly two thousand dollars a day."

New London was incorporated by an act of the legislature approved February 12, 1848. By the provisions of this act the north boundary line was to be one-fourth of a mile north, and parallel to Mill street, the south line to be one-fourth of a mile south and parallel to the same street, the east line the same distance east and the west line the same distance west, both likewise parallel to Main street. It was stipulated that the election for trustees should be held within one month after the 1st Monday in March, 1848, and it was made lawful for the voters of Monroe township to elect a justice of the peace and a constable, in addition to those already authorized by law, the election being set for the 1st Monday in April, 1848.

In its issue of January 31, 1849, the Pioneer said: "The county commissioners at their December term authorized the incorporation of New London, under the statute empowering the electors to hold an election, December 30, 1848. Trustees were

selected as follows: First ward, M. R. Wickersham; second ward, David Rees; third ward, Richard Nixon; fourth ward, Isam Hunt; fifth ward, Jehu Wickersham. These trustees held an election January 18, 1849, electing the following officers: president, Isam Hunt; clerk, T. P. Albertson; assessor, James Harbert; collector, William Black.

The newly incorporated village had laws very interesting, contrasted with the legal regulations of the present day. The owner of any hog, shoat or chicken, suffering any one of the descriptions enumerated, to run at large, was liable to a fine of five to twenty-five cents a day. A fine of seventy-five cents a day was imposed upon any person for allowing a wagon, cart, sled or buggy, or a rick of wood, to obstruct the side walks, as long as twenty-four hours. In that period of time wood was plentiful and was ricked in long and high piles for use during the winter.

The by-laws of the new town specified a fine of twenty dollars upon any one guilty of assault and battery. There was a fine of three dollars for each offense of employing vulgar language, for each unlawful sale of liquor, for running a horse, or any other animal across any public thoroughfare; a fine not to be less than one dollar under any circumstances.

For all exhibitions of wax figures, circus exhibitions, painting exhibits, displays of rope, or wire dancing, theatrical exhibitions, sleight of hand performances, ventriloquist entertainments, or other shows, there was levied a license fee of two dollars to ten dollars a day.

It was specified in law that every male citizen over the age of twenty-one years living within the corporation should pay fifty cents upon each one hundred dollars which he might own in the form of real estate, and sixteen cents upon each one hundred dollars of which he might be the owner in personal property.

The assessor of the town was to receive for his labors seventy-five cents a day, the clerk twelve and one-half cents for each license he issued, and also two cents for each hundred words he recorded. The collector was allowed two per cent. on all monies collected. Liquor licenses were one hundred and fifty dollars per annum, almost a prohibitory fee in that day.

In truth the wood pile question was an obtrusive one in the village of New London, as it was also at Kokomo at a later date. On November 4, 1848, the Pioneer said: "The idea has been suggested to us by a stranger passing over our streets the other day, that our village would lose nothing in the way of taste, neatness and beauty, if the walkways were unincumbered by some large wood piles that have established themselves in various parts of town, also buggies, etc., that have placed themselves (doubtless without the consent of their owners) on the sidewalks, so that pedestrians have to pass almost to the middle of the streets to get by them."

A better description of the town of New London, its commercial activity, and its village life, is not to be found than that contained in a letter written by a visitor in the village and published in the Pioneer, August 18, 1848.

"Near the northwestern boundary, the two branches of Honey creek come together, previous to which they wind gracefully around the town, forming, with the exception of one side, an island. But unlike most islands, the town is located upon an eminence, about one hundred feet above the creeks. On the west side is a saw mill, having a water fall of some twenty feet, which, from the piles of lumber around it, gave evidence of doing good execution. Above this, within a distance of two miles, are three other mills and factories. Below the saw mill a few hundred yards, and a short distance above where the two streams come together, is a fine flour-

ing mill, so arranged as to use the water of both streams, and affording an abundance of water, with an excellent fall. Below this mill a short distance is another mill, and water privilege where a merchant mill is being erected. The commencement of a tannery at the bottom of the hill, on the north side of the town, has been started, which is a good situation, the water being led down a ravine a short distance but with little trouble from a splendid spring near the Friends' meeting house, on the top of the hill, and affording a great abundance of water. Passing up the creek a short distance there is a turning lathe and other machinery propelled by water, with a fall of thirty feet. A short distance above this, and immediately adjoining the town on the road, is another flouring mill with an overshot fall of some eighteen or twenty feet. Above this mill a short distance are two other water powers occupied by mills and machinery. These branches of water fed by springs afford an abundance of water throughout the year. These water privileges have all been improved at a comparatively trifling expense. Near the last mill I mentioned, a bathing establishment is being erected, on the water cure principle, there being a monthly publication devoted to that object printed in this place. This is a town on the late Miami reserve, about seven miles east of the Michigan road, situated in the midst of a fertile and rolling country that would do good to the eyes of a New England Yankee to look upon after toiling over the Michigan road, which, from one end to the other, with few exceptions, affords a poor specimen of Indiana. I need not tell you that New London, which has been in existence a short time, and already numbering some two or three hundred inhabitants, will be a great manufacturing town. There are other villages in the reserve, which I am told, are springing up like magic. I spent yesterday, it being the Sabbath, in this place, and attended public worship at the Friends' meeting house. There was a full congregation

and after a silence for a time so impressive, after the spirituality of their worship is considered, one of their speakers arose and made a short and impressive address. The ceremony of shaking hands took place and the assemblage dispersed. A majority of the citizens of this town will support Mr. Van Buren for President, and I was greatly amused during my visit to see Whigs and Democrats making common cause in argument against the supporters of Mr. Van Buren. I, being a Cass Democrat, and the union being so much unlike anything I had ever seen before, I took very little part in politics during my visit. I was pleased to learn that the Cass men would stand firm, Mr. Van Buren's nomination to the contrary, notwithstanding. In this place there is already a division of the Sons of Temperance, and a Masonic lodge."

#### TRADING CENTERS.

Burlington, on the west, was a trading point sustaining large commercial relations with New London, and thus Howard county. Logansport, Lafayette and Cincinnati were trading centers for the population of the county also. New London became an important live stock market.

In December, 1848, the Pioneer admonishes merchants of Cincinnati, Madison, Indianapolis, Lafayette, Delphi, Logansport and Peru that it was to their interest to advertise in the columns of the Pioneer to extend their trade. E. M. Weaver, of Lafayette, became a continuous and heavy advertiser.

Richard and Zimri Nixon were pioneer merchants in New London. Hubbard & Moss operated a cabinet ware room. Thomas Lightfoot and Clinton Gray conducted a gun and blacksmith shop. William Gifford devoted his efforts to blacksmithing. J. Lamb & Thompson having completed their large and spacious store room,



advertised a large stock of summer goods, expressly for the market, and stated that they desired to buy one hundred head of yearlings and two year old cattle, for which part goods and part cash would be paid. At the "Old Stand," the Nixons advertised that they had every article to be found in a country store, all of which they were selling low for cash and country produce. A. C. Black & Company, conducting a boot and shoe shop, informed the public: "We will try to accomodate, both in working our own leather, or working the leather of our customers. We expect to keep a small lot of shoes and boots on hand the coming fall, which we intend to sell cheap for cash." T. J. Faulkner, a leading citizen, became the successor of Barritt & Company, a firm which comprised J. J. Barritt, C. O. Fry and Patrick Costlow. Merchant & Blackburn were merchant tailors, but later J. B. Merchant bought out his partner, T. Blackburn. Peak & Schooley did cabinet work. The Cincinnati store at E. Whitson's old stand entered the market for four hundred deer skins, and one thousand fur skins, one thousand bushels of wheat, four hundred pounds of butter, four hundred pounds of flax seed and two hundred dozen of eggs. This establishment was conducted by H. G. Robertson & Company. Rees & Company were owners of the Philadelphia store opposite the Black Horse tavern. A. S. Ellis was also a merchant tailor. J. W. Jefferies owned the Farmers' store. L. Brackney opened a blacksmith shop after the death of William Gifford. There was quite a commercial stir in New London when a market was opened in the town and advertisement made for five thousand bushels of ashes, field or house ashes, at five cents a pound, which were to be utilized in an ashery. Lindley & Whin sold stoves, tin ware and stone ware. In 1849 Rees & Company paid seventy-five cents a bushel for wheat.

Moses Cromwell affected a competition by starting a store at his grist and saw mill, established upon the Wild Cat creek, midway



between Kokomo and New London. Cromwell was a characteristic Kentuckian, and figures interestingly in the pioneer history of New London and the early courts of the county. In the milling enterprise he had associated with him his brother, James Cromwell. Finally Adam Harvey, a pioneer blacksmith of the county, established a shop at the Cromwell mill. Harvey had driven through from Ohio with an ox team, which he later traded to a resident of Eastern Howard for his blacksmith tools.

In June, 1849, the London hotel was opened in New London at the corner of Mill and Church streets by E. Whitson, a landlord described as possessing suavity of manner, courtesy, hospitality, being jolly and also good-looking. His stables were large and well filled with hay, oats and corn, while his house was airy and well furnished with everything to make the traveler feel at home, and his table furnished forth with everything necessary to make glad the heart of man. What was known as the Black Horse tavern in the early days of New London was conducted by James Harbett.

The Friends in New London in the early history of the village exerted a leading influence in religious, educational and intellectual affairs. The "meeting house" was the chief center of public life. This structure in its day was one of the most notable buildings in the county. It was large and commodious, and constructed with special reference to the demands of the worshipers of that religion. The edifice was provided with a curtain partition by means of which the men and women could hold their separate meetings in absolute secrecy. When religious services were in progress the men sat upon one side of the church, wearing their hats, and the women occupied the other side of the church, wearing their bonnets. When prayer was offered the congregation arose, but remained covered and turned their backs upon the preacher. The latter never received a salary, but if he needed aught, was always cared for by his

parishioners. The Friends of New London in an early day dressed in the William Penn style, the men conspicuous with their broad brimmed hats and collarless coats. Upon the occasion of the mid-week meeting, invariably held at 11 o'clock each Wednesday morning, the housewife laid aside the dish pan and the man quit the harvest field to go to devotions, which lasted an hour.

Consequent upon its religious life, and its advanced stand upon moral and intellectual matters, New London was a storm center of the slavery question. The Pioneer, an able paper, published in this promising village, stood square-toed for the free soil principles. It was edited by an able, courageous and well educated man, who made the influence of his paper widely felt.

With the Friend the fugitive slave law was an "ungodly law," He felt that he was under no moral obligation to enforce it, or assist in its execution. In fact, he felt that his religious duty was to oppose it, might and main, so long as he did not fall within its toils.

#### EXPERIENCE OF THOMAS RICH.

A case typical of the feelings of the Friends of New London is presented in the experience of Thomas Rich, father of Levi P. Rich, former councilman of Kokomo. Mr. Rich, the older, lived east of New London, and on his way to church one Sunday morning in October, 1856, passed the home of Thomas Roberts, a well known colored man of New London, and received certain mysterious signs which he well understood. He directed his family and hired man to proceed to church, and himself remained behind to learn of the negro what he wanted. He explained that he had seven run-away slaves upon his hands and he was at a loss to know what to do with them. Mr. Rich told him to care for them carefully, and to discreetly let it be known that he purposed to conduct them to the Deer creek settlement, presumably in Ervin town-

ship. The negro settlement in that locality was known by that name at that time. However, it was secretly arranged that while Roberts was upon his way to the Howard county settlement, he should switch off from the usual route and approach the residence of Mr. Rich with his fugitives, which he did.

Mr. Rich had informed his son, Levi, and hired man, to have his team hitched up by 8 o'clock, with everything in good condition, the curtain covering of the wagon tightly drawn and the sideboards on, as well as the wagon bed well filled with straw. All this was accomplished, the seven men secreted in the straw, and, by night, Mr. Rich, the elder, drove the fugitives through to Deer creek, Grant county. Later slave owners in hunt of the escaped negroes, made their appearance in New London and were guided to the Deer creek settlement in Howard county and everybody there was honestly in ignorance of the slaves they were seeking, and finally the slave hunters gave up the contest, little suspecting the actual truth.

With the history of Central Indiana there was not a more active and intelligently conducted under ground railroad station than that which was to be found at New London.

It was in 1871 that Mr. Rich, walking upon the streets of Ft. Wayne as a stranger, was approached by a negro, with a grin spreading from ear to ear. Mr. Rich was always abrupt and to the point and in response to repeated inquiries from the colored man it developed that the negro talking to him was one of the seven "darkies" that Rich had hauled into Grant county. The negro told him that all seven had made their way to Canada, where they remained until the outbreak of the Civil war, when five of their number shouldered arms against their old masters.

#### EXCITING TIMES.

One of the most exciting times in the political history of New London was when Kentucky slave owners attempted the arrest of a

colored woman and her two children. A few years before the woman had been a slave in Kentucky, but, coming to New London, children had been born to her. By the law, the children were slaves, as well as herself. After several years' absence from slavery in Kentucky the owners of the woman came after her, claiming her children. The demand presented in New London awakened the wildest excitement, and roused to a pitch of fury the abolitionist sentiment which was then in the ascendency.

The negro woman and her children were arrested and brought before a civil magistrate. The underground railway clans were in readiness for aught which consummated their undertakings. One of the children escaped by changing clothes with another colored child, and while the mother was attempting to cross the creek upon a foot log she was seized upon by Moses Cromwell, a radical Kentuckian and pro-slavery man, and a well known pioneer of the county. While he pulled upon one side of the slave, Richard Nixon, the typical Friend of the village, tugged away at the other arm. Cromwell was raw-boned, athletic and noted as a scrapper, but the eyes of the "Quaker" flashed and he dared Cromwell to walk over to his side of the log. Finally Cromwell desisted and gave up the negro woman to Nixon's grasp, and went away. The justice of the peace, before whom was the case for the recovery of the woman and children, said that under the law, although an opponent of slavery himself and a hater of it, he was powerless. He set the trial for a future date, and in the meantime the entire colored family was spirited away to Canada.

It was natural that the Free Soil principles should have an ascendancy in New London, but it was some time before they triumphed completely.

The columns of the Pioneer, the free soil paper of the county, abounded in the campaign designations of the time. Loco Foco,

and Barn Burners were repeatedly used as terms designating the political peculiarities of the day.

In November, 1848, the result of the elections in Howard county were announced in the columns of the *Pioneer*. They were as follows: Cass, 355, Taylor, 275, Van Buren, 152.

In 1849 the campaign in the county waxed hot. For the legislature Thomas S. Shepard, a notable pioneer, was the nominee of the Democrats, while C. D. Murray, espoused the cause of the Whigs. Each candidate was at great pains to explain precisely to the electorate his position upon the "burning issue of the hour," the slave question.

Joseph E. McDonald was a candidate for congress the next year and spoke in New London in July, 1849. A state election was held in that year upon the first Monday in August.

New London at that time was operating under an apprentice law of the state, which bore not a few analogies to bondage. A curious advertisement is preserved in the columns of the *Pioneer* of July 4, 1849:

"ONE CENT REWARD."

"Ran away—from the subscriber, living about two miles east of Burlington, in Howard county, Indiana, a bound girl, by the name of Margaret Blaney. Said Margaret left my residence on the 9th of June, without any due cause or provocation; she is about fourteen years of age, of rather dark complexion, and dark colored hair. I hereby offer the above reward—with no thanks—to any person returning her to me; and also forewarn all persons from trusting, or harboring her, or incurring any expense whatever by her, on my account, for I will not be accountable to any.

June 13, 1849.

Absolom Hollingsworth."



The first paper printed in Howard county was "The Pioneer", published at New London, Wednesday of each week. Dr. Moses R. Wickersham was editor and founder of the publication, which had its office in the Haworth building. The name of Pioneer was an appropriate one.

The Pioneer, first in the newspaper field, consisted of four pages, five columns to the page, with a very attractive and tasteful dress, the type being of a size suitable for readers of all ages. The paper was well printed, and copies in existence sixty years after the date of the establishment of the Pioneer look as bright and fresh as if just from the press.

With the sixteenth issue R. A. Mills and A. Wickersham became the printers of the paper which maintained the excellence of its typographical appearance. The subscription of the Pioneer was one dollar and fifty cents a year in advance. Its advertising rate was seventy-five cents a square, twelve lines to the square, for a single insertion, a discount being given for three insertions, the rate for which was one dollar, twenty cents being added for each subsequent insertion. No advertisement less than a square was considered.

The Pioneer had now become ambitious for foreign subscribers and in January, 1849, announces V. B. Palmer as the authorized agent of the publication for the cities of New York, Philadelphia and Boston.

So far as known the first issue of the Pioneer is not now in existence. The third paper printed was July 26, 1848. In this number Dr. Wickersham issues his prospectus, which no doubt, in the hurry of issuing the preceeding numbers of the paper, he had not had leisure to prepare. Editor Wickersham announced to his readers that, "The publication of the Pioneer was commenced without a single subscriber, confidently believing that a liberal and discern-



ing public would sustain us in the enterprise. We now have positive assurances that we were not mistaken. Already our list has run up into the hundreds and daily increasing. All parties have taken a lively interest in sustaining a paper published in their own county, for which they have our hearty thanks. Our only ambition is to furnish a good, moral, family newspaper, such as all may receive into their families without a fear of finding anything in its columns that will have the slightest tendency to inculcate into the minds of the young sentiments of immoral tendency. All the selections will be made from exchanges occupying a high moral position in society, having for their object the improvement of the mind, together with a summary of all the news of the day."

Editor Wickersham was true to his promise. A finely educated man for his day, and a constant reader, his literary taste was discriminating and nice. The third issue of the Pioneer contains articles relative to "Cruelty to Animals," "Children Should be Kind," "Power of Mother's Name," "A Boy Adopted by a Wolf," "Temperance," "He Has Enemies," "Speak no Ill." A serial story is started, taken from the Connecticut Fountain, written by Mason Hodges, and entitled, "A Tale of Our Village." By S. C. Merri-gate. Chapter I—The Cotter's Saturday night. Chapter II—The Grog Seller's Saturday night. Each issue of the Pioneer invariably contained one or two poems.

Before the fifties information of the leading news events of Europe was brought by steamers arriving from foreign ports. The Pioneer of July 26, 1848, contains a clipping from the Cincinnati Gazette. It details the arrival of the steamship Niagara. There had been a terrible conflict in Paris with a terrific loss of life. The Lombard army in Austria had been defeated. The Chartist movement had started in Spain and there were revolutionary movements in Ireland. The foreign service of the Pioneer was complete and regular.

"Three thousand nine hundred and sixty-seven emigrants ar-  
lines. There was no publication of bloody crimes and the details  
of the evil things of life, nor did the charge lie against editor Wick-  
ersham that he prompted by suggestion the consummation of the  
deeds published. His news service was careful, and even a casualty  
was dismissed with a few lines of which the following excerpt is a  
good example. Sad Casualty—A young man by the name of  
Miller, near Rossville, Clinton county, Indiana, was thrown from  
his horse last Sunday and died in a few hours.

"Pure cold water has been obtained at Charleston, South  
Carolina, at the depth of sixty feet from the surface by means of an  
artesian well.

Three thousand nine hundred and sixty-seven emigrants ar-  
rived in New York in one day from Europe. They are of the better  
class, many of them having considerable property, which is in  
specie."

Editor Wickersham had his share of troubles. In the fourth  
issue of his paper he states that, "From the crowd of business last  
week, we were unable to get the Pioneer out. Having taken a fresh  
start we shall try to issue the paper regularly hence forward."  
Imagine an explanation of this character in a metropolitan daily.  
The readers are also told in this issue that, "The editor left home  
for the Buffalo convention on Wednesday of last week, hence the  
scarcity of editorial matter in this week's issue."

But editor Wickersham was not justly to be held to an account  
too strict. His subscriptions were not all in cash. He had said in  
his paper, "For the accommodation of farmers we will take all  
kinds of produce that will command a market either here or abroad."

The Pioneer was established to promulgate the Free Soil prin-  
ciples. The fourth issue contained a lengthy report of the state con-  
vention at Indianapolis, and the fifth issue was delayed beyond its

usual day of publication to present the proceedings of the Buffalo convention, spoken of as a "great movement of the people." Editor Wickersham explains that, "Its length excludes much matter that was designed for this paper, but knowing the anxiety of our readers to see the action of the convention, we thought proper to delay the publication of the paper until the whole could be placed before the public. If we find space we may publish some of the speeches hereafter."

The result of the elections throughout the state also appear in this issue. In the fourth number of the *Pioneer*, the readers had been told, "We have not yet received the official returns of the election, but learn, however, that Blakemore, the Whig candidate for representative of Cass and Howard counties, is elected by twenty-nine majority. The Whig ticket is full in Cass and the Whig ticket in Howard, with the exception of assessor, is elected. In Clinton, we learn J. Hill, Democrat, is elected representative. Report says the Free Soil candidate received more than one hundred votes."

#### THE FREE SOIL SUPPORTERS.

The Free Soil supporters began a vigorous campaign. The Free Soil central committee, comprising John Thompson, I. R. Pheanas, John M. Henderson and Josiah Lamb, called a meeting of free territory friends at New London, Monday morning at 10 o'clock, August 28, 1848, to ratify the nominations of the Buffalo convention. Judge J. W. Wright, of Logansport, and Samuel A. Huff, of Lafayette, were the principal speakers.

In the issue of August 30, 1848, editor Wickersham announces a change in the conduct of the *Pioneer*, prompted by the political campaign, then pending. Editorially the *Pioneer* said: "The *Pioneer* being the only paper published in Howard county and as

many of our Democratic and Whig friends gave us efficient aid in our rather hazardous enterprise, we must cordially open the columns of the little sheet to them for the advocacy of the claims of their respective candidates for the presidency and vice-presidency. For this purpose we will set aside a liberal portion of the paper, freely giving them exclusive control over their several departments, reserving the right to exclude any matter of a personal or scurrilous character. We do not however, apprehend the least difficulty on that score, knowing both the gentlemen to be men who would disdain to stoop to a conflict of that kind. C. D. Murray, Esq., of Kokomo, will speak in behalf of the Whig party and will advocate the claims of General Z. Taylor and M. Fillmore.

"Dr. J. J. Barritt, of New London, will advocate the election of Gen. L. Cass and W. O. Butler. Politically the Pioneer will no longer occupy a negative position. The editor will hereafter present and earnestly advocate the claims of Martin Van Buren, of New York, and Charles Francis Adams, of Massachusetts, for the offices of President and Vice-President of the United States. However humble our efforts may be in the conflict we know our duty and will dare to do it."

In separate columns of the same paper thereafter the claims of the three contending political parties were presented. That the plan did not work without friction is evident in the eighth issue of the Pioneer. The complaint is made that, "Colonel C. D. Murray has occupied a large portion of today's paper, rather more, perhaps, than he will claim in the future. Dr. J. J. Barritt has not occupied full share in consequence of it."

The Whig editor of the Pioneer added spice to the political contest by objecting to the speech of a colored gentleman, delivered at Kokomo, the week before upon slavery. The Whig editor declared that when the colored speaker departed from a legitimate

discussion of the condition of his people in slavery and took upon himself the office of a Van Buren elector, and told the free, white people of the state how to vote, the Whig editor is in the objective.

In the issue of Saturday, September 30, 1848, the swords of the opposing editors strike fire. The Pioneer during September and October appeared upon Saturday, instead of Wednesday. It was impossible that the three editors, in the same paper, should discuss such exciting issues without a clash, which was inevitable and which came.

The issue of Wednesday, November 15, 1848, announced that the election was over and that from reports Brigadier General Taylor had been elected President.

From this time on editor Wickersham is in sole editorial control of the paper. In December, 1848, the editor starts a "Youth's Department" with success, which consists of enigmas, short original articles, selections and scientific questions.

In the issue of the Pioneer of the date of January 3, 1849, there is printed in the lead column of the first page the counting house almanac for the year 1849, and in the second column a poem on the new year.

The issue of January 17, 1849, shows that the advertising habit had been acquired by the public, page three of this issue being almost solid nonpareil advertisement.

The issue of Wednesday, June 6, 1849, contains a detailed report of the Howard county Democratic convention, of which Dr. J. H. Kern, of Alto, father of Hon. John W. Kern, now of Indianapolis, was president. This issue also enumerates seven deadly sins, which are: Refusing to take a newspaper. Taking a newspaper and refusing to pay for it. Not advertising. Getting married without sending in the wedding cake. Making the printing office a loafing place. Reading manuscripts in the hands of the compos-

itor. Sending an abusive and threatening letter to the editor. For the first and second offenses the editor declared that he extended no absolution. The fourth he said was unpardonable. For the balance dispensation could only be received by an especial bull from the aggrieved party.

Wednesday, May 30, 1849, the Pioneer nails to its mast head, "Independent in All Things, Neutral in Nothing."

Wednesday, July 4, 1849, the Pioneer opens its columns "to all parties in politics until after the election."

In this month the common school question began to absorb the chief interest of the residents of Howard county and editor Wickersham devoted the larger part of his issue of July 18, 1849, to a publication of the provisions of the new school law.

This law, which is now firmly established in the legislation and favor of the state, was then a new and untried enactment. People were not sure that they wanted it, and in some counties when first presented to the people, was voted down upon the grounds of expense. Dr. Wickersham, editor of the Pioneer, was certain of the wisdom and benefit of its provisions and through his paper argued its benefits and explained its provisions at length.

#### THE ABOLITIONISTS.

The bitterness which characterized the slavery agitation was realized in the establishment of the Pioneer. The pioneers of the sturdy village of New London determined to publish a newspaper, but as most of them who were formulating the movement were abolitionists, the men of opposite parties were equally determined that it should not be done.

Dr. Wickersham, who was foremost among the staunch advocates of the abolition of slavery, set about devising plans to open



up a newspaper office in the village. He had in view a very primitive outfit, which was at that time located in Westfield, Hamilton county, which consisted of an old hand press and a few fonts of type. Owing to the bitter feeling existing in the county in those ante-bellum days it was hard enough to find anyone who was brave enough to venture upon the road on such an expedition as moving a newspaper plant with which to publish a newspaper whose policy was the abolition of slavery. Dr. Wickersham had been for some time trying to find a man and had been repeatedly refused. "Uncle" Dan Jones was in his prime in those times, and being a strong abolitionist and possessing the qualities of which heroes are made, very fortunately dropped into the office of Dr. Wickersham to consult him in regard to an obstinate attack of ague from which he had been suffering. After the doctor had prescribed for his patient he cautiously approached him upon the question of moving a newspaper plant from Westfield and soon got a proposition from him that he would undertake the dangerous enterprise for a dollar a day, if the doctor would cure the ague in the bargain. The proposition was readily accepted and Mr. Jones, as soon as he had partially recovered from the ague began to prepare for the journey. He secured three yoke of cattle and a driver whose name was Reese White, and made the trip to Westfield without any remarkable incidents on the way. The doctor had supplied him with a jug of bitters and two long pistols to use if emergency demanded.

The press was loaded at Westfield and the return journey began early one morning and they met with no opposition during the entire forenoon, but they had not gone far through the almost impenetrable forests of the Michigan road, in the afternoon, until they were accosted by five men who had heard of the attempt to start an abolition paper and determined to "nip it in the bud." The leader of the gang rode up to their wagon and demanded a pass, upon

which Mr. Jones drew forth two long pistols and remarked that the weapons were the only passes he had with him. This seemed to prove a very strong argument, as the opposing men had no arms and did not seem to desire to go up against such a strong battery. This scene took place between Michigantown and Middlefork and after the men drew back a few hundred yards to hold a consultation of war they rode off into the woods and gave no further trouble. The assailants were not masked and were easily identified. They were: James Creeson, Err Cox, Sampson Allen, William Allen and Mr. Miller. The onward march of the newspaper was unimpeded during the rest of the way. About dusk the men stopped at the cabin home of Samuel Merrick, four miles west of Russiaville, where themselves and their oxen were hospitably entertained over night. They resumed the journey early next morning and arrived at New London at 4 o'clock. Thus it was made possible to introduce in Howard county the first newspaper.

The office was finally moved to Kokomo, the Pioneer being the predecessor of the Kokomo Tribune.

Dr. Wickersham was a native of Wayne county, Indiana. Later he practiced his profession in Henry county, moving to New London in 1842. He finally moved to Kokomo, where he conducted a dry goods store, and subsequently moved to Mankato, Minnesota, where he died. He was a brother of Mrs. Richard Nixon.

Dr. Wickersham made a success of his paper. In announcing the second year of the Pioneer's existence he said: "August 1, 1849, the Pioneer entered upon the second year of its existence with every encouragement we in our most sanguine hope could have anticipated. The list of subscribers is rapidly increasing, with a liberal amount of job work and advertising custom, which has increased fully one hundred per cent. in the last few months. As soon as the health of Cincinnati will justify us (the cholera raged there)

in visiting that city we expect to get a new and enlarged dress for our paper, add one column, and exchange our old type for new, which will add to the amount of reading matter, and at the same time materially improve the appearance of the paper."

The sentiment of the residents of New London was pronounced in favor of temperance. There was a New London branch of the Cadets of Temperance. This society was known as Section No. 44, of that organization, and on July 7, 1849, the records disclose that officers were installed and an address delivered by M. D. Stoneman. The invitations to the public to attend this meeting bore the signature of J. B. Gifford, W. P., and set forth the announcement, "Come on, parents, and see your children engaged in the great and glorious cause—the cause of all mankind."

The subject was early presented in New London in an able and vigorous article upon temperance appearing in an early number of the Pioneer, written by Dr. J. J. Barritt.

As early as 1848 there seems to have been an attempt to establish a liquor dispensary against the sentiment of the community. The Pioneer of the date of September 16th of that year says: "Guess the application for a licensed grog shop in our town didn't meet with much favor from our county commissioners, notwithstanding a petition was secretly got up, and the county commissioners have the thanks of a large majority of our citizens in their refusal to license such a sink of iniquity in their midst. Had our citizens known that the application would have been made, a remonstrance would have gone up with ten names to every one on the petition."

The pledge taken by the Cadets of Temperance was very strict: "I without reserve solemnly pledge my honor as a man that I will neither make, buy, sell nor use, as a beverage, any spirituous or malt liquors, wine or cider.

In November following the secret attempt to establish a grog shop, the Pioneer exultantly exclaims editorially. "The whiskey business is suspended in our town. All who come here hereafter will have to bring it along with them. We met a poor imitation of humanity the other day, making his way through a tremendous storm of rain and snow, drenched to the skin with wet, hunting for some of the 'critter' and being asked what he wanted with it, supposing that some one was very sick and wanted it for medical purposes, he very indignantly replied that he wanted it for himself, 'case he was dry.'"

The spirit of enterprise distinguished the early citizenship of New London which was eager for every step looking toward the development of the county.

The contract for the superstructure of the Indianapolis & Peru Railroad was let January 3, 1849, at one thousand four hundred and ninety dollars a mile, the contractors agreeing to make the tracks ready for the iron rails, and to take fifteen per cent. of the contract price in stock of the new railroad company.

New London had many subscribers to this stock, and on September 1, 1849, they were required to pay the third requisition upon it, of eight per cent., amounting to four dollars a share, these payments being made to C. D. Murray, collecting agent at Kokomo.

A meeting was called for Saturday, December 16th, at "Mr. Robertson's east room," New London, of citizens of Howard county friendly to a construction of a railroad from New London to intersect the Indianapolis & Peru road at some convenient point. The expectation was destined to be disappointed and the branch road was never builded. The nearest it was realized was the construction of the Cloverleaf Railroad through Russiaville, two miles south, to Kokomo, which crosses the old Indianapolis & Peru line at Madison street.

The citizens were rejoiced, however, to learn in January, 1849, that the legislature had given a grant for a state road from Lafayette, Tippecanoe, county, to Jonesboro, Grant county, by the way of New London, Alto and Jerome. The Pioneer said it was a thoroughfare much needed, and the citizens along the route will be much pleased to hear of the grant.

#### FIRST MEDICAL SOCIETY.

The first medical society of Howard county, in which the physicians of New London were leading spirits, was organized in Kokomo, Saturday, September 15, 1849. In that early day the physicians of New London had no rule of ethics against advertising. They not only advertised, but they did it ingeniously to extend their practice. Two characteristic advertisements are extant. Those of Dr. J. S. Counts and Dr. John F. Henderson. Dr. Counts displayed this appeal for patrons: "Good morning, friends, where does Dr. J. S. Counts reside? In New London, a little west and across the street from Nixon's store. Has he located permanently? He has purchased a house and lot, caught a cook, and continues to practice the various branches of medicine at all times when called on. Is he moderate in his charges? His patrons, who settle with him once a year, say that he is. Is he successful? He has been during the past month or two for there has been nobody sick."

Not to be outdone by a competitor Dr. Henderson directed the public attention to an advertisement quite as readable, but of a different description: "Pro Bono Publico—Dr. John F. Henderson takes pleasure in informing his old friends and the public generally that after a year's practice among them he is again permanently located in the town of New London, ready to serve them in the practice of medicine, obstetrics, etc. He flatters himself from

his past experience and success in the practice and his knowledge of the science to be able to give general satisfaction to an intelligent public. He is likewise prepared with a good assortment of dental instruments, teeth foil, etc., for cleansing, plugging and inserting teeth, on the most approved style and on reasonable terms. Office on Mill street at the east end of town, where he may at all hours be found unless professionally engaged. Bills reduced to suit the times." Other prominent physicians of the town were Dr. M. R. Wickersham, Dr. J. J. Barritt, and Dr. M. D. Stoneman.

Dr. J. J. Barritt was the first postmaster of New London and Thomas J. Faulkner the second in this office. Each had occasion to publish lists of letters uncalled for.

A teachers' institute was organized in New London, February 24, 1849,

New London felt the stimulus of the land sale held by county auditor John Bohan. He offered to purchasers the choicest sections in the late Miami reserve, situated about three miles southwest of Kokomo, being a sale of land for the benefit of the common schools, every sixteenth section being disposed of for the benefit of the state. Theophilus Bryan was school commissioner of Howard county at that time. The land was to be paid for one-fourth in advance, and a twenty-five years' credit given for the unpaid portion, which was to bear seven per cent. interest payable in advance.

The report of auditor Bohan of the finances of the county from June 1, 1848, to May 31, 1849, showed the total receipts to be two thousand eight hundred and ninety-two dollars and three cents, leaving a deficit in the treasury to meet all orders drawn of one hundred and sixty-five dollars and six cents.

The tax rates in Howard county, publically announced August 24, 1849, were: State tax—Each one hundred dollars, thirty cents. Poll tax, seventy-five cents. County tax—Each one hun-



dred dollars, seventy cents; poll tax, eighty-seven and one half cents; school tax, each one hundred dollars, district 3, twenty-five cents. Road tax—per acre, one-fourth cents; town lots, each one hundred dollars valuation, fifteen cents.

---

## BENCH AND BAR.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

The first term of what was then known as the Richardville circuit court was held November 7, 1844, at the house of John Harrison, in the township now called Ervin. Nothing much was done on the first day of the term. N. R. Lindsay, subsequently judge of the Howard common pleas court, was enrolled as a member of the bar on the second day. On the third day the grand jury returned twenty-five indictments. There being no business for the petit jury at that term they were discharged.

The grand juries of the period believed in earning their salaries, if you choose to put it that way—but others chose to say that they loved to gratify petty spite at the expense of their neighbors. They would sometimes still be searching for facts when a term of court would come to an end.

The grand jury of the first term of court in the history of the county indicted John Harrison, the sheriff, for retailing. This offense was selling small quantities of whisky in violation of the law. Benjamin Newhouse, a member of the petit jury, at the same term of court, was indicted for trespass. Betting was a common offense and five indictments for this law violation were returned against William Smith. While Sheriff Harrison was acquitted of

the charge of "selling a quart of whisky to Theopholis Bryan, to be drank about his house," Charles J. Allison, also indicted for retailing, did not fare so well. He was found guilty and fined two dollars. Allison was frequently indicted for retailing. He kept a saloon, or wet-back grocery, the bar being in the rear, in a double log house on the east side of the public square, and, saving his business, alleged to his discredit, he bore a good reputation and was generally spoken of by his neighbors as an honest man. He had good business qualifications. He ran the first saloon conducted in Kokomo, and was frequently before the circuit court. He came to the county before it was organized and died in 1863.

Judge Biddle once observed of the pioneer grand juries:

"The early grand juries were of curious composition often, being made up largely of men from other states, and even natives of foreign countries. I think that generally they were honest and devoted to the law, when they knew what it required of them."

Summoned before a grand jury, David Foster was asked:

"Did you observe any one fishing on Sunday?"

"Yes, sir."

"You may give the names of the parties you saw."

Mr. Foster gave them.

The foreman of the grand jury, in order to prove the offense within the limit of the statute of limitations, asked Mr. Foster in what year he saw the parties named fishing on Sunday.

"Eighteen fifty-six."

As the examination was several years later the jury had its pains for nothing, the offense described by Foster being barred to prosecution.

The list of offenses for the early-day indictments were pronouncedly in contrast with those of 1908. John Lamb and Benjamin F. Faucett were indicted for improperly granting license, and

Mr. Lamb was also indicted upon two charges of extortion. David Bailey was arraigned upon two charges of the same character. Samuel Garner was prosecuted for illegal voting. Attachments were issued against Jonas Dalgilkin and John Ryan for contempt of court in divulging the secrets of the grand jury.

#### PAY OF PETIT JURORS.

The first petit jury serving the county was allowed seventy-five cents each for one day's service.

Upon beginning its sessions in Howard county the court ordered a seal, which was to have a device upon the face thereof of a man on horseback on a chase after wolves in the distance with his hounds in pursuit, the horse to be represented "on the loap" and the words engraved on the seal, "Richardville County Seal, A. D. 1844."

A term of court generally lasted from three to four days. Seldom longer. All the business could easily be disposed of within that time. A week of court would have been considered a judicial sitting of unusual and tedious duration.

Had you entered the log courthouse in the forties you would have found upon the ground floor the tailor shop of G. W. Poisal, the saddlery of H. B. Havens, and the offices of Dr. Corydon Richmond and the county clerk, F. S. Price. Dr. Richmond and his brother, Orsemus Richmond, were eventually associated in the practice, occupying the same office, and finally N. R. Lindsay and C. D. Murray established a law office in the courthouse. In September, 1850, Mr. Havens was notified that his office rent would be fifty cents a month. The rest were notified in June, 1851, that they had better pay their office rent.

The "courthouse rats" of that day were a jolly bunch. Someone had been taking Dr. Corydon Richmond's whisky, which he had

in a quart bottle upon a shelf in his office. Tailor Poisal told him that his liquor was being appropriated by a certain carpenter. One morning the doctor furnished a fresh supply of whisky and placed an emetic in it. The carpenter purloined a drink. Soon he began spitting, but unsuspectingly took another drink. No sooner had he lowered it until he became very sick. Whereupon he rushed to an oak stump, and, like Job, cursed the day upon which he was born. He made a friend of nearly every stump on the way until he reached home. He never again molested the whisky.

The lawyers of the early day were plain and simple in their habits of life, as were the other pioneers with whom they were associated. They relished the substantial food of the day, dressed in the rough garb of their neighbors, and were in all respects a part of the great commonality. Yet they were the leaders in public spirit. They were the politicians. The best offices fell to their lot, not because they were of "better clay than other men," but because they were considered better qualified by the people to discharge the duties incident to the various official positions with which they were honored. They must have been early risers, at least upon one occasion, for one evening the Richardville circuit court adjourned "to meet to-morrow morning at seven o'clock." A dozen books, all told, would comprise an average lawyer's library. But these books were known by them thoroughly, large portions of which they were able substantially to quote from memory. The standard authority most frequently consulted was the statutes of the state—the Koran of the Richardville bar. The county clerk, Franklin S. Price, who served a number of years, spread on record a list of books comprising the courthouse library, April 25, 1845; four volumes of local laws, six volumes of Blackford reports, three copies of the Senate Journal, 1845, three copies of the journal of the house of representatives of the same year, sixty-five copies of the school laws, eight

copies of the revised statutes of 1843. Milk and bread were the principal foods of Kokomo's earliest denizens. The lawyer-politicians, in order to obtain votes, would win the popularity of the women by assisting them to milk and to suckle the calves.

#### MEAGER LEGAL BUSINESS.

The law business was not heavy during the early days of the Richardville bar, nor such as to put the bar up in the way of learning and power. Land was cheap and controversies few. The principal suits were for slander, bastardy, hog stealing, betting, whisky selling, and so forth. The bar under Judges Wright and Biddle averaged well, and improved greatly as business became more serious.

In an early day the judges and lawyers from the various circuits of the state congregated at a frame hotel near the center of the north side of the public square, generally after supper, to exchange experiences, divulge all kinds of news and relate anecdotes.

Moses Cromwell was distinguished in an early day by the frequency with which he sought the judicial decree. His name appears very often upon the records of the court. A drinker, "on his muscle," and quarrelsome, he naturally occupied a good deal of the court's attention. Scarcely a term of court passed without his being either a plaintiff or a defendant. When not figuring as the accused in some state case he was almost certain to be mixed up in some kind of a civil action. In a large number of prosecutions he was able to secure his acquittal. He figured in all kinds of prosecutions, assault and battery, retailing, affrays, and others too numerous to mention. One of the first slander cases in the county was that of Pleasant Walker against Cromwell. At the trial the jury was unable to agree. The case was afterwards compromised and dis-

missed. This case was the first called at the May term, 1846. He was still litigating as late as 1858.

David Foster also did a considerable business in court. But his preferences were for civil rather than criminal cases. The records show him to have been interested in a great many suits.

John B. Hopkins might, during a court term in an early day, be seen often standing on a stump in the courthouse yard. He sometimes carried an ax and a chicken, asserting that he was going into the poultry business. His general features, large physique, partially stooped form, and long, thin hair touching his shoulders, gave him a commanding presence. A string of loosely-tied, green mango peppers encircled his shoulders and swept his breast. He was barefooted, and had a powerful voice. He was a great walker. Once a candidate for representative, he spoke at Greentown and Kokomo, addressed an audience near Poplar Grove and made two speeches at Logansport within the space of twenty-four hours, hoofing the entire distance between the places where he delivered his addresses. He had a state reputation and was intimately connected with the lawyers of the county, frequently assaying the defense of "mercy cases" and an attendant upon court. The lawyers listened to him, conversed with him and read law to him. To this community in early days he was a periodical visitor. His sensible utterances, by no means few in number, profound and practical, were treasured up in the minds of his hearers. However, this man was demented. Yet his intellect was of the highest order. He was finely educated. His choice of words was apt. His sentences were of such construction that they excited the admiration of rhetoricians. In his younger days he had been a prodigious student. If deserted by his audience he would seek another spot and address new listeners. To hear him sing old settlers declared was to experience a genuine pleasure. He composed all his own songs, many of which were highly



meritorious. Hopkins walked from one end of the state to the other, starting generally from some leading city situated on the National road, which route he traveled, pulling after him a light buggy, which he filled with tracts. At nearly every town along the entire distance he would sell his buggy and buy a new one.

The statute of 1843 divided the state into twelve circuits. A president judge was appointed by the legislature for each of these circuits. Two associate judges were chosen by each county to preside with the president judge. Although they made but little pretense to learning "these side judges," as they were called, often overruled the president judge, giving for their decisions some preposterous reasons. Not infrequently, too, their rulings, absurd as they may have sometimes been, were sustained by the supreme court.

The terms of office for the judges were, by statute, fixed at seven years; the clerk was to serve for seven years and the sheriff and prosecuting attorney for two years.

#### JUDGES LONG AND ERVIN.

The associate judges for Richardville county were T. A. Long and Robert Ervin. Mr. Long was born in Lexington, Kentucky. He apprenticed himself, when a young man, to an old gunsmith, working six years for nothing and clothing himself. Besides being a gunsmith he was a farmer and nurseryman. He lived in Harrison township. In politics he was a Whig and a Republican. In religion he was a Methodist, being a member of the M. E. church over forty years. Of these associate judges, Judge Biddle, with whom they served, once said: "Long I remember to have been a very quiet man. I was not as intimate with him as I was with Ervin. Ervin was a man of good thought and possessed of clear, solid, common sense. On the bench he ever strove to do his duty.

I always regarded him as a very safe counsellor up to the extent of his legal intelligence."

Judge Long, from the fact that he wore glasses, was called "Old Specks" by the Indians. He erected a little shop near his cabin in Harrison township "and for several years repaired guns for the Indians. Across the creek from his shop stood Foster's trading house, where the Indians would take their skins and buy blankets and 'heap good whisky,' and then would go and get Long to fix their guns. Foster would frequently interpret and vouch for them, and Long would charge the bill to Foster and Foster would charge three or four times as much to the Indians. Long had a nice little horse, worth some fifty dollars, which Foster wanted; but being afraid of making the price too high, asked him what he would give Foster replying he would give sixty-five dollars, agreeably surprised Long at his generosity, and consequently got the horse. Foster kept the same for four days and sold it to an Indian for two hundred and fifty dollars. Mr. Long, being somewhat surprised, a second time concluded he could sell a horse which his father-in-law owned for a good price. As the horse would lie down and let its rider mount, the feat greatly pleased the Indians, and Foster sold it to one for four hundred dollars. The next autumn the Indian brought the horse back to be placed in order, and for so doing was charged two hundred dollars by the trader, Foster. Mr. Long having several cattle and needing some brass to make bells for them, was informed that he could get it of the old chief, Kokomo. He went to the chief's wigwam and was introduced to his dusky highness as a Kentuckian. The chief began to act strangely, went out and painted himself, returned and told Long's companion that he had scalped several Kentuckians, and would scalp the new-comer. But Judge Long told the Indian he had better not try that game, or he would shoot him upon the spot." Judge Long was permitted to get the brass and depart.

## A LOG COURTHOUSE.

During the administration of Associate Judges Long and Ervin the sessions of the circuit court were held in the two-story log courthouse within the public square. The upstairs of this structure was utilized as a courtroom, the lower story embracing a hall and four office rooms. The courtroom was reached by an inside stairway.

The shades of evening are falling. The courtroom is deserted within a few moments. But in leaving the courthouse square a lawyer meets with a misfortune. The ground was wet and swampy. The mud in places was about belly deep to a horse; in others half boot-top deep. The lawyer is attempting to walk along a slab placed in the mud to insure a pedestrian a safe and convenient passage. But he slips and falls. Bitter are his words of denunciation as he regains his feet against those cows that tramp and those hogs that wallow this particular piece of ground into such a horrible condition. Uncle Tence Lindley, in his quaint way, once said: "Well, I'll tell you what is a fact; the courthouse yard in them days was skittish muddy. It were skittish muddy for a fact."

Thomas S. Shepherd, a man of medium height, with light hair and blue eyes, was a striking pioneer lawyer, but really a better preacher. He was an uncompromising Democrat, and once stood for the legislature, but was defeated.

Thomas J. Harrison was a son-in-law of Judge Lindsay, with whom he was associated in the practice of the law. Harrison was a big-hearted, generous man, who did everything in his power for his friends. The duties of his profession he performed well, in a punctilious and unflinching manner. His personal bearing and influence had weight with a jury. His record is chiefly military.

## LEADING PIONEER LAWYERS.

Of the two leading pioneer lawyers of Kokomo, Judge Biddle once said: "Charles D. Murray was a man of fine talent, but had

only a fair amount of learning. He was not a diligent student and did not attend strictly to business. To make popular speeches was the delight of his soul and in this line his success was extraordinary. But to take charge of a lawsuit of weight and character he was too slack. He generally came into court ill-prepared. In brain he was large, in physique weighing one hundred and ninety pounds and well-formed. In carriage he was manly, being free and easy in manner. His talents were such that he ought to have secured a much higher position than he gained. His ease and ability as a speaker diverted him from the severer studies. His social qualities were number one. A first-rate wit himself, his relish of an anecdote or practical joke was keen. He was an amiable gentleman and a lovable man. At one time he was seriously talked of as a candidate for governor of the state. The announcement of a political speech by Murray was always the signal to prepare for lots of fun."

Speaking once of Judge N. R. Linsday, Judge Biddle said: "N. R. Linsday had a clear head and was a very able man. He drew up a remarkably clean paper and in this respect was Murray's superior. He also made a more solid argument, but as a speech-maker was not nearly so popular or versatile. In integrity he was pure and upright. I remember of his undertaking to draw up a common law plea in abatement, a task for him most difficult. It was his first attempt. Its construction gave him an infinite amount of trouble and worry. But he finally got through with it, having framed it pretty well. I looked it over and corrected several errors. The plea then stood unassailable. I think I never saw a man appear more grateful than he did for that favor. He was not much of a man for fun, but was a hard working man, with excellent brain power." Judge Biddle, when he came from Logansport to this county to hold court, was frequently entertained at the

cabin of Judge Lindsay. The dwelling was very crowded, but they always made room for him. There was but one door to the structure. Judge Lindsay was the second county agent. By act of the legislature the duties of the office were finally transferred to the county auditor, and John Bohan was first to discharge them after the change in the law. As careful a lawyer as Judge Lindsay was surprised when he went to pay his taxes, in 1846, to find that he was delinquent eighteen cents upon his taxes of 1844. Judge Lindsay, a candidate for the legislature, was a vehement opponent of a clique proposing to unite Howard and Tipton counties and establish the county seat at Sharpsville. He made telling points against his opponent, who favored the plan. Judge Lindsay was one of the most influential workers in behalf of Kokomo's claims.

#### FOR CONTEMPT OF COURT.

Attorney Charles D. Murray was fined twenty dollars for contempt of court at the May term, 1857. He had a tilt with Henry S. Kelly, who was serving as judge *pro tem.*, owing to the absence of Judge John M. Wallace, the regular judge, whose absence was caused by sickness. Mr. Murray gave security for the amount, which, it is probable, was never collected by the local authorities, as they did not desire to execute the order. They saw to it that Mr. Kelly did not preside the next term. Clerk Adam Clark, Sheriff Samuel Lamb, and Auditor Harles Ashley, as they had a right to do under the law, appointed Mr. Murray to preside at this term of court, as a solace to his dignity, as Judge Wallace had not appeared the first day. He did arrive the second day, however, and assumed the duties of the bench. Mr. Murray presided at a part of the May term, 1858.

Joe Lewis, a pioneer lawyer of the county, and once the partner



of Judge Linsday, was a well-trained lawyer and close reasoner, but not so very good advocate. His legal opinions, however, had great weight and he was a formidable opponent.

Lawyers from adjoining counties did a large business at the Howard county bar. Among the number was D. D. Pratt, of Logansport, afterwards United States senator, and a Daniel Webster in physique, intellect and ability.

Franklin S. Price served the county as clerk faithfully and with ability from 1844 to 1854. In 1858 he was a candidate for the office, but while at New London followed the advice of Timothy. The unpopularity of the act caused his retirement from the ticket and he was replaced by Ross Gray. Gray was defeated by Adam Clark. Price was of very slight and fragile build and his hair, eyes and beard were black. He was very social in his nature and enjoyed great popularity. At a convention of the pioneers, held in Harrison township, Price and Hiram, his uncle, were candidates for the same office. Each was to rise and walk from the other, and his supporters were to follow him, and the one having the most friends was to be the nominee. Hiram had the test of numbers. Franklin burst into tears, which so excited his uncle that he withdrew from the contest.

#### THE FIRST CIRCUIT JUDGE.

Judge John W. Wright, the first circuit judge of this county, a resident of Logansport, was a very eccentric man. An important case was before him for disposition, involving many difficult questions of law. The procedure of his court was governed by the technical practice of the common law. The pleadings were numerous and complicated. Many were the pleas in replication, the rejoinders, the rebutters and surrebutters. Eminent counsel was



engaged upon both sides of the case, tried in one of the counties of the circuit to which Howard belonged, and among them were Abraham Lincoln and Joseph E. McDonald, pitted against each other. After a lengthy discussion of the law questions raised by the issues, conducted by the counsel of the opposing sides, Judge Wright, without allowing himself any time for the consultation of authorities, or deliberation, staggered the attorneys by announcing that he would rule immediately after noon. When court convened after the dinner hour, true to his word, Judge Wright divided the pleadings into two separate piles, and, picking up a paper in his right hand, threw it down, saying, "Demurrer overruled," and with his left hand picked up another pleading, threw it down and said: "Demurrer sustained." This was kept up until all his rulings had been announced. This procedure was nothing more nor less than judicial ledgerdemain, haphazard, uncertain guessing. The lawyers had spent weeks in the careful study of the same questions of which he so effectually disposed within the short space of ten minutes. But imagine their surprise when, upon appeal, the supreme court sustained every one of his rulings. Afterwards, when Lincoln had been elected President and when the first rumblings of the impending Civil war were heard throughout the length and breadth of the land, a large assemblage of military officials, among whom mingled several cabinet officers and other eminent personages, darkened one day the parlors of the white house, when the late Joseph E. McDonald was a caller at the Presidential mansion. Immediately upon his entrance he was recognized by President Lincoln, who grasped him heartily by the hand and exclaimed, "How are you, Joe? How's old Judge Wright, anyway?" following the remark with a hearty laugh.

It was during a term of court held in Tipton county by Judge Wright that a peculiar incident occurred. The grand jury reported

that it had no indictments to return. In discharging them Judge Wright said, in his usual brusque and gruff manner, "Well, gentlemen, I suppose you are discharged, but I have not the least doubt in the world but what half of you ought to be indicted for hog stealing."

Having been convicted of a felony, a certain prisoner once stood up to receive sentence from Judge Wright, who has been reported to have used upon that occasion the following language: "Sir, the first acquaintance this court ever formed with you was in a house of ill-fame, but you have steadily gone down in the world till now you must make your future home in the penitentiary."

In personal appearance, Judge Wright was about five feet and six inches in height, weighing from one hundred and eighty to two hundred pounds; was athletic and graceful in movement, whose general appearance countenanced the accusation that he was vain and proud, which, however, was not true of him in an offensive sense.

#### A STRANGE CHARACTER.

It was hard to convince Judge Wright that he could make a mistake. This he thought to be impossible. This peculiar belief of Wright's originated from the dogmatic tendency of his mind, which, by nature, was a rugged one. The haste with which he pronounced his decisions was deplorable, and one of his weaknesses which cost his friends much pain and regret. His character was positive, his popularity great, his friends bound to him by the strongest ties, and his enemies were of the malignant type. As a lawyer it is said that he valued victory higher than perfect honesty; that he was unscrupulous and employed underhand methods continually; that he "brow-beat" and terrorized witnesses completely, and sought to torture them into testimony in behalf of his clients; that he had little feel-

ings for others and, when inclined, heaped torrents of abuse on parties to the suit. In argument he was powerful and in address strong. He would not tolerate the slightest noise or confusion in the courtroom and would invariably stop procedure until it ceased. He won the majority of his cases.

He was a great practical joker and loved to perpetrate jokes on others, but never liked to have them played upon himself. He instantly resented personal insult by word or blow. Judge Wright once stopped at a Virginia hotel for dinner. A colored waiter took his order and asked him which he would have, "Strawberries and cream, or fritz?" "Bring all mixed," said Wright, who did not know the meaning of "fritz." "Why, you isn't gwine to hab 'em mixed, is you?" asked the astonished waiter. "Mixed," reaffirmed Wright, resolved not to show his ignorance. The compound was set before him, but was not relished.

Wright related a good anecdote at his own expense. "I had a novel experience when I was traveling on a certain occasion from Logansport to Winamac, where I was to hold a term of court. I came near getting into serious trouble. You see, it was this way. I came to a very muddy lane. Well, I thought that was simply impassable. I will lay down the rail fence to my left,' I said, 'and go through the field.' I did so and rode almost across it unmolested. Soon I came to the edge of a woods. A man with an ax in his hand confronted me and asked, 'Why did you come across this field?' 'The road was impassable,' I coolly explained. 'If you are acquainted with law, as I suppose you are, you will remember that private welfare must yield to public convenience. I hope I have a right here, sir.' To which my interrogator replied, 'Who said that you could cross this field?' 'No one,' I replied. 'Then go back and lay up the fence,' said he. My anger began to rise. 'Look here,' said I, 'do you know who you are talking to? I am

Judge Wright.' 'Judge Wright; for once," he replied, 'Judge Wright is wrong. Now you go back and lay up that fence!' he exclaimed, as he clinched his ax the tighter for his indignation. 'I say go back and lay up that fence.' Well, gentlemen, I went."

#### JUDGE BIDDLE.

Judge Horace P. Biddle, of Logansport, second judge of Howard county, said of Judge Wright: "It must not be overlooked that his mind was not steady. He was not all bad, by any means. He was governed by fits and starts. The mind of the man, I may say, was flighty in a sense, inclined to aberration—more so at certain times than at others. For a period his decisions would be correct and his whole bearing judicial. I have known him many a time to announce his decisions in perfect order and to conduct cases with the greatest propriety. At other times he would fly off in every direction and we could not tell what he would do. Becoming eccentric he would reverse in principle every one of his former decisions with the greatest sincerity and honesty, apparently believing that he was deciding the same way he had before. He would tell without any visible motive gigantic falsehoods. These seldom proved to be of injury to anyone, however. Seemingly he believed every-one of them. One winter I had seen quite a large herd of deer. In number there must have been at least ninety. In telling of it I rather had a dislike of making the number that high, for fear some might think I was not telling the exact truth. But 'Jack,' as Judge Wright was called, heard the story and endeavored to relate it. The number of deer, according to him, was fifteen hundred.

"On a certain occasion he told me a great cock-and-bull story about Lincoln. He said: 'Lincoln is a fool. I was in Washington, not long since, and called upon the President. He told me he

was surrounded by thieves, by robbers, by murderers, by assassins; that he did not know what to do and that he was momentarily expecting trouble; and that if he got into trouble he wanted me (Wright) to come to Washington and help him.' 'Did he really tell you that, Jack?' I asked. 'To be sure,' answered Wright. 'Then Lincoln certainly is a fool,' I answered. Judge Wright exaggerated and falsified unconsciously.

#### WALKED IN HIS SLEEP.

"He was a somnambulist. One night we were bunking together as travelers had to do in the early days of the state, as bed room was rather limited. After we had been asleep two or three hours he suddenly sprang upon me, seized me by the throat and began choking me. Though sound asleep his eyes were wide open and he glared upon me with the fury of a maniac. I beat him vigorously in the ribs, but it was some time before I awakened him. 'My heavens, Jack,' I said, 'what do you mean choking me this way?' 'I am very sorry, Judge,' he replied; 'I did not know I was choking you.'

"He was vicious at times. In him the good and the bad alternately predominated. I think he was incapable of a persistent fraud. He had a good heart, spoke and acted well and was by no means intensely selfish. I was very intimate with him. In his confidential moods he intrusted his secrets to my keeping. When he was worried or in trouble, or had been abused, he always came to me. One day he stepped into my office. As was characteristic of him he puckered up the left corner of his mouth, and intently stared at me, his head being to one side. Alternately rubbing his hands together, with his right fist he would beat his breast with great rapidity. While going through this gymnastic performance he



finally blurted out, 'Judge Biddle, what do you think of me, anyway?' 'Can you stand the truth?' I asked. He replied that he thought he could. 'Well, Jack,' said I, "I'll tell you. If all the bad in you were absent you would make a good citizen. But if all the good in you had been taken away and nothing but the bad left, you would have been in the penitentiary long ago.'

"Estimates of Judge Wright as a speaker differ. I never thought that he was possessed of genuine eloquence. The chief fault of the man as a speaker was repetition. He often spoiled his points. 'Jack' was a great temperance worker. Once in an address upon that subject he tried to imitate Patrick Henry, in a speech made in defense of a man who had sued the officers furnishing supplies to the revolution, in which speech Henry made use of about this language: 'But what note of discord do we hear? That of John Bull, shouting, "Beef! Beef! Beef!"' Wright blundered along after this fashion: 'In this age of peace and sobriety we hear a shout of peace and prosperity arising. Arising from the earth. As high as heaven—as high as heaven. Yes, higher than heaven—arising—arising—higher than heaven—arising from Maine to Georgia.' This was ever afterwards spoken of as Wright's climax.

"Judge Wright was not for ceremony in adjourning court. Sometimes he even adjourned court without the knowledge of the bar. Once he did this. The grand jury, unable to secure accommodations in the courthouse, were in session in the jail. He adjourned court proper then. Judge Wright proceeded to dismiss them by going to the door of the jail building and exclaiming: 'Go home, gentlemen!'

"Judge Wright went to Washington City, where he died. While there he became quite wealthy. Just how he made his money I never knew. The last five or six years of his life he was perfectly helpless. His body was finally brought to Logansport for



reinterment. He was a Presbyterian in faith and believed that his election was sure. He was firmly convinced that he was one of the elect. The expressions which he used most frequently were 'dyed in the wool,' and 'for the love of God and the Democracy.' He was a very enthusiastic Democrat."

#### AN ABLE JURIST.

Judge Biddle, Howard county's second judge, was an able jurist, a savant, and a gentleman of broad culture. At eighty years of age his hair was thin and gray. His forehead was broad and retreating. The most delicate pencil lines in a crayon portrait would have sufficed for his eyebrows, from beneath which peeped eyes, small, keen and intelligent, such as are commonly ascribed to acute logicians. Deep furrows had plowed their downward way upon his countenance, throwing up upon either cheek swollen veins of flesh. The features of the man told plainly that for years he had been a tireless student, and upon his brow could be seen the evidence that the brain within for years had been busy with wasting thought.

The language which the judge used stamped him at first blush as a linguist. His memory in his age was strong, clear, and accurate. Seemingly inexhaustible was the storehouse of his mind. He was an expert mimic, a fine musician, a writer upon the technology of the subject, and played a violin to perfection.

Upon his retirement from the supreme bench of Indiana and the active practice of the law, Judge Biddle lived the closing years of his life upon Biddle's island, adjacent to Logansport. He and his wife had disagreed, the judge conceiving a jealousy of her, and a separation followed. The judge attempted to secure a divorce but failed. His wife also lived on the island, and while he always spoke

to her if he chanced to meet her, he never was reconciled again to her, although she also lived upon the same island. Judge Biddle passed the last years of his life alone, surrounded by his books and living in a house that was a literary curiosity and an antique museum.

In the room most frequented by Judge Biddle was an old bureau filled with curious things and an old-fashioned bedstead, the posts of which were four feet from the floor, the two one way topped by a couple of hats. Along the north wall of the room, immediately behind the stove, was a row of boots and shoes, as the judge carefully preserved cast-off footwear and headwear, having thus a complete museum of styles. The walls were hung with pictures and dotted with plaster of Paris statuary.

Proceeding through a door of heavy box-like casing, one came into a hall papered with maps, and clinging to the ceiling of which was a birch canoe and Indian moccasins. A cabinet contained a collection of relics. A case was filled with geological specimens, upon the top of which rested the models of two large vessels. In a corner leaned a rifle picked up at Island No. 10. Near it was a sword and scabbard pinioned to the wall. Keeping company with these two articles was a large whalebone. In a stand of canes was the one with which Judge Biddle struck Senator D. D. Pratt over the head, a courtroom incident of state note. The Biddle home consisted of nine rooms, in which seven were occupied with collections of books, several thousand in number. In several, troughs of books hung from the ceilings. One room Judge Biddle used as a workshop and employed himself in building the second musical instrument. In one room he had cords of books and a stuffed bear. In an outside building he had newspaper files which covered a period of over half a century.

Judge Biddle, who served with Associate Judges Long and Ervin, said of the system:

"I was rather attached to the system of associate judges. Those judges were first-rate jurors, upon questions of fact before the court. Their assistance was often very valuable, being acquainted with the credibility of witnesses and the solvency of proposed sureties, as well as various other matters of legal importance. Upon the technicality of legal procedure, I seldom consulted them. Once in a while they would overreach themselves by yielding to a very effective and plausible moral appeal and sometimes announced rulings formed from imperfect data. But they were most generally in the right and their motives uniformly pure."

General R. H. Milroy, the third judge of Howard county, was a very brave man and a high-toned gentleman, incapable of a wrong or mean act. He often did things that he afterwards regretted, was a very impulsive man and was not a thoroughly trained lawyer. A military man, pure and simple, his whole manner was military and his pride ran in that direction. At the bar he had had but an imperfect experience. While upon the bench he was upon a severe strain and made many mistakes. He was glad to get rid of his office because he felt that the law was not his forte. No one ever learned better than he from painful experience that law as a science and a system must be understood as a whole and that patch work is not sufficient. Very modest, he distrusted his own knowledge, and did not feel himself equal to his position. His administration did not give satisfaction. Love, respect and admiration were due him, but his chief trait was military and his courage extended even to rashness. He was one of the very strictest of disciplinarians. His men loved and feared him and would follow him anywhere. A glance at his portrait, with its stern, piercing eyes and firm-set lips, revealed his determination and inexorable will.

## JUDGE MILROY'S ONLY TERM.

The November term of 1852 was the first, last, and only term of court held by Judge Milroy in Howard county.

At this period the circuit court acquired a migratory character. The May term, 1854, was held in the Methodist church, a frame structure which stood upon West Mulberry street.

At this term, Samuel Wilson, a notable character of Kokomo, was tried for assault with intent to kill and acquitted. While intoxicated, and being a Kentuckian, he had chased a negro through a cornfield with a shotgun.

At this date the old log courthouse was no more. It was inadequate and had been torn down. It was ordered, on the 2d day of June, 1852, by the county commissioners, that Corydon Richmond, Austin C. Sheets and Charles D. Murray be appointed to prepare specifications for the erection and furnishing of offices for the clerk, auditor, recorder and treasurer. Two buildings were to be erected, each to be constructed of brick and to be eighteen feet by thirty-six feet in dimension. Their aggregate cost was to be not more than one thousand dollars, and were to be so located as to leave space between them for a courthouse, the present one. One of the buildings was erected near the northeast corner of the courthouse yard and occupied by the auditor and treasurer; the other was located on the opposite corner west and was used by the recorder and clerk.

For a season court was held in one of these buildings, but the quarters were too small, and the James & Armstrong, and later the Wildman halls were utilized for judicial hearings.

March, 1853, the materials of the log courthouse were ordered sold, but instead they were used for a walk in the courthouse yard.

The fourth judge of Howard county was John U. Pettit, of

Wabash. He was a man of striking personal characteristics and eccentricities. He was a graduate of Columbia College and a classmate of Robert Toombs, of Georgia, "the great Southern fire-eater and slavery advocate." He was a small, spare man, of about the average height, active and graceful in movement, fluent in speech, exceedingly polite, firm and determined, a good wit, a thorough scholar and a highly polished gentleman.

The fifth judge of Howard county was John M. Wallace, of Marion. This jurist was popularly spoken of as the "ready" judge. He transacted while upon the bench a large amount of business, with the utmost ease and rapidity. He was not noted for his profound thought, or research, but was a very ready speaker. In personal appearance Judge Wallace was a handsome man, with coal-black hair and eyes, unusually large chest and head. His dress was very tasty for the time in which he lived. He was born in Franklin county, this state, and was a brother of Governor Wallace and an uncle of General Lew Wallace. His father was a tavern keeper in eastern Indiana. Judge Wallace died a poor man.

Judge Brouse and Wallace were intimate friends. Wallace, after deciding a case against Brouse, laughingly remarked to him, "Well, Brouse, I don't suppose you feel quite as good as you did before I made that decision."

"You know well enough that you made an old ass of yourself, Judge Wallace," retorted Brouse with affected anger.

This touched Wallace deeply, who, supposing that he had really given offense, said sympathetically, "Come now, Brouse; you are not going to strike down an old friend, are you?"

"Well, I guess not by any means," responded Brouse with a smile.

This assurance relieved Wallace from a dread apprehension. He would not intentionally give offense, or wound another's feel-

ings for any consideration. Yet under no circumstances would he permit motives of friendship to dictate his judgment. He was conscientious and honest to the extreme.

A DR. JEKYL AND MR. HYDE.

Wallace, the judge, and Wallace, the citizen, were two different characters. The one character was stern, harshly indifferent, rigid in severity and of unbending dignity. When trying a case his features were seemingly as inflexible as those of a Roman senator. The procedure of his court was conducted with the strictest discipline. Order and monotonous regularity prevailed. No slave-master ever exerted a firmer control over his bondsmen than did Judge Wallace over his associates in the administration of justice. When Wallace thought an attorney had said enough to enable him to understand a subject he instantly told that attorney so, and shut off his speech. Wallace always ran court to suit himself.

Anybody could laugh and joke with him in private social intercourse. Then he was good-natured, jolly and sympathetic, and ready for any kind of innocent fun that came along. Of nights it was his favorite amusement to play his violin to the loungers at the hotel and he would nearly shake himself to pieces with laughter as he saw some "greeny" trying to execute a clever imitation of any kind of dancing. Nothing seemed to gratify him more than to see some nimble fellow beat the floor into splinters with his feet, or hear some extra good joke.

Henry A. Brouse, whose name, before his death, headed the list of Howard county practitioners as being the oldest of the number at the bar, came to Howard county from Wayne county when the town of Kokomo did not contain more than fifty log cabins. He settled upon a farm south of the city. There were in the town



three resident lawyers and three stores of general merchandise; those of T. J. Faulkner, John Bohan and C. J. Allison, the latter a "wet-back" grocery. Wearing high-top boots Brouse trudged to town three times a day. His office furniture consisted of a few rickety chairs, a dilapidated table, and a library worth less than three hundred dollars. In writing he made use of quill pens.

Along in the fifties his practice was large and he had about all the legal business to which he could well attend. When court was in session, in order to get his cases at issue he would have his clients sleep at his office and would work all night getting the pleadings in shape, awakening his clients one by one for information as he finished one paper and went on to the next. Brouse tried his first case in the county before Judge Biddle. Brouse was one of the prime movers in the organization of the Republican party here, and mainly instrumental in securing the election of Nelson Purdum as the first mayor of the city, and subscribed largely for the construction of the normal school building.

#### A COURTEOUS JUDGE.

During the morning hours, or those of early afternoon, Judge Pettit greeted an acquaintance in a most complaisant voice and pleasing and courteous manner in substantially this language: "Oh, John," or James, as the case might be, "now I am real glad to see you. How are you? I was just thinking about you a moment since. How is your family now, anyway?" But after four o'clock in the afternoon his form of salutation, expressed with a deferential bow, but with a slight and graceful wave of the right hand, was almost invariably: "Good evening! Good evening!" When at his meals he would eat a while, stop and converse with whoever chanced to be present in the room and then fall to again. Purchasing a fine

pair of trousers, Pettit has been known to offset these with a cheap, shoddy hat, without any band, and he would encase the neat and dainty foot of which he was possessed in a stoga, heavy-sewed shoe. But T. C. Philips, one of his great admirers, once declared that Judge Pettit, as congressman, "was not the same Pettit that he was in mingling with his constituents." "Why," said Philips, "when I saw him at the National capital he was as tastefully dressed as Charles Sumner, which is saying a good deal. When I saw him after the National legislature had adjourned he looked as seedy as a man without a dollar."

Pettit hated with his whole soul and his enmity was bitter, intense, and uncompromising. He seemingly, when aroused, feared no man and would, if he lost his control, jump upon a man twice his size. One of the judicial campaigns in which he was successful was extremely personal and malignant. As he was riding along, one day after the election was over, in his buggy, he saw coming down the street his defeated opponent. Perceiving a good opportunity to tell him in direct language what he thought of his manner of campaigning, Pettit squared his vehicle around so that his former rival could not pass and then proceeded to say, to the object of his contempt: "I am that dirty, lousy, and unscrupulous John U. Pettit that you told the people so much about lately! Good day, sir!"

A witness for whom Pettit had the most profound contempt testified against his client in a suit in which he was engaged as an attorney. Later on in the progress of the trial it became necessary to recall this witness to testify to additional matter. Pettit arose, made a slight bow, and in those cutting and sarcastic tones which he could use with such scathing effect, remarked: "The honest and virtuous gentleman may again take the witness stand and proceed to perjure himself a little more." Pettit's repartee was like a dagger thrust.

A witness that Pettit believed had lied in his evidence once pressed the judge to drink with him. "If for no other reason," said Pettit, "I'll not drink with you, because you are an infamous liar. And I'll thank you, sir, I don't wish to drink with a liar." He was not afraid to say to a man's face what he thought of him.

He instantly adjourned court once because the spectators rushed to the windows to see a passing circus procession.

#### A FINISHED ORATOR.

The oratorical powers of Pettit were of a high standard. In delivery he was rather deliberate. Many of his finest addresses were purely extemporaneous. The language of which he made use in the exposition and elaboration of a subject was the best that could be chosen. His words, selected with faultless judgment, carried home the idea to the mind of his auditor with a force that made a deep impression.

C. C. Shirley, who once heard Judge Pettit speak at a congressional convention, describes his manner of delivery as "very precise, smooth and oily, and apparently of studied suavity; exhibiting the fact that he had a rare command of the best and choicest English."

Pettit stood high in his profession and in the trial of his cases he demonstrated his thoroughness, masterly skill, chained logic, keen analysis, correct judgment, shrewdness, and ability to fetter an opponent. He was naturally a diplomat.

An appeal case in which the plaintiff sought the recovery of damages for some sheep killed by several dogs was tried before him in the old Methodist Episcopal church.

The plaintiff was represented in court by N. R. Lindsay and C. D. Murray, who did the bulk of the earliest legal practice in the

county, and practically had a cinch on the practice. One of the principal attorneys of a somewhat later day, Henry A. Brouse, represented the defendant. Case called for trial. Judge Pettit ready to hear the evidence. The testimony of the plaintiff is soon produced and he rests. Inquiry by the court of Brouse whether he has any evidence. "None," replies that lawyer. "What?" gasps Brouse's client, "hain't you goin' to put in any evidence? That's what I hired you for." Observation by the court. "Mr. Brouse, can't you manage to keep that boisterous client of yours still?" Mr. Brouse looked daggers at his client, who blurted out: "That's all right, Mr. Brouse, you needn't look cross-eyed at me. If you hain't a-goin' to tell this here court some evidence on my side of this here case, I quit right away. There's more'n one lawyer in this town besides you." This remark finished, the court observes: "It is with pain that I again call attention to this matter. I repeat, will you, Mr. Brouse, oblige the court by keeping that boisterous client of yours still? If not, I shall fine you both." "I'll try, sir," answered Brouse, who knew Pettit's nature too well to risk any display of defiance. "I'll try, sir." Brouse then hastily whispered to his client in husky tones to keep still, for heaven's sake; that no evidence was needed, and that he could beat the plaintiff without any. "The court finds," said Pettit, as he picked up his pen and began writing, "for the plaintiff and——"

"One moment, your Honor," said Brouse, as he arose to address the court. "I have a few points to——"

"Sit down, Mr. Brouse," said the court, sternly. Brouse obeyed, as he knew it was not good policy to do otherwise.

"I have, your Honor, some——" said Brouse, as he arose again.

"Sit down," said Pettit. Brouse sat down.

Wiping the perspiration from his brow he at once arose. "Sit down," said Pettit. Brouse sat down.

After he had written a few lines Pettit asked of Brouse, "Have you any authorities to present?"

"Yes, sir," replied the latter, choking with eagerness. "I disclosed on cross-examination that the dogs belonged——"

"That will do. Sit down, Mr. Brouse," said Pettit. Brouse sat down. "You refer to that elementary principle of law that a man is to be held responsible only for the damage done by his own property. The proof in this case does not disclose the amount of damage done by each dog. The court finds for the defendant and——"

"Your Honor——" said Lindsay, arising.

"Sit down, Mr. Lindsay," said Pettit. Lindsay sat down and, arising again, said:

"But——"

"Enough," said Pettit. "The finding is for the defendant. Sit down." Mr. Lindsay sat down.

The mind of Pettit was keen and incisive, as subtle as that of a sophist, enabling him to draw fine-spun distinctions. From the slightest hint he grasped a point in its remotest connections. The movements of his mind were swift, as straight to the mark as an arrow.

#### WHEN SPEAKER OF THE HOUSE.

When speaker of the house of state representatives during the war period he displayed great nerve and incorruptible patriotism. Among the offices held by him were consul to Brazil, judge of the eighth and twenty-seventh judicial districts and congressman for three terms.

James W. Robinson was a singular character. He read much, but studied little. But he had a smattering of a large number of subjects. Incessantly he bluffed and blustered. With witnesses,

the attorneys, and the court he would wrangle by the hour. Sarcasms, rebuffs, or reprimands did not abash him in the least, and he persisted in continuing in the same course of conduct confident, to all appearances, in the correctness of his position. Speaking for a defendant accused of larceny he exclaimed: "I tell you, gentlemen, these are the same, identical verbatim boots that my client bought in Cambridge City." In a case wherein he urged an alibi as a defense he said: "Gentlemen, how can you, in the light of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, convict my client here? It would be preposterous to convict him when he has already proven an albino." Once again: "Gentlemen of the jury, I want to tell you that Nat Lindsay and Hen Brouse, who appear against me, are two of the biggest wind-bags in the United States. They don't know any law. Neither does the judge in this case. But I know the law perfectly well and just as it is. Listen, I will give you the law. It is this. Now don't pay any attention to what Lindsay or the judge says, but follow the law as I have given it and you are on the right side. There can be no doubt, gentlemen, but what you will give my client a verdict." Going into the auditor's office one day, Robinson said: "You have got me taxed up here with some land that I never owned."

"I hope not, Mr. Robinson," was the reply.

"But I know you have. I never owned an acre and fifty-hundredths in my life."

#### GOOD AT REPARTEE.

After searching the records carefully the auditor said: "I find these against you, Mr. Robinson. They show you to be the owner of an acre and a half of land."

"An acre and a half! Well, that will do. But I repeat, I never owned an acre and fifty-hundredths in all my life."



"You may state your name to the jury," said Robinson to the only witness by whom he hoped to prove a case of slander.

"John Joybreaker."

"Are you acquainted with the parties in this suit?"

"I don't remember."

"Don't you know the plaintiff in this action?"

"I don't remember."

"Do you know the defendant?"

"I don't remember."

"Don't you know that he called the defendant a —— and slandered him in this manner, by saying the following language?"

"I don't remember."

"Did you eat your dinner?"

"I don't remember."

"Didn't you run off as soon as you were subpoenaed in this case?"

"I don't remember."

"Weren't you put in jail?"

"I don't remember."

Parsons on Contracts has, for years, been a standard authority in this country. But Robinson, on one occasion, didn't think so. Joe D. Johnson vs. James W. Robinson. Case in bailment. Trial upon an agreed state of facts. Johnson reads to the court from Parsons on Contracts.

"What are you reading from?" inquired Robinson.

"I am reading from Parsons on Contracts."

"Great God!" exclaimed Robinson, throwing up both hands in horror. "Have you come out here to pull the wool over the eyes of the court, by reading Parsons on Contracts? Parsons is English law. It was written in England over five hundred years ago! It is British law!"

"On the contrary," said Johnson, "I know better. Parsons is the very best authority upon this subject that we are discussing. It is as much American law as the statutes of this state. To say that Parsons is not American law is to talk utter nonsense. The passages which I have read are directly in point." Johnson continued his reading after the delivery of his remarks, but was again interrupted by Robinson, who inquired of the court:

"And will you, sir, allow the gentleman to persist in reading British law?"

The justice answered: "You may stop reading, Mr. Johnson. I do not believe that your authority has any reference to this case." So Johnson stopped.

#### CAN'T PREDICATE WHAT A JURY WILL DO.

But very few lawyers, however, have gainsaid the truth of what Robinson once said: "Nobody but God Almighty knows what a jury will do." A colored man was once defended by Robinson before John W. Cooper, then mayor of the city. Judicially speaking, Robinson's client, when sentence was rendered, received a "black eye" from the court. "By——" said the prisoner, as he was being conducted to jail, "if Robinson would have talked much more, I would have been sent to the penitentiary."

J. D. Johnson was a young man of considerable brilliancy and had more than ordinary talent. Had he lived he would have "made his mark." He was a good talker, had a good voice, used good language, and presented ably his thought. He did not live long enough to fully mature and develop his powers, but demonstrated to a certainty the fact that he possessed the requisite qualifications to have made a most effective practitioner. Untimely death, however, cut off his hopes in the flower of his youth. His nature was ardent, ambitious, and aspiring.

Nelson Purdum, an early attorney at the bar and first mayor of the city, was a practical lawyer. He detested buncombe, rant and bombast. Hating superficiality he was never guilty of soaring above the heads of a jury. In civil law he was most proficient and it was there that he was in his element. He was a man of good, hard sense, strong in conviction, clever-hearted, industrious and successful in practice. Being clear, simple and comprehensive in statement he generally had little difficulty in persuading the twelve judges of fact to adopt his view of the case.

#### A GOOD COLLECTION LAWYER.

Joe Lewis had the reputation of being one of the best collection lawyers in northern Indiana. If anybody could extract blood from a stone or turnip he was the man. When enforcing the payments of collections he never desisted from tormenting debtors and stretching them upon the rack until his demands were fully satisfied. It would have been him exactly to order out an execution at midnight and to compel the sheriff to levy upon all property instantly. He was nervous in writing, in speech, in everything. He would study night and day. Often in his cogitations, when a young man, he would abstract the contents of a book which he held in his hand, while he leisurely walked back and forth. He was bitter in his dislikes and scrupulously tasty in his dress.

Rawson Vaile, more than any other member of the bar, would explore and dive into the depths of old records, minutely and critically examining every mouldy paper buried beneath the dust of the years. It used to be the common remarks of attorneys when they would see him in the county offices: "Well, there is Brother Vaile, again, going into antiquity to see what he can discover." Fiery energy was one of his characteristics. He always walked as if he

was in a desperate hurry, and had only a second of time in which to accomplish a certain act. He moved forward with an impetuosity that threatened his dismemberment. He was of unquestioned rectitude and probity. About the truth he was extremely scrupulous. He would never mislead a client, but would tell him the law as he thought it to be, whether for or against his client's interest. Vaile was tenacious in the advocacy of a proposition. There was no foolishness about him, and he was little inclined to a joke. His strongest tastes were not for the law. At one time in life he was actively engaged in the duties of journalism. He published the *Free Territory Sentinel* and was one of the editors of the *Indianapolis Journal*.

WHEN MILTON GARRIGUS CAME.

In February, 1847, Milton Garrigus came to Howard county, being a native of Wayne county, Indiana. Many of the relics of the Indians were still strewn over the grounds, situated in the vicinity of Greentown, upon which Garrigus passed his first night, in company with his father and brother under a rude covering of logs hastily thrown together and warmed by a blazing fire burning immediately in front. Pheasant was the sole dish upon which he made his first meal in this, the Miami reserve. Garrigus farmed the land spoken of for some time, roughing it in true pioneer style, and doing his own cooking. Wild turkey ranged not far from his door. Squirrels by the legion scampered up and down the trees of the adjacent forest, which stretched away for miles unbroken, and was inhabited by wildcats, polecats, mink and muskrats.

While postmaster at Greentown Captain Garrigus studied law. Trials were held in the postoffice. The Captain borrowed his books of Lindsay & Murray.

## CARRIE NATION'S HUSBAND.

David Nation, famous as the divorced husband of Carrie Nation, the Kansas temperance cyclone, was once a lawyer in Howard county, and prosecuted a case in the old Methodist church in the fifties. A gunsmith of Jerome was accused of setting fire to the barn of Harvey Brown, of that place. Wood had been piled against one side of the structure and the flames started. Nation was a very vigorous and capable prosecuting attorney. He was opposed by Captain Garrigus and Joshua Mellett, a noted cross-examiner, who represented the defendant. It was during the trial that William Branhouse realized the full power of Mellett's ability and as he underwent the ordeal the perspiration rolled down his face in streams. The defendant was acquitted because he deserved to be under the evidence, but under Nation's prosecution he had the call of his life. Judge Buckles, of Muncie, was on the bench and Nation then lived in the same city. Kokomo and Muncie belonged to the same judicial circuit. It was the custom for the judge and the prosecutor to travel the circuit together, and that is how Nation came to appear in the trial in Kokomo that year.

During his career at the bar Captain Garrigus had been identified with many trials of public moment.

The sixth judge of Howard county hailed from Muncie. Joseph S. Buckles lived near that city upon a stock farm of six hundred and fifty acres. He was what might be called a farmer judge. Judge Buckles was a fair judge, a man of good natural sense and disposed to be impartial. He was heavy set and imposing in personal appearance, lending dignity to the bench. His disposition was jovial and he loved company. Had he devoted himself exclusively to the law he would have been a lawyer of exceptional capability. But he was largely interested in farming, and this in-

terest induced him to neglect the close pursuit of the law, for which he was so well qualified by nature. The lawyers whispered that he eminently preferred to remain at home and look after his hogs and sheep than hold court. There were eight counties in his judicial circuit, comprising Delaware, Hancock, Hamilton, Tipton, Howard, Grant, Blackford and Madison. Judge Buckles was elected to the bench as a Democrat before the Civil war, but at and after the war he was a Republican. While on the bench the legislature decided that his circuit was too large and cut it down one-half, making a circuit of Madison, Hamilton, Tipton and Howard counties.

#### A CHANGE IN THE CIRCUIT.

This change in the circuit removed Judge Buckles from the Howard county bench, the new circuit of which it was a part being presided over by Judge Henry A. Brouse, appointed to fill the vacancy in the bench until the election.

Judge Brouse never admired technicality enough to be skillful in the use and construction of it. As a lawyer he employed it from necessity. He had a natural antipathy and aversion to it. In taking advantage of technicality he was much more skillful than in the formulation of it. Technicality he regarded as a means to an end—a mode of progress. He believed that courts were established to administer justice and that when technicality conspired to this end it ought scrupulously to be observed. That such was the purpose of its existence, and that when it operated to defeat justice or delay right, then it ought to be lightly regarded and overlooked, observed only sufficiently to avoid reversal in the supreme court.

A great lover of what is often spoken of as natural equity, Judge Brouse ever sought to abstract from the mass of confused and conflicting evidence in a case the real and substantial points upon



which a trial hinged, and decided for the party with whom he conceived justice to be on the face of the issues. The honors of his position he bore with becoming modesty and impressed the bar with his evident desire to make a good judicial officer, fair and impartial. He was exceedingly liberal in the admission of evidence. Every syllable of evidence that could throw additional light upon the subject under consideration by the jury was placed before them for their reflection and deliberation. No jury, if he could possibly avoid it, retired to return a verdict with an incomplete, defective and unsatisfactory understanding of the material points in controversy. He never suffered the jury to remain in the dark about a matter.

It was Brouse's idea that the court and bar were examples to the community. For this reason he insisted upon the strictest observance of the rules by which he governed his court room. He tolerated no offensive personality, no bulldozing, no improper conduct of any kind, and repelled rather than invited the familiarity of attorneys and others, whom he kept at a respectful distance while court was in session. Civility, respect and courtesy were conditions precedent to the transaction of business in his court. Brouse repressed every manifestation of interest for either side by the spectators with an iron hand.

The Anderson bar had the reputation of employing dilatory tactics in their practice. Hearing of this, Brouse, who went there to hold court, was not all pleased. He resolved to inaugurate a new order of things. Court called Case No. 10185. A demurrer is filed to the complaint. The swiftness with which it was overruled made the attorney's head swim. Under penalty of the dismissal of the case the lawyer hustled around and files a motion to make the complaint more specific, but Brouse is of the opinion that its allegations are in no wise too general. A motion to file a bill of particulars is presented and overruled, and so on, case after case. Brouse dis-

posed of legal matters in this summary manner and made up issues with frightful celerity until he accomplished his object.

#### JUDGE BROUSE'S SUCCESSOR.

When the time came to select a successor to Judge Brouse a convention was held in this city. The names of the ambitious presented for its consideration were: Henry A. Brouse, of Howard county; John Davis, of Madison county, and William Garver, of Hamilton county. The convention adopted the two-thirds rule. The respective counties from which the aspirants hailed stood by their men. Tipton divided her strength. The convention, unable to agree, adjourned to reassemble at Noblesville.

Some weeks later, at that place, the contest was renewed with the same result. On one ballot Brouse came within six votes of being successful. But it soon became evident to the delegates that no one of the men being voted upon could be selected unless some sort of a compromise was effected between the candidates. The delegates, exasperated at the turn affairs had taken, put on their war paint and declared that something must be done, and that quickly, too. The candidates retired to canvass the situation. Brouse and Garver agreed to throw their influence to Davis, and in accordance with this compact John Davis was declared the nominee and was elected at the polls.

Judge John Davis, of Anderson, was elected. He was a man of good intellect and scholarly attainments. For a time he was in the employment of a railroad company, and was in corporation law a power, having a wide understanding of technicality in its manifold application. He was especially apt in perceiving the finer shades of distinction between elementary principles of law in respect to their relation to facts. The arts of his profession he exercised more as

a scholar than a matter of fact practitioner. He was widely read in history, poetry and literature in general, and was something of a linguist. To become a great chancery lawyer was the acme of his ambition, and this desire occupied his thought by day and dreams by night, and was his most pleasurable topic of conversation. The discussion of but one other theme delighted him as much, that of analyzing the subjects of equity, the origin of that grand science, to ponder over the jurisdiction of its courts, and reflect upon its remedies and its procedure. He had little love for criminal law.

Shortly after taking the bench his body became enfeebled by disease and his intellect clouded. Receiving a stroke of paralysis, he was rendered unable to perform the duties of his office. He refused, nevertheless, to resign. His office being a constitutional one he could not be removed. The legislature of 1871 passed an act to meet the emergency, providing for the choice of a judge pro tem. Governor Baker appointed Judge James O'Brien to this elevation.

#### A JUDGE OF POWER.

O'Brien was a judge of strength, force and power and satisfactory to the majority of the people in every respect. His understanding of the law was broad and matured by research. His decisive mind, active memory of leading cases, high moral standard, steadfastness, unwavering firmness and familiarity with the details of practice enlisted public confidence and approbation.

Generally cool and collected, when aroused and under the influence of a heated temper, he became a person most impulsive and interrogated a witness savagely. So thorough and deep-rooted was his contempt that when he thought he was being imposed upon his anger arose to a sublime height. The experience gained by a service of four years as county clerk of Hamilton county made him a

proficient issue lawyer, and his love of investigation made him study his cases thoroughly. He was not, however, an advocate. His knowledge of men surpassed even his knowledge of books. The cross-examination of witnesses with him was a strong point. Positive in his likes and dislikes, he was a man of strong opinions, friendships and enmities. His appetite for a joke was good and frequently indulged.

JOHN W. KERN AND J. FRED VAILE.

Two members of the Howard county bar have attained to national fame, J. Fred Vaile, now of Denver, Colorado, and a leading lawyer of the United States, and Hon. John W. Kern, Democratic nominee for the office of Vice-President of the United States in 1908.

Signal industry characterized the work of Mr. Vaile. Everything with which he had to do was done as thoroughly and as promptly as could be expected or as was possible. Offenders, while he was prosecutor, were pursued with relentless persistence. They were not permitted to crawl through any loopholes. He had not the slightest sympathy with crime. Acting as state's attorney in a murder trial at Tipton, Vaile learned that a person living at a distance and in a locality not reached by railroad was in the possession of information, the nature of which was so weighty as to make him an indispensable witness for the prosecution. Many attorneys, notwithstanding the importance of the situation, would have consulted personal ease and comfort and let the matter go by the board. But Vaile was a hustler and had his heart set upon winning a verdict, and was willing to go wherever duty demanded. During the night he drove in a vehicle several miles and had the witness in court upon its opening the next morning. Turning a deaf ear to his father's remonstrances, Vaile, when a youth, ran away to college, en-

tering Oberlin College, Oberlin, Ohio. The expenses of his first year's schooling he paid by choring and cutting wood. He graduated with honor and then taught school in Kentucky. Enthusiastically he sought after everything which promised mental culture and advancement.

Vaile's faculty of observation was acute, critical and broad in its grasp of detail. His power of description was exceptional. Upon every subject he brought to bear his scholarly attainments. In argument to court or jury he was strictly methodical and strictly logical, and in effect the manner in which he let drive a disastrous array of facts at the opposite party's side of the case resembled the steady and continuous beating of a sledge hammer, increasing in force at each successive blow. With his mode of interrogation he elicited testimony in a clean, clear-cut and exhaustive manner. When Vaile concluded a severe cross-examination the whole of a witness' knowledge was laid bare for the jury's consideration, and all his weaknesses exposed. He secured the only death penalty ever obtained from a Howard county jury. In a case involving technical chemical knowledge his argument reflected the learning of a college professor.

#### NO PREVIOUS PREPARATION NECESSARY.

John W. Kern, without any previous preparation, can come into court, read over the pleadings and become so familiar with it that to all appearances he can try the merits of a cause as successfully as if he had studied them for weeks. His fertility of expedient is brought to light at almost every turn of the case. A weak place in an opponent's case he detects in a flash. A legal controversy would have to be dryer than the sands of the Sahara if he did not get some kind of fun out of it. When Kern began his career as a lawyer he was not exceedingly well versed in the practice. One of



his first cases was a suit upon a promissory note. The case was to be tried at Tipton and thither Kern went to look after the interests of his clients. He was not expecting the defendant to make an appearance, but contrary to Kern's expectations that personage was represented in court by Judge Green.

There is an expression among the attorneys and peculiarly in the courts like this: "Let a rule go against the defendant, or plaintiff, as the case may be." To "take a rule" is to obtain an order of court that the defendant answer the plaintiff's complaint, or that the plaintiff reply to the defendant's answer. Of these things Kern was ignorant and when he learned that he must contend against Judge Green he became confused and greatly embarrassed. He was at his wits' end and floored. Judge Garver was on the bench and after waiting some time, said: "Well, what are you going to do, Mr. Kern? Will you take a rule?" Kern now saw a way out of his difficulty. He knew that the sympathetic judge would not mislead him. So with his eyes flashing triumph and with an air of crushing learnedness, Kern remarked: "Yes, your Honor, yes, I believe I will take a rule."

Kern is ingenious and knows where to strike and when to let a witness severely alone. He never allows an opportunity to raise a laugh slip by. He has—call it what you will—an innate genius, an inherent power or peculiar talent for the defense of those charged with crime.

#### KERN BEGINS PRACTICE.

After three years in the University of Michigan, at Ann Arbor, a tall, slender youth returned to Kokomo one day in 1869 and hung out his shingle. It read: "John W. Kern, Attorney at Law."

Because of his ability as a fluent and forceful speaker and his recognized shrewdness in dealing with the human personality, he at



once had a thriving practice. Of course, most of it was in the justice of the peace courts of Howard county, but the experience he gained there was invaluable. Of Kern as a lawyer at this time C. C. Shirley, formerly a Kokomo attorney, but now of Indianapolis, recently gave this picture:

"I first knew of him in the justice of the peace courts of Honey Creek township. As often as he was an attorney in a case I was present at the trial. I was charmed with his eloquence and drew my early inspirations from him at the bar. There are no courts which represent the human passions, humor and pathos more potently and effectually than the justice of peace courts. In them John W. Kern was perfectly at home. He ran the gamut of human emotions and sympathies. He had a big heart himself and understood human nature perfectly, and consequently was a perfect master of the human heart and played upon the heart strings at will."

Kern's success in the criminal practice lay not alone in his natural eloquence. He was shrewd in legal expedient. In one trial, where his client was accused of stealing a pocketbook, he procured a money wallet as near like the one taken as possible. He pressed the prosecuting witness to a positive identification of the missing pocketbook, using, of course, the substituted article, with the result that the prosecution was put to rout and humiliation.

#### KERN'S TACTICS.

In another trial he all but ruined a witness. Without a scrap of evidence upon which to rely he suddenly yanked open a drawer of a desk of a table with which the circuit court room of Kokomo was provided. Looking the witness upon the stand full in the eye, he queried in fierce tones, as he produced a blank sheet of paper: "Did you not upon a certain occasion testify so and so in this mat-

ter?" The witness wilted and admitted that his evidence had been different upon a previous occasion.

One of the early trials participated in by Mr. Kern was a litigation over a red shawl—a suit in replevin—which originated in a justice of the peace court at Russiaville, but which controversy, before it was concluded, cost the defeated party several hundred dollars.

Judge L. J. Kirkpatrick relates an amusing account of how Mr. Kern initiated him into the practice. A young, struggling and ambitious attorney, he thought well of Mr. Kern's proffer that he act in his stead in a case which Mr. Kern had for trial at Miami. The judge went to the scene of the trial and found that Mr. Kern's client was stark mad, a fact he learned afterward that Mr. Kern knew. The crazy client had terrorized the town, but Judge Kirkpatrick was tactful enough to get the man to understand that he was his friend and looking to his interests, and kept the man quiet reasonably well, but made his escape from the town as soon as possible to take Kern to task, who laughed with the young lawyer over his exciting experience.

#### KERN AND RAWSON VAILE.

Early in his legal experience Mr. Kern encountered, at the Howard county bar, Rawson Vaile, an editor of the Indianapolis Journal before the Civil war and father of J. Fred Vaile, of Denver, Colorado, a schoolmate of Mr. Kern, and now one of the best-known lawyers of the West. The elder Mr. Vaile wore a silk tile. Kern was making an argument to the court, but his keenness for a joke got the better of him for a moment. He brought his law books down on Mr. Vaile's plug hat with a crash, mashing it completely. Attorney Vaile was livid with rage and the court threatened Mr. Kern with a fine for contempt. With all the wit of which he is the

possessor, he begged the pardon of the injured lawyer and implored the mercy of the court, pleading inadvertence during the heat of an argument.

#### IS CHICKEN-HEARTED.

It is said of Mr. Kern here that he was always "chicken-hearted" in the matter of collecting fees. He was for several years a law partner of Judge B. F. Harness. They tried a case in which they saved for a woman who was unable to talk, for the lack of a palate, forty acres of land. When the case ended the client, with her little boy, who did the talking for her, entered the office and asked to know the fee expected. The lawyers talked the matter over and Kern suggested \$75. When the sum demanded had been made known to the woman she proceeded to extract several greenbacks from her stocking, counting out \$75 from a roll afterward ascertained to contain \$635. She remarked that she had brought this sum along to pay over as a partial payment, expecting to pay the rest in the fall when she sold her corn.

#### COOPER AND ROBINSON.

Upon coming to Kokomo to engage in the practice of the law John W. Cooper formed a partnership with James W. Robinson. Robinson was to receive three-fourths of the fees and Cooper one-fourth. Fees ranged from two to ten dollars in each case. Twenty-five dollars was considered a corpulent compensation. Their first case netted them five dollars, of which amount Mr. Cooper received one dollar and twenty-five cents. Finally Cooper started a law office of his own. He soon did a good collection business. Collections were not then sent to banks as now, but went to swell the volume of an attorney's business. At this time—about 1861—available case precedents were few. Indiana reports were not numerous.

The business of lawyers mostly concerned probate and collection matters. Rules of practice were not well defined. Injunction suits were rare and considered as wonderful. One of his first cases was John Langley vs. the Chicago and Great Eastern railroad for the killing of a colt. Cooper was greatly at a loss whether or not to allege in his complaint that the cars were run purposely, maliciously and willfully over, upon, and against the colt, whereby and wherefrom it, the said colt, died from the said injuries then and there inflicted in the manner aforesaid. Although he proved that there was no fence where the colt was killed, instead of where it entered upon the track, he received judgment for more than his client had paid for the animal.

Mr. Cooper is slow in speech, deliberate in act, careful and sound in thought, generally correct in his estimate of character, judicious in statement, conversant with law, and thoroughly posted on the clerical branch of the practice.

#### COULDN'T OUTDO COLONEL RICHMOND.

Colonel N. P. Richmond had talent as a lawyer far above the ordinary and when he tried was a formidable and well-nigh invincible antagonist. He had a fine legal judgment, but was an indifferent student. He was a man of well-balanced powers, of good physique, popular as presiding officer of conventions, and the possessor of a strong, clear, voice. When he was filled with zeal and exerted his powers to the uttermost his opponents were driven to their wits' end to outdo him, break the force of his appeals to the jury, and get the upper hand in order to gain the ascendancy.

Charles E. Hendry, sanguine in temperament, was easily depressed and discouraged, and when he perceived defeat certain would abandon his case into the hands of his associate counsel. He

was a painstaking voluminous pleader and partial to the prolix common law formulation. Facts he presented to the jury in the best order and with comprehensive system.

Arthur Bell died early in life. He was a lawyer who was thorough in investigation and one that got at the kernal of the case. For the practical things of life he entertained the highest regard and seemed to care for little else. Considering his health, which was not vigorous, he applied himself to his studies too closely. Criminal cases seldom engaged his attention as an attorney. Apparently he loved best to deal with cold facts and it seemed to be his desire to make the law apply to them as closely as paper fits to the wall.

Jacob H. Kroh was an attorney who entered upon the trial of a cause hammer and tonges style. He was a man of average speech, deep human sympathies and effective, but limited in the practice of the law by a distrust of his own powers. He had fine clerical abilities and in the later years of his life was an unqualified success in the capacity of pension attorney.

#### CHARACTERISTICS OF DAN BENNETT.

Illustrative of the characteristics of Dan H. Bennett as a lawyer at the Howard county bar, the story told of him by John W. Kern, is apt, it being as experience occurring during a trial before Justice Benjamin Moon, Mr. Kern being the opposing attorney.

"One Murphy was on trial for larceny in Moon's court. Bennett, who was then editor of the Howard County Republican, had been subpoenaed as a witness. Failing to respond, an attachment was issued and placed in the hands of Isaac Dick, constable, who, after visiting Bennett, and serving the writ, brought back a message from that gentleman to the justice, requesting him to go to h—. The dignity of the court was all torn up, but while the trial was



yet in progress, Bennett appeared, testified, and was leaving the room, when Moon with a voice pregnant with authority said: "Hold on, Mr. Bennett, there is an attachment here against you for disobeying the process of this court." Bennett halted only long enough to tell the court in language both profane and vulgar what he might do with his attachment and again started to the door.

"Mr. constable! Seize that man!" shouted the Justice. "Take him. Take him." The constable taking in the mammoth proportions of the delinquent assured the court of his inability to do so. "Then call the posse comitatus"—by the Eternal call out the militia," yelled the now thoroughly frantic squire, but Bennett had gone and further proceedings under the writ were never had.

"There was a surety of peace trial by jury in Moon's court, in which Bennett represented the defendant, a Mrs. VanHorn. In the course of his argument Bennett abused my client, the prosecuting witness, most shamefully. The jury disagreed and the case was set for retrial on the following day. Knowing of the strained relations between the court and Bennett I concluded to stir up the monkeys and have some fun.

"So, before going into the second trial, I had a private interview with Moon and pointed out to him the outrageous manner in which Bennett conducted himself in the argument, assuring him that it would not be tolerated in any other court, and succeeded in convincing him that Bennett carried on that way just to bring his court into disrepute.

"I got Moon thoroughly aroused and he assured me that if Bennett undertook to repeat his abusive argument of the day before he would stop him at all hazards and maintain the dignity of the court.



## HOW THIS THING WORKED.

"The old thing worked to a charm. In his argument Bennett fairly outdid himself in the way of villification. I waited until he was at the very summit, when I arose and asked the court to assert its authority and not only protect my client from this frightful tirade, which was all outside the evidence, but at the same time maintain a dignity which belonged to a court of justice.

"The squire, with a great show of authority, informed Bennett that he had tolerated that style of argument as long as he intended to and he would no longer permit it. That if he proceeded it must be within the law and the evidence.

"Talk about thundergusts and cyclones. I never heard of such a torrent of abuse as Bennett let drive at the squire. 'I have a right,' said he, 'to be heard upon behalf of my client. I speak under the authority of the constitution and the laws of my country, and I allow no wooden-headed justice of the peace to dictate to me what I shall say, or what I shall not say. You (turning to Moon) undertake to dictate to me what I shall say. Don't you forget, sir, that I am fully able to make my own argument for myself, and don't you think that I will let a one-horse squire dictate to me. Not another word out of you, sir.'

"These words rolled out like a tornado and were emphasized by Bennett's violent gestures and flaring eyes. Moon was scared nearly to death and was the picture of helplessness as the trial proceeded. Further along in his argument Bennett said: 'Gentlemen of the jury: This sorrel-topped justice of the peace may have the audacity to instruct you as to what the law is. If he does you will pay no attention to what he may say. He knows no law, never did know any, and is not presumed to know any. Why he should attempt to instruct men of intelligence, like you, I don't know, but if he

does, I repeat, it is your duty to disregard his instructions entirely.' ” The jury decided in Bennett's favor.

#### IN JUDGE O'BRIEN'S COURT.

We are now in Judge O'Brien's court. The trial of a writ of habeas corpus is in progress. For the petitioner, John W. Kern. The defendant appears by attorney, Dan H. Bennett, who administers a severe excoriation upon Kern's client. Taking umbrage the client loses his temper, becomes hot headed, rolls up his sleeves, displays fine muscles, as if preparing to whip Bennett. Kern and others grasp the aggressor and calm him down. During the exciting scene Bennett remains calm and unmoved, continues to address the Court and takes no notice of the occurrence. Upon being asked afterwards about the incident, Bennett said: "Did you see that chair in front of me? Had the whelp attacked me with a single blow, I would have brained him upon the spot."

During Judge O'Brien's administration upon the bench a new judicial circuit was formed comprising Howard and Tipton counties. Thomas A. Hendricks was then governor of the state, and he appointed to the bench Clark N. Pollard, March 12, 1873. The special election to choose a successor to Judge Pollard was set for October, the same year.

The campaign was a hard fought one. Judge N. R. Lindsay was the Republican party nominee, while Pollard, with the consent of his party, aspired to the position as an independent. T. C. Philips fought Pollard through the columns of the Tribune vigorously, while Pollard was supported ably by D. H. Bennett, then conducting the Howard County Republican. The result of the election was the defeat of Judge Lindsay. Pollard served until November, 1879.

## JUDGE POLLARD'S RECORD.

While on the bench Judge Pollard made an unusual record, that of reversing the Indiana supreme court, interpreting the law more accurately than the state tribunal. A man by the name of Heck, who was a subject of Queen Victoria, and a resident of Illinois, had bought timber on the railroad line north of Kokomo. He cut the timber into wood, under a contract with the P. C. C. & St. L. Railroad Company, which company had agreed to purchase the wood. The wood was to be hauled and ricked along the railway line, then to be measured and paid for by the company. The wood was cut and ricked, according to contract, but the railroad company refused and neglected to measure and receive it, for a long period of time. In the fall of 1871, it being an excessively dry season, the wood caught on fire, and was destroyed. Although it was insured, and the policy paid by the insurance company, Heck sued the railroad company, to recover the value of the wood. Pollard held that the measure of damages was the contract price for the wood. The supreme court of the state, reversed the case, holding that the measure of damages was the market value of the wood at the time and place of its delivery. After this reversal by the supreme court, Mr. Heck dismissed his case in the Howard circuit court and brought suit in the United States court in Chicago. He was there successful, that court holding, as had Pollard. Upon appeal to the United States supreme court by the railroad company, the principle of law laid down by Pollard was again sustained.

## JUDGE OVERMAN WAS GENEROUS.

Pollard was succeeded by Nathaniel R. Overman, of Tipton. He was a generous man, who worked his way up from the bottom

round of the ladder, a man who stood by a friend to the last, and who was one of the people. One of the parties to a divorce case which he was hearing in a side room and which was thought to smack of collusion, was afflicted with a muscular trouble which caused him to contract his eye lids frequently. Chancing to glance at this individual, Overman thought he was winking at him for the purpose of influencing his decision. This made Overman "red hot". And he passionately exclaimed, "D—n you, stop that winking at me." Overman was one of Tipton's noted and public spirited citizens, whose career was closely identified with its best history. While on the bench he displayed an indefatigable industry, and he had a ceaseless desire to render justice to all clients. Although the educational facilities of his youth were of limited enjoyment, yet the position which, at the time of his death, his native industry and intellect had won for him in the domain of literature and science was to be pointed to with pride. His researches and contributions to scientific and historical literature had rendered him almost if not quite as honored as his judicial career and were monuments to his intellectual achievements.

Judge Overman died in office and his unexpired term was filled by Judge O'Brien, appointed to the vacancy by the governor of the state. At the ensuing election Dan Waugh, of Tipton, was chosen judge by the people. Overman's successor in office was Dan Waugh, of Tipton. Following him upon the bench was L. J. Kirkpatrick. He in turn was followed by Judge Walter Mount and he by J. F. Elliott, the successor of whom was Lee Nash, of Tipton.

## THE SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

When in February, 1898, the battleship *Maine* was sunk in Havana harbor and nearly all on board lost their lives by Spanish treachery, the soldier spirit of Howard county was again aroused and men were not wanting to answer when the summon came that soldiers were needed for the Spanish-American war and Company L of the One Hundred and Fifty-eighth Regiment Indiana Volunteers was the answer. The history of Company L is herewith appended.

This company was organized at Kokomo, February 4, 1892, by A. N. Grant, the first officers being A. N. Grant, captain; Edward Kiefer, first lieutenant; Charles Hansell, second lieutenant, and was called the "Grant Fencibles." The company was assigned to the Second Regiment, "Indiana Legion," and attended its first encampment at Frankfort, Indiana, during the summer of 1892. The company also attended and participated in the dedication exercises of the Columbian Exposition in the fall of 1892.

Upon the resignation of Captain Grant and Lieutenant Kiefer, new officers were elected in June, 1893, Albert Martin being elevated to the captaincy and Charles Hansel chosen first lieutenant. Robert L. Jacobs was also chosen second lieutenant. The company attended the encampment at Terre Haute, Indiana, during the summer, and in the fall of 1893 was ordered to Robey, Indiana, and with three companies assisted in suppressing the notorious Robey prize fights, being held at the Robey race tracks. Upon a reorganization of the state troops, which was made in 1894, the company was again assigned to the Second Regiment of the Indiana National Guard and was ordered to Hammond, Indiana, in July of 1894, to assist in



the suppression of the Pullman strike and riots. Owing to the experience of Captain Martin in Indian uprisings and other military expeditions, while in the service of the regular army of the United States in years past, Company L was selected to head the column and had the distinction of being the first company to march into Hammond. The company was on duty sixteen days at Hammond and East Chicago.

## OFFICERS ARE CHANGED.

Upon the resignation of Captain Martin in the spring of 1895, Will T. Meck, afterwards city clerk of Kokomo, was elected captain, R. L. Jacobs, first lieutenant, and Philip Owen, second lieutenant. This year the company attended the state camp at Indianapolis. In the fall of 1895 Captain Meck resigned and Captain Martin was re-elected and served until his death, in February, 1896. Robert L. Jacobs was then chosen captain, Philip Owen, first lieutenant, and Claude Scoven, second lieutenant.

When war was declared with Spain, Company L was ordered, with other companies, to mobilize at Camp Mount, Indianapolis, and the company left Kokomo, April 26, 1898. Lieutenant Scoven failed to pass the required medical examination and Joseph Lang was elected to fill the vacancy in office occasioned by his rejection by the medical examiners. Company L was mustered into the volunteer service as Company L, One Hundred and Fifty-eighth Indiana Volunteer Infantry, May 10, 1898, with eighty-six men, the officers being Robert L. Jacobs, captain; Philip Owen, first lieutenant, and Joseph Lang, second lieutenant.

The company left Indianapolis in May, 1898, and arrived at Chickamauga Park the same month. In June Corporal Lewis Bridenstein was detailed as special recruiting officer and sent home to



recruit the company to its maximum strength of one hundred and six men. The company was ordered to Camp Poland, Knoxville, Tennessee, in August of the same year, and went into camp there.

The One Hundred and Fifty-eighth Regiment, to which Company L belonged, was ordered to Camp Mount for mustering out, arriving there in September. Company L, with other companies, was furloughed for thirty days from September 17th and arrived home in Kokomo shortly afterwards. The company reported back to Camp Mount on October 17th and was given final discharge November 4, 1898. The company did not reorganize upon the reconstruction of the Indiana National Guard and therefore ceased to exist.

---

## RAILROADS.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

The Indianapolis & Peru Railroad was the first to be built through Kokomo. Its construction was started toward Kokomo as early as 1852. The New London Pioneer did excellent service in enlisting popular favor in behalf of this enterprise before the fifties were reached. Colonel C. D. Murray was the agent at Kokomo, who collected the subscriptions of stock taken in support of the enterprise. The line was first built out of Indianapolis as far north as Noblesville. The road consisted of planking, which was crowned with an iron strip. This was the kind of rail employed, and which served all practical purposes for some time. Travel necessarily over such a line was very slow; little better than a horse could jog along. The train had to move with a due regard to its ability to keep the track, and it was not an infrequent thing, say those most acquainted with the subject, that the engine jumped

the track and had to be returned to its proper place with jackscrews, which were always carried in the baggage car, ready for any such emergency which might arise. Then there was the danger of the thin iron piece which formed the top of the rail warping under the rays of the sun and the occasion was not rare upon which the train had to be stopped to permit of the track being nailed down to allow of further progress. Mrs. L. E. Harrison was a passenger over this road in its very infancy. She was attending a private school at Indianapolis and returned home with her father, who was serving his first term in the legislature. After the journey to Noblesville, a tedious one at best, had been accomplished, Judge Lindsay was met with his farm employe, who had brought for his use a large, magnificent horse of the breed which he (Judge Lindsay) always possessed, and upon the back of this faithful steed he rode to Kokomo. Mrs. Harrison, then a young lady, was placed in a large wagon, provided for the accommodation of travelers north, and entered upon the trip to Kokomo. The ground was covered with ice, and the wagon wheels sank into the mud up to the hubs. After many hours the wagon drew up to the door of a hostelry at Tipton, where the party rested, feeling utterly exhausted.

It was such conditions as these which formed public opinion to welcome the advent of a railroad line connecting the north with Indianapolis and the east. It was not only the desire for speed and convenience in travel, but to quickly and easily reach various markets as well. In 1852 Captain Milton Garrigus was busy in helping grade upon the line, boarding with his assistants at the old McClintock house in Kokomo, then the only hotel and a notable house in its day.

#### KOKOMO IS JUBILANT.

When the road penetrated Kokomo there was a rejoicing the fullness of which it is hard at this late day to fully appreciate. The

old log courthouse was the scene of a jollification at which Judge Lindsay, Colonel C. D. Murray and Dr. Corydon Richmond were chief speakers. The fight to get the road along its present route, Buckeye street, was won by the exertions of the merchants, who desired to save drayage bills, as they reasoned the matter in that day, being afforded the privilege of having goods, as they hoped, unloaded at their very doors. Buckeye street was then the Wall street of Kokomo, and it was believed that it would remain the heart of the business section by reason of the location of the railroad, an expectation destined to be disappointed. Be that as it may, it was the scene of the principal commercial activity in Kokomo in its day. The farmers' wagons drew up to its stores, and produce and grain found their way to the foreign market, passing over this street, which was a commercial triumph. Kokomo was proud in those days. Her leading citizens saw the opportunity of Kokomo becoming a second Indianapolis. At any rate, the arteries of trade expanded, she felt the inspiration of the new road and started upon a career of growth which she has not since abandoned, but has ever since continued. An elevator business was not long in establishment and the claims of magic change from the presence of the road were more than realized. For some months Kokomo was the terminus of the line. A hack carried passengers through to Peru; those who might desire to proceed to that destination. Samuel C. Mills was the first agent of the company in Kokomo, in which capacity he continued several years. He and Dr. Corydon Richmond donated the present depot site. Dr. Richmond surveyed it and Mr. Mills carried the chain. It was a part of the Mills & Richmond addition, and they donated the railroad company a number of lots. This for the reason that David Foster was a formidable competitor against them for the location of the depot upon property of which he was the owner. Mr. Mills built a large frame structure

upon the site of the Howard flouring mills, which served at first as a warehouse for the company's freight and as a passenger depot, and was so utilized until the company erected a depot upon the spot now occupied by its passenger and freight station. In time the road was extended to Peru and ultimately to Michigan City. Then the cup of joy in Kokomo was full.

#### THE PENNSYLVANIA LINE.

But the pride of the citizens in the future was further increased in the announcement that the Pennsylvania line was to pass through Kokomo. During the fifties this road was built and Kokomo enjoyed still a wider field of commerce than ever before, as did the county. For a few years the road was called "the jerk water road," due to the fact that the territory over which it passed between Windfall and this city was swampy and undrained, and in the spring of the year, in particular, the heavy weight of the train passing over the line would throw the mud and water up against the car windows in streams. The instances are numerous where locomotives were derailed, owing to the unsafe condition of the tracks. Milton Garigus was a passenger in the first train which passed over the new line going from this city to Logansport. He describes the trip as rough and perilous and exceedingly tedious.

#### THE MOST IMPORTANT ROAD.

Perhaps the most important railroad acquisition of late years was the Cloverleaf line, which gives markets to the extreme West as well as to the Eastern seaboard. In the start this great road consisted of a small line between Frankfort and Kokomo, and the road was known as the F. & K. line. It was a standard-gauge line, with

Frankfort and Kokomo as terminal points. The original depot in Kokomo stood upon Elm street for several years, a small frame structure. A leading spirit in the promotion of the building of this road was Henry Y. Morrison, of Frankfort. A. Y. Comstock was a lieutenant in Kokomo. The road was voted a subsidy of about four thousand dollars a mile, only about three thousand dollars of which was collected. In the end the promoters of the enterprise turned over the rights of way, subsidy and all assets to the contractors, who decided to advance further money, upon condition of completing the road, which was effected. The road was started in 1873 and finished in the spring of 1874. The road being a short line with no feeders, and depending alone upon local custom, had a hard pull for a period of several years. Finally, in 1880, negotiations were started for a road from east to west, the line being known as the Toledo, Bloomington & Western. The Frankfort & Kokomo line was in the path of the new road, but this property had been purchased by the Lake Erie & Western Railroad Company, which sold the line to the new corporation, but reserved the right of way through Frankfort, making it necessary for the new company to pass through that city by an independent route. The road was changed to a narrow-gauge. It was operated in this manner until it passed into a receivership, being later bought by the Toledo, St. Louis & Kansas City Railroad Company, which changed the line back to the standard-gauge. The line from the east reached Kokomo January 1, 1881.

Kokomo's commercial prosperity was further advanced and enhanced by the construction of a street railway line, which has developed into the Kokomo, Marion & Western Interurban Railroad Company, with a line from Kokomo to Marion, a profitable property, while a line between Kokomo, Lafayette and Terre Haute is in its incipency, but a certain thing of the future in all probability.



## INTERURBAN LINES.

Perhaps as great a stimulus as Kokomo has experienced from railroad building was in the advent, a few years ago, of the lines of the Indiana Union Traction Company through the city. It is the peoples' road, and freight service is as handy as the groceryman's delivery wagon, while the passenger patronage is remarkable.

Kokomo's railroad facilities are little short of remarkable, the size of the city considered, and by reason of them she has thrived as a manufacturing point after the virtual depletion, if not relative failure, of natural gas, which is no longer to be had as the "cheap fuel for factories in unlimited amounts."

North, east, south and west, Kokomo is connected by rail with the busy marts of trade, and thrives in consequence of excellent and perfect railroad facilities and reasonable rates.

---

PROBATE AND COMMON PLEAS COURT.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

Nathan C. Beals, the first probate judge in the county, was a plain, good-natured, unsophisticated farmer, and a man of average intellect. He never had a legal education.

Benjamin Lesoura, successor to Beals, was an honest, upright and industrious man of ordinary powers of mind. He was a farmer by occupation and not a lawyer. At one time he lived near Alto and was in moderate circumstances.

N. C. Beals was elected again and followed in office by Associate Judge Robert Ervin.



May 14, 1852, an act of the legislature was approved by the governor which abolished the probate courts and established common pleas courts. All business pending before the probate courts, and all business transferred from such to the circuit courts, and all business commenced in the circuit courts by virtue of any local law, was, by an act of 1853, transferred to the courts of common pleas in the proper counties.

E. S. Stone was the first judge of the common pleas court. Stone was a quiet, modest, and intelligent lawyer of fair ability. He was tall, slender, and cadaverous in appearance. Stone had a habit of parting his coat tails and thrusting them forward. In this position he would hold them by ramming his hands into his pockets. After one Jonathan William Evans, of Hamilton county, had made a somewhat sophomoric argument and had sat down, Stone went through his customary performance of so arranging his coat tails, and then observed: "If the gentleman had only plucked a few feathers from the wings of his imagination and stuck them in the tail of his judgment, he would have fared better."

#### STONE'S SUCCESSOR.

Nathaniel R. Lindsay succeeded Stone. He was twice elected judge of this court, but resigned before the end of his second term. Before he was eight years of age he was left, by the death of his father, to orphanage and penury in a wilderness home, and without property, or a father's counsel, commenced the battle of life, in his early youth, in the midst of circumstances that seem to the present generation very unpromising. And he gave evidence of his ability and trustworthiness to be elected justice of the peace at the age of twenty-four years, considering the fact that at the time of his selection to the office, 1839, the position was very important. He was

a member of the legislature, engaged in codifying the laws of the state after the adoption of the present constitution, and arose to be a leader among the people where he resided, and was best known, and had a reputation throughout the state as an able lawyer, a sound, safe and conservative legislator. In the last years of his life he was engaged in the advocacy of a system of a reform of the mode of trials by jury and to enlarge the amount of property to be held exempt from execution. As a lawyer he was distinguished for his ability as an advocate and tact in the management of a trial of a cause and for his fidelity to his clients and courtesy to members of the profession and the courts.

#### JUDGE GREEN.

Judge Green, of Tipton, was the third judge of the court. Extending his hand, Judge Green greeted an acquaintance with a cordial smile and was social with everybody. The duties of his office he performed in a plodding but conscientious manner. Principally and essentially a pioneer lawyer, he tried a case in a plain matter-of-fact style, exactly as our rough-and-ready forefathers felled the trees of the forest and drained the large swamps with which our land was covered. He clothed his thought generally in unembellished and commonplace language and exemplified it with the most simple and homely illustration. His heart beat with magnificent impulses. Kind, benevolent and obliging, he so endeared himself to the younger attorneys, who practiced before him, whom he would aid and assist in a hundred little ways, that they, advanced to years of age, remembered him with deep gratitude.

Green was a jolly man and very fond of a joke. It is told of him that during the prevalence of high water in Tipton—and in an early day high water prevailed there nearly all the year—he was

seen one day floating around his yard in a craft of rude construction, pushing himself with a pole.

"What are you doing, Judge?" was asked of him.

"I am tired of drinking this damned pond water and trying to find my well!"

#### LAST COMMON PLEAS JUDGE.

William Garver, the last common pleas judge, lived in Hamilton county, where he began the practice of the law. His preceptor in the law was Isaac Blackford, later judge of the supreme court of Indiana, and annotator of the Blackford reports. From this painstaking master, who bore the reputation of being a keen criticiser of his students, Garver became quite thoroughly grounded in the rudiments of the law. While Garver never made anything more than an ordinary reputation in the law, he developed considerable strength when it came to taking a common-sense view of a case. He was a state senator and a state attorney, but as a candidate for circuit judge and congressman he was defeated.

By act of March 6, 1873, courts of common pleas throughout the state were abolished. The thirty-sixth judicial circuit was formed and James O'Brien was ousted from his office as judge *pro tem.* of the seventeenth judicial district, as Judge Davis was not an inhabitant of any one of the counties of which it was composed after being separated from the two counties mentioned. In subsequent years Judge O'Brien was a resident of Howard county, wherein he served upon the circuit bench as appointee to succeed Judge Overman, of Tipton.

## REMINISCENCES OF LEWIS CASS BELL.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

Lewis Cass Bell, claiming the distinction of being the first white child born in Cass county, and also claiming that Cass county was named after him, was yet alive in 1908, and related his experiences with the Indians of Howard county, over which he roamed as a pioneer hunter.

Mr. Bell knew personally the Indian chiefs of this part of the Miami reserve and hunted with them all. Chief Kokomoko was head of a village, extending from the corner of Sycamore and Main streets to Wildcat creek, and including perhaps one hundred wigwams. Chief Kokomoko, Mr. Bell says, was friendly with the whites, and used the pale face well. Physically he was a large man, but he dearly loved his whisky, and was not of much personal force or character.

Chief Shappendocia (spelled phonetically), founder of Greentown, Mr. Bell declares to have been one of the best Indians he ever knew. He did not drink a drop, and he and his wife were the only two of his village who did not drink. The chief was greatly in love with his wife, whom he procured under unusual circumstances. Her first husband was a hard-drinking, worthless Indian and did not treat his squaw well, and upon meeting Shappendocia she resolved to leave her husband. An elopement was planned and carefully executed, but the deserted husband, learning of the situation, resolved to give pursuit and kill Chief Shappendocia. The latter, learning of this fact, dismounted from his pony, and giving the reins to the squaw, with directions to proceed, Chief Shappendocia hid behind a tree and awaited the arrival of the pursuing husband. When he came within shot, Chief Shappendocia picked him off the saddle

and rejoined his future wife, soon marrying the woman he had made a widow. Their married life was a very happy one.

Chief Shappendocia had many of the ways of civilization. He played a violin well, was a good talker, using very correct English. His home, a cabin of two rooms, was well kept, one side being used for a small store which he conducted. The chief also farmed a little, making a specialty of corn and beans, and raised some live stock. When the Indians left the reserve, Chief Shappendocia sold out and went west with his people, but he told Mr. Bell that if he "did not like the new location he would come back," but he never returned.

#### INDIAN VILLAGES.

Chief Squirrell's village formed the third of a link of Indian settlements of the pioneer days. His seat of government was located near Pipe creek, in Cass county, but the village bore an intimate relation to the pioneer and social life of Howard (then Rich-ardville) county. Chief Squirrell was a small, quick, active man, a good Indian, and popular with his people and the whites.

To the north still was the powerful village of Chief Francis Godfrey, a man of massive size, whose belt was almost equal to the girth of a saddle. He had a wide and overshadowing influence over the Indians of Howard county, and even among the whites.

Mr. Bell was as much identified with Howard as with Cass county. He was a noted hunter, making his living in that way. He formed the acquaintance of "Indian Tom," who belonged to Chief Shappendocia's village, and they were boon companions in the hunt. Mr. Bell lost the Indian's friendship through a joke. Finding "Indian Tom" asleep one day upon a log, Mr. Bell slipped up without making any noise and abstracted the Indian's rifle, which rested at his side. Then secreting himself, he cried like a wildcat. The In-



dian jumped to his feet and grabbed for his gun, but finding it gone, instantly detected the presence of Mr. Bell. The red skin was very angry and sullenly demanded his weapon, which was at once handed him. He quit the scene with angry strides and never afterwards spoke to Mr. Bell, being so ashamed at being outdone in this manner, which was a blow to his pride. Whenever Mr. Bell visited the village of Chief Shappendocia "Indian Tom" always left.

Mr. Bell, like the Indians, earned his chief money by shooting deer, wolves and game of all kinds for the furs. One year he and Isaac Fickle killed three hundred deer, besides other game. Bell was an expert shot. Early in the fall he would take rifle in hand and start into the deep forests which then covered a tier of counties in the reserve. Weary with the hunt of the day, he would build a fire to keep away the wolves and gather brush for a bed and without bed covering of any kind lie down to peaceful dreams. Though the snow lay deep upon the ground, no bed covering was needed. Attired in wamus, buckskin breeches and moccasins, the bitterest cold would have no effect upon him. For supper he would bring down a fat squirrel and roast him by the fire, eating the toothsome meat with dry bread, always carried by the hunter.

Wolves in this country were still so troublesome in December, 1847, that a premium of three dollars and fifty cents in addition to the lawful fee was offered by the county commissioners for each scalp presented the county clerk.

In the early forties the Indians were yet numerous in Howard county. One day several of them, while drunk, appeared at Judge Lindsay's cabin door. His daughter, Mrs. L. E. Harrison, was nearly frightened out of her senses, and as the cabin was not chinked—that is, the spaces between the logs were open—she began to climb to the loft, screaming for her father at the top of her voice. When he arrived she had reached the loft and was seated on a pole.



trembling with excitement, while the Indians roared with laughter. The judge commanded her to descend, and giving the Indians something to eat sent them away.

The Indians came near breaking up the first Fourth of July celebration held in Kokomo in 1847, at the Sulphur Springs, a site since builded over, on East Mulberry street. At this time the site was covered with a dense woods. People came from over the county, but not to exceed fifty people were present, but all were intensely patriotic, and the day was celebrated in a memorable manner. The people brought their dinners and remained during the entire day. The speeches were made by Judge N. R. Lindsay and Colonel C. D. Murray, pioneer lawyers. During the celebration an Indian, who was under the influence of drink, and perched in a tree, caused great confusion. David Foster, who had an unbounded influence over the red skins, strapped his blanket on his horse, rode away with the Indians following, and persuaded the feathered and painted visitors to leave the scene that the celebration might proceed peacefully and without interruption. There was no lack of noise and the boom of the anvil gave all the necessary artillery and explosive effect. Judge Lindsay and Colonel Murray stood upon a stump during the delivery of their speeches. It was the habit of using a stump as a platform in an early day in Indiana that the phrase originated of "taking the stump," applied to political campaigns.

Frequently the Indians would get drunk and run whooping through the village of Kokomo like madmen, or dash around upon their ponies. They were really dangerous, but never hurt any one. They always seemed in fear of the government.

David Foster, the founder of Kokomo, was a notable trader with the Indians of this locality. Once upon a time he sold needles to the red skins at one dollar apiece by claiming that the last needle

maker was dead and that it would be a long time before the lost art was again learned.

Joseph and Leodicia McCoy, well known pioneers of the county, rode horseback over the Indian trail from Marion to this city, being the only way they could travel, the roads not permitting of the use of a wagon. They passed the night in the Indian camp, then to the west of the City Park site. They were cordially treated by the Indians, being furnished with blankets for their greater comfort. When they departed the next morning the dogs barked at them furiously and the Indians were in a hub-bub, calling at the canines. The McCoy's supposed that the Indians were sicking the dogs upon them, but later found that the red skins were endeavoring to call the dogs off from their attack. The McCoy's settled in Monroe township. Mrs. McCoy lived to the age of ninety-two years, having died in Kokomo.

---

## CHURCHES.

Fortunately for Kokomo and Howard county the first settlers were men and women who believed fully in both religion and education, and as soon as they had provided themselves with homes, however rude and uncomfortable they may have been, they began to plan and prepare places and means for the education of their children and at the same time to hold religious services. Because of the fewness in numbers the early meetings were small congregations. The first meetings were held in the homes and the people traveled miles to attend service, and usually as soon as a half dozen people of the same faith could be gotten together a church would be started. That did not mean that there would then be regular

preaching service. Often the church was compelled to be content with only an occasional sermon from a minister who made a wide circuit and served a large district. There were many earnest Christians then who were strong exhorters, who made stirring appeals for the better life.

#### FIRST BAPTIST CHURCH.

While Kokomo had but thirty families in 1848, there were enough Baptists among them in 1847 to organize a church with seven members. Who were the ministers of that early Baptist church neither written history nor tradition tells us. History tells us that the last recorded meeting of that church was held August 26, 1858, and that there were about one hundred members, and that of this number were Corydon Richmond, Matthew and Mrs. Murden and Denton Simpson. Denton Simpson, we know, was then living in Taylor township. Up to that time it was accounted one of the flourishing churches of the little town. Corydon Richmond was one of the foremost citizens of the community and a leading physician. Matthew and Mrs. Murden were highly respected citizens, and Denton Simpson was one of the learned men, who had been the village schoolmaster. It is said that they disbanded by mutual consent. Why they disbanded by mutual consent there is not a hint.

For the next sixteen years Kokomo was without a Baptist church, and of the one hundred members who had disbanded and broken up their church home only three or four are left. Many of the others drifted off into other folds and some had gone into the beyond.

In 1874 W. A. Stuart and family moved to Kokomo. Mr. Stuart was a hustling real estate dealer and an earnest Baptist, as

were his family. He and his wife began immediately to look about for Baptists. They found a very small remnant. They organized a Baptist Sunday school and began earnestly to build up the Baptist faith where it had been permitted to go down. The school met at the old Third Ward school building, at the corner of Clay and Taylor streets, with W. A. Stuart as superintendent and R. L. Upton as secretary. The school prospered. Early in December, 1874, was established what was called the Sunday school prayer meeting. The Rev. Joseph Brown, missionary of the Baptist state convention, was present and preached.

On February 6 and 7, 1875, and at his request, a meeting was held on Monday following to discuss the Baptist situation. Twelve Baptists were present and participated and passed a resolution unanimously to organize a church. A meeting was appointed for February 18th, when an organization was completed with eight members, as follows: James W. Fisher, Nancy P. Fisher, Minnie B. Fisher, Drusilla A. Rickard, Sarah C. Gray, W. A. Stuart, B. H. Stuart and Naomi Upton. A council was convened March 20, 1875, to consider the recognition of the organization, of which Rev. B. R. Ward was moderator and Jackson Morrow was clerk. This meeting occurred in the midst of one of the most violent snowstorms that ever visited this section, and while six members were sick at home, leaving but two to represent the church at the meeting. Every element of discouragement was present and it seemed to the council that failure was sure to follow. While discussing this phase of the matter Grandpa Thomas, of Galveston, said: "Brethren, let us give them a chance." That decided the matter. The council voted to give them a chance.

#### EARLY STRUGGLES.

With little influence in society, few in numbers with a property valuation of less than one thousand dollars, limited in ability as to

leadership, without a house of worship, without a pastor, and all this under the shadow of six strong church organizations, one of which was built up to ninety members by a revival meeting held in the same house and to whom was given the use of the house one-half of the time from January till September following, when the wants of the pulpit required its entire use. In the meantime, and until November 1st, the pulpit was supplied by neighboring ministers lending their services. When ministerial aid failed sermons were read or prayer and conference meetings were held.

Ministers who gave their services were Joseph Brown, P. Odell, B. R. Ward, J. C. Burkholder, W. N. Wyeth, P. McDade, S. Cornelius, and others.

A meeting of days followed the recognition service, mainly conducted by Burkholder, in which eight members were received by baptism. Three more were received during the summer by baptism and five by letter, making twenty-four members, when Rev. S. Cornelius, D. D., was settled as pastor. November 1, 1875, twenty-seven more members were added, chiefly as a result of meetings continuing from January 1 to February 20, 1876. On June 1, 1875, the Third Ward schoolhouse was purchased, with one and one-half lots, for two thousand dollars, five hundred dollars in cash and the balance in one and two years. This was promised without knowing where it was to come from. John Kenower, of Huntington, paid the first one hundred dollars and M. H. Thomas fifty dollars and the remainder was raised within the church. Under Rev. Cornelius' pastorate the membership increased to eighty-eight. April 26, 1878, Norman Carr became pastor and remained till September 25, 1882, when he resigned to become financial agent of Franklin College. Rev. Carr did a grand work while pastor. During his pastorate of four years and five months the membership increased to two hundred and twelve, the church in the meantime having lost one hundred by deaths and removals.



## PAYING OUT OF DEBT.

A debt of one thousand two hundred dollars on the church had been paid and a parsonage costing one thousand dollars had been purchased. On the 10th day of January, 1883, N. C. Smith became pastor, doing a good work spiritually and causing the debt on the parsonage to be paid. In 1893 the church, having outgrown their house of worship, built their present commodious brick structure, moving the old house back and building on the front. They have now a property valued at twelve thousand dollars. This house was built while the Rev. J. H. Wynans was pastor of the church. The money to pay for the construction of the new church was collected largely from the membership. The largest giver outside of the membership was Monroe Seiberling, of the Plate Glass Company and one of Kokomo's first and most liberal givers.

Other pastors have been Allen Hill, E. G. Shouse, J. C. Rhodes, G. B. McKee and J. W. Clevenger. The Rev. McKee was probably the ablest preacher ever holding a pastorate in Kokomo. The membership in 1908 is two hundred and eighty. The church at present is without a pastor, and is also out of debt.

In reviewing the history of this church the conclusion must be that it is the outgrowth of faith. Its members have not been of the rich nor those highest in social circles. The success of this church must be ascribed to Him who uses the weak things of the earth to manifest His power and glory. The Baptists hold many views in common with other evangelical denominations. They believe in a personal God of infinite perfection, in the fall of man, the atonement through Christ's death, the resurrection from the dead, the final judgment, the everlasting blessedness of the righteous and the everlasting punishment of the wicked. The central supremely characteristic doctrine of the Baptists is their belief in a



regenerated church membership. As baptist symbolizes regeneration; that is, spiritual death and resurrection through faith in the death and resurrection of Christ, so nothing but the immersion of the believer represents the truth symbolized by scriptural baptism.

Those who have been prominent in the work of this church are W. A. and Mrs. Stuart, Rev. B. R. Ward, Sampson Lett, W. T. Merrill and Mrs. Murden.

#### THE NORTH STREET BAPTIST CHURCH.

Many years ago the Baptist church began a mission Sunday school on North Smith street, near the site of the Doxey factory, in a vacant frame house quite simply fitted up for this purpose. This met a ready response from the people of that section, which had no church nor Sunday school other than this. For several years this work was carried on with but poor equipment in the way of a house and furnishings. After W. S. Armstrong had platted an addition to Kokomo on North street, being a part of the T. A. Armstrong estate, he offered the Baptists a choice lot at the corner of North and Morrison streets if they would build a church-house on it. The Baptists accepted the offer and in the fall of 1904 laid the cornerstone of a new church, and one year later, in the fall of 1905, dedicated a neat frame church costing two thousand dollars, free of debt.

Before the dedication Mr. and Mrs. W. S. Armstrong publicly donated the lot to the Baptist people for church purposes and made a deed therefor. The lot was valued at three hundred dollars. A little while later Harry and Lizzie Lindsay jointly donated a second lot adjoining the other. Neither of these families were Baptists and their actions were regarded as special favors. This church is located in a section of the city without other church facilities and thus presents a rare opportunity for Christian work.

The chief workers and promoters of the work in this mission field are Mr. and Mrs. J. C. Smith and J. A. Rivers.

MAIN STREET CHRISTIAN CHURCH.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

The Christian, or Disciples', church was organized on the 21st day of February, 1851, with seven members. They were Lewis Anderson and wife, Thomas Shepard and wife, John E. Lindsay and wife and Edward W. Shepard. Lewis Anderson, Edward Shepard and John Lindsay were elected trustees; Thomas Shepard and Lewis Anderson elders. Two of the members died a few years later, Lewis Anderson and Edward Shepard. In a few months Thomas A. Armstrong and family moved to this city and took membership. The membership in a short time was further augmented by the addition of Martin M. Preble, Benjamin B. Preble, Alfred H. Plough, and families. For six years this faithful band of followers of the Lord, with a few recruits from time to time, as the village of Kokomo increased in population, met in the homes of the members of the congregation, to break bread and serve their Master as best they could. At times they hired a hall in which to worship and, as often as possible, secured some one to preach. The preaching for several years was mostly done by the elders of the church without any compensation whatever, "yet they prospered."

In 1854 the congregation purchased of John Bohan, then auditor of the county, lot No. 45, in the original plat, for which thirty dollars was paid. Early in 1857 a building committee was appointed, of which A. F. Armstrong was a member, and during the year the frame church, a building painted white and known as the

old Christian church, was erected on East Mulberry street and completed at a cost of about one thousand eight hundred dollars. It has a seating capacity of three hundred. In this building the congregation worshiped for thirty-two years, from 1858 to February, 1880. Early in the year 1866, while in this building and during the pastorate of Rev. R. E. Pearee, the organ, as an instrument of worship with music, was introduced into the services of the congregation. It created a commotion for a time, some believing it to be a machination of the devil. The final result of the contention over the matter was the passage of two resolutions by the congregation, the first of which called for the resignation of the pastor and gave him but fifteen days in which to resign. He resigned. The second resolution permitted the church organ to remain in the church building, but with the strict condition that it was not to be played upon but was to remain quiet during the services on the Lord's day. It was agreed that it would be available for use in Sunday school and at weekday meetings. These resolutions gave general satisfaction and were adopted by a unanimous vote.

In 1872, while under the pastorate of Rev. James W. Conner, the membership had increased to two hundred and twenty-three members, and the congregation was able to pay its pastor a salary of fifteen hundred dollars per annum and yet keep out of debt. Of the early church Thomas Auter and Thomas A. Armstrong were members of decided personal characteristics. Auter was at one time an elder, and a very ardent man in his religious convictions.

#### BOTH PREACHER AND JANITOR.

He could not only preach successfully, but he served as janitor with all the ardency of his nature and nothing pleased him more than to ring the church bell, summoning the faithful to worship.

Ardent also in his sympathies, and hearing of the mistreatment of John Russell, a negro just arrived from the South, Elder Auter waited upon the man whom he had been informed had threatened to kick Russell out of a place Russell had entered and informed the party waited upon that if there was any kicking to be done just to kick him, Auter. As the elder was a large and active man, the invitation was not an alluring one and was never accepted. A beautiful picture is that lingering in the minds of the older members of the congregation, who recall that nearly each Sunday, while in the old church, Thomas A. Armstrong, venerable and feeble, attended upon divine services. He was supported upon two canes and conducted to the front by his sons, where he occupied a large arm chair, provided for his use, near the pulpit, in order that he might hear. He invariably wore a large red bandana handkerchief about his head. In this instance was exemplified the truth of the scriptures, "Honor thy father and thy mother that thy days may be long upon the earth." His children each enjoyed a long life. Martin B. Preble and others of the pioneer members were forceful personalities, valiant soldiers for the Lord. In 1875 lots were purchased of Worley Leas for three thousand dollars, on which was erected the brick church destroyed by fire, and predecessor of the present beautiful stone structure, now called the Main Street Christian church.

In February, 1876, plans were submitted and approved by the congregation for a new structure. A building committee was appointed and instructed to go forward at once, its duty being to secure subscriptions and erect the building. In the fall of 1876 a cellar was excavated and the foundation put in to the first joist. In 1877 the walls were constructed and the roof placed. But in 1877 nothing further was done, the building funds having run short. In 1879 the floors were laid and rough plastering spread. Temporary doors were placed and the windows nailed up with

plank. In this condition the building committee turned over to the officers of the church a building encumbered with an indebtedness of fourteen thousand dollars. The audience room was seated with chairs, the members each furnishing one or more chairs. On the first Lord's day in February, 1880, with the floor bare and the windows planked, the congregation held the first services in the new church building. The membership, then less than three hundred, was badly discouraged, yet were true and faithful to the cause which had been entrusted to their hands. Rev. E. L. Frazier held the first protracted meeting in this church in February and March, 1880. Rev. J. L. Parsons was the first pastor of the new church, being called in May following its occupancy. He tried hard to infuse new life into the church, but resigned in February, 1881.

On March 2, 1881, pursuant to public notice, the membership of the church met at the new church building. Elder M. M. Preble was in the chair, and declared the object of the meeting to be to settle the question, "What shall be done with the church debt?" Several speeches were made. A. F. Armstrong spoke of the general situation, and indicated that it might prove impossible to meet the heavy debt. He advised that the buildings and lots be sold for fourteen thousand dollars. Brother A. B. Walker offered the following resolution: "That the new church building and lots be sold to the city of Kokomo for fourteen thousand dollars, secured by ten-year bonds, drawing six per cent interest, and that the trustees be and are hereby authorized to complete said sale." Mr. Armstrong seconded the motion. It was unanimously adopted. Many persons objected to the city buying the property, some advising to hold out longer, while certain influential persons hoped that it would sell cheaper at sheriff's sale, expecting to buy it at their own price. The movers in the proposed sale had shrewdly calculated the effect upon the congregation intended, the fire of the church's spirit was

rekindled and the sparks began to fly as desired. A subscription paper was started, headed by Dr. Edward A. Armstrong, who subscribed one thousand dollars, A. F. Armstrong pledging a like sum, and there were many five hundred dollars, three hundred dollars and two hundred dollars subscriptions until a total pledge reached seven thousand dollars.

The pioneer church structure was sold for two thousand two hundred dollars and the general indebtedness brought below five thousand dollars. That amount of debt was placed upon the church building in the shape of a first mortgage, bearing six per cent. interest. It took seven years to liquidate this encumbrance, but on the 31st day of December, 1888, the last dollar of it was paid. Under the second pastorate of Rev. E. L. Frazier, in 1885, the old boards were knocked out of the windows and new cathedral glass substituted. Individual donators were Lawrence Snyder, in honor of little May Snider, deceased, H. M. Sailors, Mary Jackson-Cooper and the Winfield heirs. The various church societies raised considerable money for the improvements started thus auspiciously. During the pastorate of Rev. S. M. Jefferson, in 1890, the building was completed and furnished, about six thousand dollars being expended. It was fourteen years from the laying of the foundation to the completion of the building. The ground on which the building stood, the building and furnishings cost more than thirty thousand dollars.

Lawrence and Clara Snyder, at their own expense, erected the church tower, installing a bell as a memorial for their daughter, deceased.

In the end the brick structure was destroyed by fire, the furnace in the basement in some way becoming overheated, presumably, and firing the structure, which was soon a mass of ruins. Upon its site arose the present beautiful structure.



The church has always been a missionary church and a great power for good in the community, and hundreds of souls have been persuaded through its efforts to accept the cause of the Master.

With such pastors as the sweet-souled Father W. S. Winfield, the zealous and able B. M. Blount, the oratorical and energetic A. I. Hobbs, who ministered during the trying days of the Civil war; the true and determined agent for the right, regardless of consequences, E. L. Frazier; the scholarly M. B. Hopkins; the Socratic debator, Aaron Walker, and a number of others whose names are too numerous to mention, the church has occupied a leading position in the community from the earliest day and progressed steadily forward to greater and higher things.

For years Dr. J. M. Darnall was a pillar of strength to the church and of impressive physique and deliberate mein, and devoted with all the ardor of his nature he constituted an impressive influence in the church life. Though of a different type, John Nicholson, who resembled a kindly, benevolent father, whose affection was ever dominant for the souls of all, left a wholesome influence upon the congregation which time has not obliterated. Dr. Darnall and Mr. Nicholson were, for a long period, elders of the church, in which relation Dr. Darnall served thirty-eight years, having been re-elected a short time before his death, May 10, 1902.

The old brick church was destroyed by fire February 27, 1904, and the new church was erected the following summer under the pastorate of J. H. McNeil. While the congregation were without a house of worship they used the City Hall as a place of meeting. Up to the 1st of December, 1908, there had been paid on the new house thirty-one thousand nine hundred and eighteen dollars and ninety-eight cents, leaving a balance yet due of four thousand two hundred and twelve dollars. Rev. E. Richard Edwards is their present energetic pastor.

## RECENT HISTORY OF MAIN STREET CHRISTIAN CHURCH.

In the fall of 1902, under the pastorate of Rev. J. H. MacNeill, a new pipe organ was installed at a cost of twenty-six hundred dollars, the Ladies' Aid Society paying for the same. A gallery was constructed at a cost of about twenty-four hundred dollars, and other improvements made aggregating a total cost of twenty-seven hundred eighty-eight and twenty-three hundredths dollars.

On February 27, 1904, about fifteen months after finishing such improvements, and while twenty-six hundred dollars of the cost of the same was unpaid, the church took fire from an overheated furnace and was totally destroyed, together with all of its contents, the church not saving as much as one dollar's worth of property. The church building was insured for five thousand dollars, and the contents for three thousand dollars, all of which was fully paid. The building burned about two o'clock a. m. February 27, 1904, and at nine o'clock the same morning the official board of the church met at the office of the Kokomo National Bank and resolved to rebuild at once. And further resolved that the loss should be a financial loss only, and not a loss to the cause of Christ, which is nearest and dearest to the hearts of the official board as well as the general membership of the church.

Subscription papers were soon started and subscriptions to the amount of fourteen thousand thirty dollars speedily obtained. The new building was commenced in May, 1904, and completed by August, 1905. The building and furnishings cost thirty-nine thousand six hundred twenty-five and fifty-five hundredths dollars. The same was dedicated on August 6, 1905, F. M. Raines, of Cincinnati, General Secretary of the Foreign Missionary Society, officiating.

Subscriptions to the amount of eighteen thousand fifty-nine and sixty-five hundredths dollars were taken on that day. The struc-

ture is of Bedford stone and is of beautiful architectural design, being one of the best buildings of the denomination in the state.

The following amounts were contributed upon memorial windows: Mrs. A. F. Armstrong and daughter, Jennie Howe, seven hundred fifty dollars; Mrs. Mary A. Holmes, two hundred fifty dollars; M. M. Wiley, one hundred dollars; F. F. and Walter Jackson, one hundred dollars; family of Alex. C. Hopkins, one hundred dollars; family of Rev. W. S. Winfield, fifty dollars; Mrs. Julia Jackson, fifty dollars; Thomas Turley, fifty dollars; Rev. J. H. MacNeill and family, fifty dollars; Aaron Albaugh, fifty dollars; Mrs. Emma Moore, fifty dollars; E. E. Reynolds, twenty-five dollars; Will S. Clore, ten dollars; L. C. Hoss' Sunday school class, fifty dollars; Miss India Martz's Sunday school class, thirty-five dollars; Mrs. Jennie Knipe's Sunday school class, twenty-five dollars.

The pastorate of Rev. MacNeill ceased in the spring of 1907, and the present pastor, E. Richard Edwards, entered upon the duties of his pastorate on May 1, 1907. The membership of the church is about eight hundred. The average attendance of Sunday school is three hundred. Every department of the church under the leadership of its efficient and energetic pastor is making satisfactory advances.

#### ST. ANDREWS EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

The Episcopal church of Howard county dates back to 1885. Then Bishop Knickerbocker, who was a thorough missionary, made his first visit to Kokomo. The Congregationalists kindly lent their place of worship and many who had been identified with the church in former years, in other and even distant lands, came to assist the

good bishop in the service. Brother R. L. Wilcock, prominent among the Kokomo Methodists for many years, and who has now returned to old England, came down to that first service of Bishop Knickerbocker in Kokomo expressly to make the required responses for the bishop. The Episcopal service is a responsive service and Brother Wilcock was much exercised lest the good bishop have no one "to talk back to him." A congregation was organized which worshiped in various places, sometimes in church buildings, sometimes in lodge rooms and halls and office rooms. Clergymen came from a distance to hold the services. The future was rather uncertain for the little company, but they kept together and kept on. Accessions came.

The discovery of natural gas brought factories and hundreds of new families to Kokomo. Many of these new families belonged to the church in old England, or in the Eastern states. Their arrival served as a stimulus to the little congregation and strenuous endeavors were made to raise money for a lot. These efforts were finally successful and, in 1891, there was a resident minister ready to put up a church on the lot that had been secured on the corner of Taylor and Lafontaine streets. A church building was erected two years later and all seemed flourishing. But the panic of 1893 was at hand, and as most of the congregation got their living from the factories, which now utterly failed, there was not the strength to maintain the organization and meet the obligations due to the new church.

The Rev. T. C. Woodard, now of Rochester, New York (1908), struggled most heroically under most difficult conditions, for two years, to keep the congregation together and bring everything to a successful issue. He kept the congregation together by his loving and most faithful ministrations and is remembered with gratitude to-day by many families in South Kokomo whom he aided by min-

istering with his own hands to their necessities. He inspired his people and the townsfolk to the same unrivaled self-sacrifice. The effort to put St. Andrews church into Kokomo seemed to fail. But this was only apparently so. The congregation was still very loyal, due largely to Rev. Mr. Woodard's fine leadership and pastoral care. The revival of church life came through the personal efforts of Mr. and Mrs. Fred Beacon, who are now residents of Kokomo. In 1897 Mr. and Mrs. Bacon invited the church people to meet in their own house in South Kokomo. Then the Rev. E. W. Averill, of Peru, came down to hold regular services during the week. A hall was secured above Charles Jinkerson's grocery on the corner of South Main street and Markland avenue. The services were characterized by unbounded enthusiasm and zeal and exerted a wide influence, but the work was crippled by the removal of active workers.

#### STEPS FOR A NEW BUILDING.

A considerable sum was collected in the East, through the efforts of the Rev. J. O. Ward, for a permanent building. Mr. Ward severed his connection with St. Andrews in 1901. He had secured several earnest new members for the congregation and had given an example of faithful and persistent work. The present rector, the Rev. H. R. Neely, came to Kokomo in 1901, and has been in continuous charge for over seven years. He moved the church from Love's Hall, on Markland avenue, to the center of the town. He was not afraid to take up the site of the former disaster. Under his leadership the congregation occupied their former place of worship for over two years, until a more suitable location could be found. Meanwhile the congregation increased in strength. The large lot at the corner of Market and Sycamore streets was secured by the personal efforts of Mr. Neely and held in trust for the benefit

of the congregation. The monthly rental of the old brick house on the premises, known as the Scoven house, pays for the privilege of church occupation. On the rear of the lot stands the well-known and well-equipped parish house, built at an expense of over five thousand dollars. On this building there was a debt in July of four thousand seven hundred dollars, which had to be held by private parties because no loan company would lend the congregation so large a sum. This debt has been reduced to two thousand four hundred dollars and a mortgage to that amount has been given to a loan agency. This result has been accomplished by simple, steady, plodding work. The great advantages of the parish house have also helped. The expense of administration is the lowest possible. The parish house is really a structure of three buildings under one roof.

#### THE RECTORY.

The upstairs is the rectory, or parsonage, and is hardly equaled in any parish for comfort, convenience and pleasure. It is a roomy concern and built for busy workers, and no less for needed rest and refreshment of soul and body. The main room downstairs serves as church and also for all activities that go with vigorous church life. Social gatherings are often held there and it is a center for enterprises that are intended for the good of the community. It is the hope of the rector and the congregation that this may be even more true of the future than it has been of the past. When the church is built facing Sycamore street, the parish house will serve for all sorts of guild and club meetings. It is greatly to the credit of St. Andrews that it is conspicuous for missionary zeal. The best meetings it has are the missionary meetings, once each month, and all contribution to church work elsewhere are made promptly and generously. The wise financial foresight of the Rev. Neely has



given the church a central location in the city and a very valuable property holding, which by his able management, go far towards being a profitable return for the church at present.

GRACE M. E. CHURCH.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

In about the year 1841 the first Methodist church was organized in this, now Howard county, at what was known as Spice Run, in a little log hut about twelve by eighteen feet, and located about two and one-half miles west of the place of the present court house on the Wild Cat turnpike. About three years afterward, in the year 1844, that pioneer preacher for this section of Indiana, Rev. Jacob Colclazer, organized the first Methodist church, and, in fact, the first religious organization in Kokomo. The house of the late David Foster, near where the new jail now stands, was used as a preaching place until a new log church could be built. The members of this organization were: Adam Clark and wife, Elizabeth Foster, N. R. Linsday and wife, Thomas Lamburn and wife, Dennis McCormick and wife, and Mrs. Joseph Skeen. No one man did more for the growth of Methodism in this community than Judge N. R. Linsday. Dr. J. McLean Moulder, in his interesting monograph on the Methodist church in Howard county, says:

"A log church was built on South Washington street, in the year 1844. It was, at the time of its erection, probably the most expensive building in the county. The following year a Sabbath school was organized with Adam Clark as superintendent. Its average attendance was about fifteen and it was conducted only during the summer months. This church was used until the year 1851, when a frame church was built upon the site of the present church.

N. R. Lindsay, Hayden Rayburn, and Joshua Sharp were leading spirits in this enterprise. The church was completed in 1852 under the pastorate of Rev. M. S. Morrison. The old log church and ground were sold for seventy-five dollars and the money put into the new edifice. During the next ten years the church and town had a rapid growth, and the frame church became too small to accommodate the congregations, and in 1864 it was decided to begin a larger building, and the brick structure, that was torn down for the erection of the present church, was the result. The pastor was the Rev. Charles Martindale, and he rendered valuable service in this vast undertaking.

"Judge N. R. Lindsay, J. W. Crowley, C. Sharp, H. Rayburn, Worley Lease, Eli Weaver, William Styer, John Steward, John Jamison, David Hazzard and Dr. Buck were among the most liberal givers for the erection of this church. During its erection two men lost their lives, one being overcome by heat and the other being instantly killed by a piece of timber falling on him."

It is related that about this time, somewhere near the year 1869, an organ was placed in the church, and was the cause of much bitterness. So intense was the feeling that on one occasion, no less notable than the Northern Indiana conference, someone placed a quantity of cayenne pepper in the organ bellows, and the meeting was nearly broken up as a consequence. Times changed, and at last the organ was permitted to remain unmolested. Dr. Moulder continues:

"The first choir leader was Samuel C. Moore, and Emma Mason was organist. In the year 1873, under the pastorate of Rev. Thomas Stabler, the church was remodeled, frescoed, etc., at a cost of four thousand five hundred dollars. The following were quite active in this work: D. Hazzard, N. R. Lindsay, James O'Brien, J. W. Crowley, S. G. Lane, T. M. Kirkpatrick, George Deffenbaugh.

"The Sunday school has always been a power in this church. The following have been the superintendents: Adam Clark, Reuben Woods, John Jamison, John Prebble, N. P. Richmond, Henry Wooten, David Hazzard, J. McLean Moulder, S. Cox, J. F. Elliott A. N. Grant, G. O. Roach, J. E. Hillis, G. E. Meck, H. G. Woody, E. E. Springer, W. E. Sollenberger.

"During the winter and spring of 1876-7, during the pastorate of Rev. H. J. Meck, a great revival caused about one hundred ninety to unite with the church. Also great revivals have occurred under the pastorates of Rev. C. H. Brown, J. S. Bitler and W. D. Parr. The church has been noted for years in the conference as being spiritual and progressive.

"February 2, 1890, under the pastorate of Rev. C. H. Brown, the first service was held that resulted in the building of the Markland Avenue church, which cost about four thousand dollars. Rev. Brown, Rev. J. W. Oborn and Judge James O'Brien were the leading workers in this enterprise. The corner stone was laid in August by the Rev. C. E. Disbro, and the church was dedicated by Rev. A. W. Lamport on the 14th of December.

#### NEW CHURCH EDIFICE.

"It was during the very efficient and prosperous pastorate of the Rev. W. D. Parr that the present commodious and handsome church was erected, which, as an auditorium, is said to have few, if any, equals in the state. This building is not only a credit to the Methodists of Kokomo, but the entire city and Methodism as well. The first meeting looking to this enterprise was held May 6, 1893, but owing to the financial panic that was sweeping the country, it was postponed until March 4, 1894, when a committee composed of Dr. Parr, A. A. Charles and Dr. J. L. Moulder was appointed to

visit churches and select a plan. March 24, 1895, this committee made a report, and the building proposition of E. S. Hunt was unanimously accepted. August 5, 1895, the contract was let for the building to the Armstrong, Landon & Hunt company, the contract price for the building, without furnishings, being twenty-five thousand three hundred dollars. The entire cost of the building completed was about thirty-five thousand dollars. The old brick building was torn away and on the 19th of August, 1895, the first excavation was made for the new edifice.

Only two accidents occurred during the erection of the building, neither of which was fatal. September 30, 1895, the name of the church was changed from the Mulberry Street to Grace Methodist Episcopal church. The new church was dedicated December 6, 1896. Rev. Charles H. Paine, D. D., LL. D., preached the dedicatory sermon and had charge of the finances, assisted by Bishop Charles C. McCabe, D. D., LL. D. The successful accomplishment of this great undertaking was almost wholly due to the zeal, energy, and wise management of the Rev. W. D. Parr, who gave his undivided attention to every detail of the work from the inception of the purpose to build until the structure was completed. During his pastorate Beamer chapel was built, as a result of his foresight and faithfulness. In the spring of 1898 the pastorate of W. D. Parr expired by limitation, and the Rev. Edward Timberlake Gregg was assigned to the church and did most acceptably discharge the duties of pastor for one year and about two months of his second year, when the Father called him from labor to reward at 6:15 p. m., May 30, 1899. No one ever died in Kokomo to whom greater respect was shown. His body lay in state in the west tower of the church and for three hours a constant stream of sympathizing friends passed by and reviewed the remains. There was scarcely a dry eye in the vast concourse of people. The Knights Templar

had charge and the church services were conducted by his presiding elder, the Rev. M. S. Marble, assisted by many ministers of the North Indiana conference. During the funeral every business house, including the saloons of Kokomo, front door and back, were closed. In September, 1899, Rev. Jacomiah H. Jackson was appointed to fill out the remainder of the year. He did most efficient work under trying circumstances. The following April the Rev. Arthur S. Preston was appointed to this church and served with good results for one year. In the spring of 1901 the Rev. Leslie J. Naftzger was appointed, and did a grand work for the Master. On June 24, 1901, the board of trustees purchased the property at the corner of Clay and Mulberry streets of Joshua C. Leach for the sum of three thousand dollars, to be used as a parsonage.

#### MARKLAND AVENUE M. E. CHURCH.

While the Rev. C. H. Brown was pastor of the Mulberry Street Methodist Episcopal church in 1890 a Sunday school was started in South Kokomo, the school being held in the building owned by Dr. Lewis C. Kern, an ardent member of the church. From this Sunday school grew the Markland Avenue Methodist Episcopal church. The idea of a church in South Kokomo was conceived by the quarterly conference of what is now Grace Methodist Episcopal church, which had charge of it until the church was dedicated in December, the same year. Rev. J. W. Oborn was pastor a few months, being succeeded by the Rev. Ross Gahring, who put the church on a substantial basis. In turn were the Revs. Fred Stone, D. H. Guild, C. C. Cissell, Charles White, Dora V. Williams, G. B. McNary, and Rev. C. W. Shoemaker, the present efficient pastor. It was to the Rev. Williams that the good fortune fell of lifting the church from its load of debt, and who pre-

sided over the ceremonial of burning the mortgage, which had been given for fourteen hundred dollars. The congregation is now erecting a splendid edifice on South Main street, which, when completed, will represent a cost of not less than twenty-six thousand dollars. The members of the present board of trustees concerned in the building of the new church are J. F. Morrison, president; E. J. Showalter, secretary; J. M. Jackson, treasurer; O. B. Albright, James Burrows, Dr. J. O. Greeson, J. B. Davenport, Harry Raines, and A. M. Jackson. The church is active in religious societies, which are the Ladies' Aid Society, the Home Missionary Society and the Epworth League. Mr. W. E. Jacks' Sunday school class is a singular agency for good in promoting special church work. The Markland Avenue Methodist Episcopal church has done an incalculable good in the locality wherein it is situated. Its demand has been amply and faithfully met, and it has touched spiritually the large element of population within its jurisdiction employed in the South Side factories. It is a growing and flourishing congregation, with its membership alive to the possibilities of spiritual growth in the future. It is an active, successful church.

#### FIRST CHURCH OF CHRIST SCIENTISTS.

The First Church of Christ Scientists perfected a formal organization in 1908, but services have been held by the believers for four years past. The congregation, which now numbers thirty-five, and includes representative people of the city, is enjoying an excellent growth within and enlisting public favor to its tenets.

#### FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.

There had been preaching by Presbyterian ministers of neighboring churches quite frequently in Kokomo, but the first record of



an organized Presbyterian church in Kokomo is November 22, 1868. On this date there is an enrollment of four names, Dr. R. Q. Wilson, Mrs. Isabelle Wilson, Joseph Cain, and Mrs. N. A. Cain. The first record of a meeting of the official board is December 2, 1869. Rev. C. M. Howard was acting as stated supply of the church. At that time there was an enrollment of sixty members. In September, 1870, Rev. W. A. Hutchison became pastor. There was considerable interest and growth during this pastorate and that of Rev. F. M. Elliott, who preached for about one year. But in 1875 the church virtually ceased to exist and for fourteen years the name of the church was on the roll of the Presbytery with only eight names.

The present organization dates from November 25, 1887, when a meeting was held at the residence of Mr. John Jay. Rev. Charles Little, D. D., of Wabash, and Rev. Mr. Gregg, of Noblesville, were present by appointment of the Presbytery to organize the church. At that meeting seventeen persons were enrolled as members of the church. This number was soon augmented until it reached forty-five. The organization showed great vigor and determination and at once began the erection of the building in which the church now worships. March 27, 1889, the Rev. R. G. Roscamp was called to the pastorate and served until April 13, 1892, when he was called to Greensburg, Indiana. During his pastorate the church building was completed and dedicated. He was followed by the Rev. Henry Gardner, who acted as stated supply from June 1, 1892, to June 1, 1894. During his pastorate the indebtedness of the church was considerably reduced. On September 30, 1894, the Rev. R. G. Roscamp was recalled, and served until April 1, 1897. The pulpit was then vacant until January 1, 1898, when Rev. E. A. Allen became stated supply, serving until September 1, 1901, when he accepted a call to the Presbyterian church at Decatur, Indiana. During his pastorate the last indebtedness upon the church building was paid and

at an anniversary service in 1900 all of the mortgage papers which had been held against the church were burned. Rev. W. A. Hutchison, who had been pastor during the time of the first organization, was recalled to the pastorate and began the work December 1, 1901, but on account of ill health was not able to continue, and closed his work with the church here September 30, 1902. Rev. M. L. Pearson began his work as pastor of the church November 9, 1902, and closed his work December 25, 1904. During his pastorate the pipe organ was installed. At a congregational meeting held in the church May 30, 1905, the present pastor, Rev. W. T. McKee, was called. His first sermon was preached July 2, 1905, the formal installation taking place September 27, 1905. At the same meeting of the congregation at which the pastor was called a committee was appointed to secure a home for the new pastor, and they succeeded in purchasing the delightful home of Dr. F. H. Smith, adjoining the church property on the west, and is now occupied as a manse. The elders who served the church since its organization were: William H. Sellers, Peter A. Sassaman, George S. Humphrey, W. M. Souder, W. E. Stansbury, Elwood Haynes, John R. Cain, T. H. Penn, A. L. Harter, M. C. Kitchen and John C. Kessler. Mr. Sellers and Mr. Sassaman were the first elders elected. Mr. Sassaman died July 13, 1906. Mr. Sellers has been serving faithfully and continuously in the office ever since the reorganization of the church. The church looks forward into the future hopefully. With an active membership of something over two hundred members, with an able body of men as the elders of the church, at the present day, the church is well organized in her temporal and spiritual agencies and moves forward to do her share of the moral and spiritual uplifting of Kokomo.

## THE COLORED CHURCHES.

There are two prosperous colored churches in Kokomo, with good memberships and active in the good cause of the Lord. Rev. W. H. Irvin is pastor of the African Methodist Episcopal church, which has been in existence many years. The spiritual director of the Second Baptist church is Rev. Gaines.

## THE FRIENDS' CHURCH.

The meeting of the Friends was established in Kokomo in 1865, the first services being held at the home of Richard Nixon. There were but few families of Friends living here at the time, they being those of Richard Nixon, Robert Coate, W. S. Wooten, and William Moore. Additions to the society were had from time to time, the more prominent being Jesse Turner and wife, Robert Haskett, David Coffin, Mrs. William Mavity, Mrs. James Wildman, Amos Hollowell, William Trueblood, Nathan Dixon, Jesse Johnson, Minnie Trueblood, Francis Macy, Eli Overman and wife, Asa Hockett and wife, Thomas Rich and wife, and Thomas Moulder and family. While the first meetings were in silence, mostly after the fashion then of the Friends, there was usually some one selected for reading and prayers. In time the meeting assembled in a hall on the north side of the Court House square, where it worshipped for several years. The pioneer members were garbed as became the faith, and after the William Penn fashion, but these distinctive characteristics of the church began to loose their hold as early as 1865, and finally disappeared altogether.

The church originally had no minister, but the first pastor selected by the Kokomo church, in fact, the first recognized in the world by an official title, was Robert Douglas. In time William

L. Butler, Henry Coate, Jesse Turner, Emily Ellis, and Dr. Charles Kirk were enrolled as ministers. Dr. Kirk finally entered upon missionary work among the Indians. The membership continued to increase until the year 1870, when an effort was made to build a church house, which resulted in the erection of the present church building, a good, substantial brick, forty by sixty-six feet, with a stone foundation and costing about six thousand dollars. From the time of the completion of this building, in 1872, until the present time, the meetings have been held in it. Frequently ministers from abroad conducted services in the years gone by. The church is in a healthful condition, both spiritually and financially, having 385 members. The Rev. G. H. Moore is the minister, having been called to the Kokomo pulpit September, 1907. The church has four societies engaged in the promotion of spiritual progress, they being the Woman's Foreign Missionary Society, the Ladies' Aid Society, and the Junior and Senior Christian Endeavor societies.

#### COURTLAND AVENUE FRIENDS' CHURCH.

The Courtland Avenue Friends' church, a branch of the Union street meeting, was organized November, 1898, by Dr. S. T. Kirk. It has a membership of 165 members and is under the pastorate of Rev. Calvin R. Choate, who is doing an excellent work. His assistance in the way of church societies are the well-known Bible class and the Loyd Legion.

#### CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH.

On the 8th day of September, 1863, the First Congregational church of Kokomo was organized under the direction of Rev. Joseph E. Ray, D. D., of Chicago, who, at that time, was the representative of the Congregational Home Missionary Society for the district of Northern Illinois and Northern Indiana. Fourteen persons constituted the membership at the time of the organization. They were: Rev. J. L. Jenkins and wife, Mr. and Mrs. M. R. An-

draws, Mr. and Mrs. H. Y. Kelso, Mr. and Mrs. James M. Patterson, Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Flemming, Mrs. Elizabeth Davis, Mrs. Margaret Murray, Mrs. Lucinda Hathaway, and Mr. James Kaufman. Rev. J. L. Jenkins was the first pastor. He served the church for two years and was succeeded by the Rev. C. H. Richards. The beautiful church edifice started during the pastorate of Rev. Jenkins, was completed during the ministry of Rev. Richards. The Rev. Jenkins terminated his ministry in September, 1865. The church received new life under the pastorate of Rev. A. S. Wood, who served from 1871 to 1877. The house was renovated, refitted, a fine new pipe organ added, and best of all, the membership of the church was increased. Eventually the Rev. Wood, much to the regret of the congregation, severed his connection with the church and removed to Michigan. Another long pastorate was that of the Rev. Robert McCune, a very able minister, who served the congregation from 1881 to 1887.

The present pastor, Rev. Charles W. Choate, was called to the pulpit in December, 1898. He has builded up the church to a high degree with the assistance of the Home and Foreign Missionary societies of the church, which have revealed a remarkable record in benevolence and Christian spirit, and a valuable auxiliary to the church life is the Ladies' Aid Society, and, in addition, the monthly social. The Rev. Choate celebrated the tenth anniversary of his pastorate Sunday, November 29, 1908.

#### REV. CHOATE'S RECORD.

For ten years the Rev. C. W. Choate has been the pastor of the local Congregational church. The decade in which he has served the charge has been the most important, perhaps, in the city's history. The Rev. Choate has seen Kokomo double in population and increase in wealth threefold. He has been an interested and pleased observer of the city's material progress, but his mission has

not been with the city's material welfare. His calling has not been among the things concrete, but among the things spiritual. No man has had the honor of a higher mission and no man has served among us more faithfully and efficiently. His activities have not been confined to his own church and congregation. He has gone modestly along the way, serving wheresoever he might and whomsoever he could, doing it always unobtrusively, gently and in a beautiful spirit of helpfulness. In the church circles of Kokomo, irrespective of denominations, he is held in kindest regard. Among those who sent him congratulatory messages on this occasion were not only pastors and members of the other Protestant churches of the city, but Father Lordemann, members of the local Jewish congregation, and many persons who affiliate with no church. In a way, the Rev. Choate has come to be known as the people's pastor, and it is hardly conceivable that he could wish a more agreeable position than that in the community.

#### HARRISON STREET CHRISTIAN CHURCH.

The church building located at the corner of Harrison and South Market streets was completed and dedicated December, 1896. Rev. Kendall E. West laid the foundations of the society in his gathering together the following as charter members: A. L. and Mrs. M. A. Vickery, D. H. and Mrs. D. M. Stewart, J. I. and Mrs. Jennie Martindale, Rev. Taylor and Mrs. S. J. Jackman, James and Mrs. Lucinda McCool, M. M. Garritson, L. S. and Mrs. E. M. Irby, America Cox, L. J. Groves, D. L. Philips, David and Mrs. Etta Klepper, Joshua and Mrs. Rebecca Hurley, Vie Barkalow, and Lizzie Chapman. The dedication of the church building occurred under the auspices of Pastor West, Rev. J. R. Costner, of Winchester, Indiana, preaching the sermon. In May, 1893, there had been organized an efficient Ladies' Christian Aid Society, which did much to make possible the future formation of the church and the erection



of their cozy temple of worship. Immediately following the installation of the pastor and people in their new quarters there was the organization of a Sunday school, Christian Endeavor, and the mid-week prayer meeting. These societies have been in active working order ever since their organization. Tangible results have been witnessed through their effective efforts by many having been brought to acknowledge Jesus as their Redeemer and becoming working members of the church. The polity of the Christian church is unique, making Christian character only the test of fellowship, the Bible the only rule of faith and practice, individual interpretation of the Scriptures, the undisputed right, and duty of all. In the matter of Christian baptism, in, or with water, the three modes, "sprinkling, pouring, and immersing," are employed, leaving the selection of either to the candidate. Members are also received to full fellowship, if they so elect, without conforming to either of the three several modes of baptism. During the twelve years' history of the local church it has made a remarkable a remarkable impress as a moral force in South Kokomo. The present pastor, R. H. Gott, is now in his fifth year's service with this people, and aided by his excellent wife and a number of consecrated local workers, every department of the church is moving grandly forward.

#### EVANGELICAL CHURCH.

Several families belonging to the Evangelical Association at the Zion church and elsewhere, settling in Kokomo, made the establishment of an Evangelical church in Kokomo feasible. The Indiana conference of the Evangelical association in session at South Bend, six years ago, 1902, authorized the establishment of an Evangelical church in Kokomo, and appointed Rev. A. S. Fisher as pastor of the charge. The Garrigus building was leased and June 1,

1902, a Sunday school was organized with thirty-two members, J. N. Loop serving as superintendent. The present church site was purchased in the spring of 1905, and during the summer the church building was erected, and dedicated on the third Sunday in November. The charter members of the society consisted of the following persons: A. S. Fisher, Minta Fisher, Elizabeth Fisher, Ferne Fisher, A. J. Troyer, Maud Troyer, Caroline Stutesman, C. D. Rarey, Luella Rarey. The society has grown to a membership of over eighty and the Sunday school to an enrollment of one hundred fifty. There is a Young People's Society of twenty-five members, and a Junior Alliance numbering forty. There is also a splendid Ladies' Aid Society, which has done much toward helping to cancel the church debt, and rendered valuable service in other ways. The official board at present consists of J. A. Weaver, A. J. Troyer, O. L. Webb, J. T. Lines, Merle Toops, J. W. Thomas, Mrs. Matthew Anaker, and Mrs. Solomon Fisher. The first pastor, A. S. Fisher, served for four years, Jacob Wise for two years, and the present pastor, M. L. Scheidler, has served since April.

#### FREEMONT STREET CHAPEL.

The Freemont Street Christian congregation is the result of an association had in September, 1885, for the promulgation of the principles for which it stands. Literature was sent out, and there was a teaching of the tenets for which the church stands, which later bore fruit. The society was formally incorporated ten years ago, in 1898, and then the formal and active dissemination of its doctrines began in earnest. The new church, so far as Kokomo was concerned, was brought into being by the diligent, self-sacrificing, and able efforts of Dr. J. L. Puckett, in which he was seconded by his daughter, May Puckett-Foster, and later by Mrs. Ida Wygants.

The Christian congregation is sharply distinguished from the ordinary church in that its cardinal tenet is to make philanthropy through the church as efficient and wide as that of the secret, benevolent orders, but after a much different manner, in several particulars. In the first place a member of the Christian congregation can be a member of any other church at the same time he belongs to the Christian congregation. He may be a Methodist, a Presbyterian, or a Catholic, that is of no consequence, so he believes the fundamentals, believes in God, the divinity of Christ, and other essentials to the Christian system, but no details of these beliefs are inquired after.

The congregation is a practically organized agency of philanthropy. If a member falls sick the president of the official board at once sets in motion the relief agency of the society. The sick member is visited. If sociability alone is demanded the matter ends there, but if aught else is needed it is administered. Need is the sole criterion governing the action of the church in every particular. Need may mean the employment of a nurse, the securing of a doctor, the purchase of medicine, the expenses of a burial after medical skill has exhausted itself. But as a guard against imposition there is a record kept of receipts as well as disbursements, and it is easy soon to discover if one is receiving more than has been contributed, which leads to a reason for the situation, which, if not justifiable, can be soon terminated. The official board of the local congregation is responsible to the District association and the official board of that body to the General association, so that there is a general system of balances and checks. The entire scheme of philanthropy is based upon business principles. A complete set of books is kept, and each member contributing is given a receipt for the sum donated. The Sisters' Home Helpers are a valuable auxiliary to the realization of the church's ideal. They often visit the home of some one sick, and finding the children needy supply the wants in the

way of clothing, and discovering that much sewing is needed bring up the family sewing to the needful standard. The benevolent fund of the church is augmented by constant accretion and is always available for any emergency which may arise. The doctrines of the congregation have been gradually spreading until there are congregations at Jewel, Darrough's chapel, and Finch chapel. The accredited ministers are Mrs. May Puckett-Foster, pastor of the Freemont Street chapel, and at Jewel, Mrs. Ida Wygants, J. S. Butler, and Charles Laird, of Jewel. The Freemont Street chapel has a membership now of about one hundred. The subdivisions of the church work include the Junior congregation, the Sisters' Home Helpers, and the Sunday school. Dr. Puckett, who organized the Freemont Street chapel, and was for a long time its pastor, preaches, as a general rule, each Sunday evening, when his practice will permit.

#### THE UNITED BRETHREN CHURCH.

About eighteen years ago Mrs. Maria L. Woodsworth, a trance evangelist, held a series of remarkable meetings in Kokomo. She drew immense crowds of people to hear her preachments and to witness the heavenly visions, as she presented them. Her evangelism was impressive upon large numbers of representative people of the city, who, for a lifetime, had been indifferent to the wooings of the Spirit. Her followers, in accordance with her example, fell into a trance, which enabled them, they said, to penetrate into the glories of the future life and approach even unto the gates of Heaven. The evangelization differed from any experience, in a religious way, Kokomo had undergone, and when she departed Mrs. Woodsworth left a large number of converts determined upon the Christian life, and who have trod the path of Christian duty steadfastly ever since. For several months her followers maintained a church near the Clov-

erleaf Railroad station. The Rev. Shep Shuttles preached for several months with convincing gospel power. In the meantime the ministers of numerous religious faiths were called into the pulpit, an indication that the congregation was seeking a permanent Christian home, but undecided upon just what allegiance to assume. Among the leading proselyters addressing the new congregation were: The Rev. Fletcher Thomas and the Rev. John Farmer, of the St. Joseph conference of the United Brethren church. Their work was done well. They earned the conviction and the affection of the congregation, which decided to abandon the name of the Mission church and ally themselves with the organization known as the United Brethren. The present church, in which the excellent people of the faith worship, was completed about eight years ago. It, with the parsonage, represents an investment of about twenty-two thousand dollars. The present pastor is the Rev. C. E. Ashcraft. The membership of the church is two hundred twenty-five. The spiritual success of the church is, in no small degree, indebted to the influence of the various societies which constitute such valuable auxiliaries, they being the Young People's and Junior societies, the Ladies' Aid Society, the Women's Missionary Association, and the Young Ladies' Band.

#### BEAMER CHAPEL.

The Beamer chapel, better known as the North Street Methodist Episcopal church, is now thriving under the pastorate of the Rev. Gray.

#### ADVENTIST CHURCH.

The Adventist church, which for several years has maintained an organization in Kokomo, has a church located upon West Taylor street. This congregation believes that Saturday is the real

Sunday of the Scriptures and ceases all work upon that day, treating Sunday as a secular day.

---

### KOKOMO LIBRARY.

BY OTIS C. POLLARD.

In December, 1844, the county commissioners ordered the county agent to retain ten per cent. of the money secured from the sale of lots in the tract donated by David Foster, for the assistance of the county library. The directors of the library chosen by the commissioners were: William H. Grant, Franklin S. Price, David Foster, William Grant, John Vaughan, and Austin C. Sheets. Mr. Vaughan was selected as librarian. Vaughan being a long time absent from the county, Austin North was finally appointed in his place. Harles Ashley was chosen treasurer of the library funds.

In June, 1850, the county commissioners ordered the treasurer of the county library to pay all money he had in his hands to Rev. McDade C. Richmond and N. R. Lindsay for the purchase of books. June, 1851, James McCool was appointed librarian and Adam North treasurer. The library was to have a catalogue, with the price of all books annexed, to keep account of all monies and persons taking and returning books. All persons keeping a book seven days over the limit allowed to keep a book were to be fined one cent for each day. The fee for using the books was fifty cents a year and for a shorter time in proportion. The time for keeping books was as follows: Volumes less than two hundred pages, thirty days; volumes over two hundred and less than four hundred pages, sixty days; volumes over four hundred and less than six hundred pages, eighty



days; volumes over six hundred and less than one thousand pages, one hundred twenty days; volumes over one thousand pages, one hundred twenty days.

With all the improved library laws of the state, Kokomo still clings to the old and tried law of 1883, under which the Kokomo, now the Carnegie, library was organized. Among the first to take advantage of this law was the Kokomo school board, then comprising A. F. Armstrong, Dr. I. C. Johnson, and W. E. Blacklidge. This board levied a tax of one cent on the hundred dollars for a public library. This small tax brought to the library support about ninety dollars a year. With J. C. Leach as librarian, the library was thrown open to the public in December, 1885, seventy-five books having been purchased and placed upon the shelves. One small case in the chemistry laboratory of the old high school building was ample room for library purposes, the librarian being present each Thursday afternoon for the distribution of books. Naturally these books were limited to high school teachers and their pupils. The recitation room was soon outgrown and the library was transferred to the office of the school superintendent in the Normal building, the time of opening being changed to Saturdays in the term time of school. The next move was to an entire room upon the top floor of the old Normal school building and the time of opening extended to the entire year, Saturday afternoons.

The library having grown into an imposing one of thirty-eight hundred volumes, it was thought worthy of a place in the city building, and accordingly the council donated a room for that purpose. The levy was now increased to three cents and was growing in usefulness and popularity. At this time Mr. Leach classified the library under the Perkins system and made a printed catalogue. The city building was soon outgrown, and a room was rented in a downtown district, the Blacklidge block, and the hours changed from Sat-

urday afternoon to each afternoon from one to five o'clock, with an all-day opening on Saturday. Mr. Leach finding cares to numerous to devote more time to library matters, and having accepted state office, Miss Olive Moreland, who had been his faithful assistant for some time, took charge of the library until in the spring of 1900. During this time the library had been steadily growing, under the management of the school board, the shelf list showing in the neighborhood of eight thousand volumes. During 1900 the librarian, assisted by Miss Belle Hanna, of the Greencastle public library, commenced the reclassification of the library on the Dewey system. In the spring of 1900 Miss Eva M. Fitzgerald, of Madison, Indiana, was appointed librarian and immediately took up the work of classification under the system begun by Miss Hanna. The library then consisted of ten thousand volumes, all classified with card catalogue, according to Cutter rules. In 1901, the library having once more outgrown its home, was removed to the commodious room in the east wing of the Blacklidge block. The hours of opening were extended from afternoon openings to all afternoons and evenings, and including Sunday opening. A reading room was established, several periodicals and the daily newspapers being subscribed for. The library was in charge of Librarian Fitzgerald and one assistant, the assistant averaging five hours a day and the librarian nine hours.

#### GROWTH OF THE LIBRARY.

From a small, poorly lighted, poorly ventilated back room in a block, with a half-day service and no reading room, and one person to do all, to a thirty-thousand-dollar building, spacious reading and children's rooms, with a staff of trained employees, is the record of the Kokomo Public library between 1900 and 1904. Possibly the

first suggestion that Kokomo might have a public library building of its very own was made by the librarian, Miss Fitzgerald, during the winter of 1901, when Miss Fitzgerald read a paper before the Kokomo Equal Suffrage and Literary club, in which she drew a picture of Kokomo's future public library. The discussion following this paper started the agitation which resulted in some action on the part of the library trustees, who were also the school trustees. Mr. R. A. Ogg, the superintendent of schools, was delegated to write a letter to Mr. Carnegie and lay before that prodigal library building promoter the claims the Kokomo library had to a hearing. Nothing came from this letter and the matter was allowed to rest until Mr. J. A. Kautz, a member of the board, took a little trip to New York. Mr. Kautz, ever mindful of the various interests he had in hand, found time in the midst of his private business to call upon Mr. Carnegie and in a heart-to-heart talk to urge Kokomo's desire to be numbered among the "fifty-seven varieties" of Carnegie libraries in Indiana at that time. While Mr. Kautz did not exactly bring back the twenty-five thousand asked for, in his pocket, he did bring back the promise that the matter would be looked into, and if Kokomo could show her ability to make good the twenty-five thousand would be forthcoming in due season. As the sentiment of the place was almost unanimous in favor of the building, there was no difficulty in making the necessary municipal arrangements. There was not even that usual bugbear of getting a popular subscription for the purchase of the lot, one of the necessary requirements, as the school board decided that, under the law which the Kokomo library operates, they would be justified in making the purchase from the special school fund, which they did. The Kokomo board, as seems to be the universal rule with Carnegie library boards, were not satisfied with the gift of twenty-five thousand but planned for a much more ornate and elaborate style of architecture

than twenty-five thousand could possibly cover. In order to meet these plans the board was obliged to borrow some money. A tax was levied to meet the needs of the library which brings in a fairly good income. Miss Fitzgerald carried the library through its evolutionary period, when it was seeking to emerge from a mere collection of books accessible to a limited public, to a real, live factor in the public scheme of living. Miss Fitzgerald superintended the moving, arranging, and planning for the new library, doing no small part of the actual labor herself. In 1906 Miss Fitzgerald was succeeded by Miss Edith Trimble, of Vincennes, Indiana, the present librarian.

#### CARNEGIE'S GIFT.

In 1903 a gift of twenty-five thousand dollars was accepted from Mr. Carnegie on the usual terms for a library building. The city added about six thousand dollars, making the total cost about thirty-one thousand dollars. The library is sustained by an income from the taxes, the rate being five cents on the hundred dollars.

The building is classic in architecture and made of Bedford stone. In the basement is a club room used by various societies, some of which are: Matinee Musical, Chautauqua League, and Bible classes, Women's Christian Temperance Union, Gentlemen's Literary Society, and Howard County Medical Association.

In 1907 the "Story Hour" was instituted, the object of which is to interest the children in the best in literature. With book lists and bulletins the children are also guided in their reading.

The library contains approximately twelve thousand volumes. These books are at the disposal of all persons living within the city limits. County people pay one dollar a year for the use of books. The library hours are from 9 a. m. to 9 p. m. on week days and from

2 to 5 p. m. on Sundays. Only the reading rooms are open Sundays.

The library board is as follows: W. E. Blacklidge, president; W. C. Overton, secretary, and H. C. Thomas, treasurer. R. A. Ogg, superintendent of schools. Librarian, Edith Trimble, and assistant librarian, Idabelle Ford.

#### ADDENDA MILITARY HISTORY.

It seems to be well authenticated that the ashes of two other soldiers of the war of the Revolution lie buried in Howard County. The Kokomo Tribune of December 11 and 15, states that in the Brown graveyard one-half mile west of Poplar Grove, a now unused burying place, there is a small, weather-stained headstone bearing this inscription: "Abner Clark, died October 15, 1847, aged 84 years, 3 months and 8 days." Andrew J. Forgey, an octogenarian of that neighborhood, states that he lived near him for a year prior to his death and had many conversations with him, and is sure that Clark was a Revolutionary soldier.

The Tribune of December 14, 1908, states that James W. Swope, a most reliable man, says that Jackson Gullion, who was buried in the Twin Springs graveyard, five miles southwest of Kokomo, was also a soldier of the Revolution.

The Tribune of December 16, 1908, contains a letter from James W. Cooper, of Russiaville, saying that two other soldiers of the War of 1812 were buried there: Joseph Taylor, who has been mentioned in the Pioneer life of Howard County, was a soldier of the War of 1812, and was buried in the Russiaville cemetery; John Gregg, served under Gen. William H. Harrison at Fort Meigs and was also in the battle of the Thames, where the British, under Gen. Proctor, and the Indians under Tecumseh, were defeated. He also was buried in the Russiaville cemetery.

(3)